This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

3 2044 011 477 304

4150.1.26
*

Harvard College Library

FROM

Estate of Prof. E. W. Gurney

WILHELM MEISTER'S

APPRENTICESHIP AND TRAVELS.

LONDON:
PRINTED BY ROBSON, LEVEY, AND FRANKLYN,
Great New Street and Fetter Lane

TRANSLATIONS FROM THE GERMAN

BY

THOMAS CARLYLE.

WILHELM MEISTER'S

APPRENTICESHIP AND TRAVELS.

By Goethe

VOL. II.

LONDON:
CHAPMAN AND HALL, 193 PICCADILLY.
M.DCCC.LVIII.

1858

47587.26
Harvard College Library
From the Estate of
PROF. E. W. GURNEY
1 July, 1902

26.8
20

WILHELM MEISTER'S APPRENTICESHIP.

BOOK VII.

rvard College Library
From the Estate of
PROF E. W. BURNE
July, 1942

WILHELM MEISTER'S

APPRENTICESHIP.

BOOK VII.

CHAPTER I.

The spring had commenced in all its brilliancy; a storm, that had been lowering all day, went fiercely down upon the hills; the rain drew back into the country; the sun came forth in all his splendour, and upon the dark vapour rose the lordly rainbow. Wilhelm was riding towards it: the sight made him sad. "Ah!" said he within himself, "do the fairest hues of life appear, then, only on a ground of black? And must drops fall, if we are to be charmed? A bright day is like a dim one, if we look at it unmoved: and what can move us but some silent hope that the inborn inclination of our soul shall not always be without an object? The recital of a noble action moves us; the sight of every thing harmonious moves us: we feel then as if we were not altogether in a foreign land; we fancy we are nearer the home, towards which our best and inmost wishes impatiently strive."

Meanwhile a pedestrian overtook him, and walking with a stout step by the side of the horse, began to keep him company. After a few common words, he looked at the rider and said: "If I am not mistaken, I must have already seen you somewhere."

"I too remember you," said Wilhelm: "had we not some time ago a pleasant sail together?" "Right!" replied the other.

Wilhelm looked at him more narrowly; then, after a pause, observed: "I do not know what alteration has occurred in you; last time we met, I took you for a Lutheran clergyman, you now seem *rather like* a Catholic one."

"Today at least you are not wrong," replied the other, taking off his hat and showing him the tonsure. "Where is your company gone? Did you stay long with them?"

"Longer than was good: on looking back upon the period which I passed in their society, it seems as if I looked into an endless void; nothing of it has remained with me."

"Here you are mistaken," said the stranger; "everything that happens to us leaves some trace behind it, everything contributes imperceptibly to form us. Yet often it is dangerous to take a strict account of that. For either we grow proud and negligent, or downcast and dispirited; and both are equally injurious in their consequences. The safe plan is, always simply to do the task that lies nearest us; and this in the present case," added he with a smile, "is to hasten to our quarters."

Wilhelm asked how far Lothario's house was distant; the stranger answered that it lay behind the hill. "Perhaps I shall meet you there," continued he; "I have merely a small affair to manage in the neighbourhood. Farewell till then!" And with this, he struck into a steep path, that seemed to lead more speedily across the hill.

"Yes, the man is right!" said Wilhelm to himself as he proceeded; "we should think of what is nearest: and for me at present there is nothing nearer than the mournful errand I have come to do. Let me see whether I can still repeat the speech, which is to put that cruel man to shame."

He then began reciting to himself this piece of oratory: not a syllable was wanting; and the more his recollection served him, the higher grew his passion and his courage. Aurelia's sorrows and her death were vividly present to his soul.

"Spirit of my friend!" exclaimed he, "hover round me; and if thou canst, give some sign to me that thou art softened, art appeased!"

Amid such words and meditations, he had reached the summit of the hill; and near the foot of its declivity, he now beheld a curious building, which he at once took to be Lothario's dwelling. An old irregular castle, with several turrets and peaked roofs, appeared to have been the primitive erection; but the new additions to it, placed near the main structure, looked still more irregular. A part of them stood close upon the main edifice; others, at some distance, were combined with it by galleries and covered passages. All external symmetry, every shade of architectural beauty, appeared to have been sacrificed to the convenience of the interior. No trace of wall or trench was to be seen; none of avenues or artificial gardens. A fruit and pot-herb garden reached to the

very buildings; and little patches of a like sort showed themselves even in the intermediate spaces. A cheerful village lay at no great distance: the fields and gardens everywhere appeared in the highest state of cultivation.

Sunk in his own impassioned feelings, Wilhelm rode along, not thinking much of what he saw: he put up his horse at an inn; and not without emotion, hastened to the Castle.

An old serving-man received him at the door; and signified, with much good-nature, that today it would be difficult to get admission to his Lordship; who was occupied in writing letters, and had already refused some people that had business with him. Our friend became more importunate; the old man was at last obliged to yield, and announce him. He returned, and conducted Wilhelm to a spacious ancient hall; desiring him to be so good as wait, since perhaps it might be some time before his Lordship could appear. Our friend walked up and down unrestfully; casting now and then a look at the knights and dames, whose ancient figures hung round him on the walls. He repeated the beginning of his speech: it seemed, in presence of these ruffs and coats of mail, to answer even better. Every time there rose any stir, he put himself in posture to receive his man with dignity; meaning first to hand him the letter, then assail him with the weapons of reproach.

More than once mistaken, he was now beginning to be really vexed and out of tune, when at last a handsome man, in boots and light surtout, stept in from a side-door. "What good news have you for me?" said he to Wilhelm, with a friendly voice; "pardon me, that I have made you wait."

So speaking, he kept folding a letter, which he held in his hand. Wilhelm, not without embarrassment, delivered him Aurelia's paper, and replied: "I bring you the last words of a friend, which you will not read without emotion."

Lothario took it, and returned to his chamber with it; where, as Wilhelm through the open door could very easily observe, he addressed and sealed some letters, before opening Aurelia's. He appeared to have perused it once or twice; and Wilhelm, though his feelings signified that the pathetic speech would sort but ill with such a cool reception, girded up his mind, went forward to the threshold, and was just about beginning his address, when a tapestry door of the cabinet opened, and the clergyman came in.

"I have got the strangest message you can think of," cried Lothario to him. "Pardon me," continued he, addressing Wilhelm, "*if I am not in a mood* for speaking farther with you at this mo-

ment. You remain with us tonight: you, Abbé, see the stranger properly attended to."

With these words, he made his guest a bow: the clergyman took Wilhelm by the hand, who followed, not without reluctance.

. They walked along some curious passages, in silence, and at last reached a very pretty chamber. The Abbé led him in; then left him, making no excuses. Ere long, an active boy appeared; he introduced himself as Wilhelm's valet; and brought up his supper. In waiting, he had much to say about the order of the house, about their breakfasting and dining, labours and amusements; interspersing many things in commendation of Lothario.

Pleasant as the boy was, Wilhelm endeavoured to get rid of him as soon as possible. He wished to be alone; for he felt exceedingly oppressed and straitened, in his new position. He reproached himself with having executed his intentions so ill, with having done his errand only half. One moment, he proposed to overtake next morning what he had neglected tonight; the next, he saw that by Lothario's presence he would be attuned to quite a different set of feelings. The house, too, where he was, seemed very strange to him: he could not be at home in his position. Intending to undress, he opened his travelling-bag: with his night-clothes, he took out the Spirit's veil, which Mignon had packed in along with them. The sight of it increased the sadness of his humour. "Fly! youth, fly!" cried he: "What means this mystic word? What am I to fly, or whither? It were better had the Spirit called to me: Return to thyself!" He cast his eyes on some English copperplates, hung round the room in frames; most of them he looked at with indifference: at last he met with one, in which a ship was represented sinking in a tempest; a father with his lovely daughters was awaiting death from the intrusive billows. One of the maidens had a kind of likeness to the Amazon: an indescribable compassion seized our friend; he felt an irresistible necessity to vent his feelings; tears filled his eyes, h' wept, and did not recover his composure, till slumber overpower' him.

Strange dreams arose upon him towards morning. He was a garden, which in boyhood he had often visited; he looked wi pleasure at the well-known alleys, hedges, flower-beds: Maria met him, he spoke to her with love and tenderness, recollecti nothing of any bygone grievance. Ere long his father joir them, in his week-day dress; with a look of frankness that rare in him, he bade his son fetch two seats from the ga house; then took Mariana by the hand, and led her into a gr

Wilhelm hastened to the garden-house, but found it altog

empty; only at a window in the farther side he saw Aurelia standing. He went forward and addressed her, but she turned not round; and though he placed himself beside her, he could never see her face. He looked out from the window; in an unknown garden, there were several people, some of whom he recognised. Frau Melina, seated under a tree was playing with a rose, which she had in her hand; Laertes stood beside her, counting money from the one hand to the other. Mignon and Felix were lying on the grass; the former on her back, the latter on his face. Philina came and clapped her hands above the children; Mignon lay unmoved; Felix started up and fled. At first he laughed while running, as Philina followed: but he screamed in terror, when he saw the Harper coming after him with large, slow steps. Felix ran directly to a pond; Wilhelm hastened after him: too late; the child was lying in the water! Wilhelm stood as if rooted to the spot. The fair Amazon appeared on the other side of the pond; she stretched her right hand towards the child, and walked along the shore. The child came through the water, by the course her finger pointed to; he followed her as she went round; at last she reached her hand to him, and pulled him out. Wilhelm had come nearer: the child was all in flames; fiery drops were falling from his body. Wilhelm's agony was greater than ever; but instantly the Amazon took a white veil from her head, and covered up the child with it. The fire was at once quenched. But when she lifted up the veil, two boys sprang out from under it, and frolicsomely sported to and fro; while Wilhelm and the Amazon proceeded hand in hand across the garden; and noticed in the distance Mariana and his father walking in an alley, which was formed of lofty trees, and seemed to go quite round the garden. He turned his steps to them, and with his beautiful attendant was moving through the garden, when suddenly the fair-haired Friedrich came across their path, and kept them back with loud laughter and a thousand tricks. Still, however, they insisted on proceeding; and Friedrich hastened off, running towards Mariana and the father. These seemed to fly before him; he pursued the faster; till Wilhelm saw them hovering down the alley almost as on wings. Nature and inclination called on him to go, and help them; but the hand of the Amazon detained him. How gladly did he let himself be held! With this mingled feeling he awoke; and found his chamber shining with the morning beams.

CHAPTER II.

Our friend was called to breakfast by the boy: he found the Abbé waiting in the hall; Lothario, it appeared, had ridden out. The Abbé was not very talkative, but rather wore a thoughtful look; he inquired about Aurelia's death, and listened to our friend's recital of it, with apparent sympathy. "Ah!" cried he, "the man that discerns, with lively clearness, what infinite operations art and nature must have joined in, before a cultivated human being can be formed; the man that himself as much as possible takes interest in the culture of his fellow-men, is ready to despair when he sees how lightly mortals will destroy themselves, will blamelessly or blameably expose themselves to be destroyed. When I think of these things, life itself appears to me so uncertain a gift, that I could praise the man who does not value it beyond its worth."

Scarcely had he spoken, when the door flew violently up; a young lady came rushing in; she pushed away the old servant who attempted to restrain her. She made right to the Abbé, and seized him by the arm; her tears and sobs would hardly let her speak these words: "Where is he? Where have you put him? 'Tis a frightful treachery! Confess it now! I know what you are doing: I will after him; will know where you have sent him!"

"Be calm, my child," replied the Abbé, with assumed composure; "come with me to your room; you shall know it all; only you must have the strength to listen, if you ask me to relate." He offered her his hand, as if he meant to lead her out. "I will not return to my room," cried she: "I hate the walls where you have kept me prisoner so long. I know it all already: the Colonel has challenged him; he is gone to meet his enemy; perhaps this very moment he—Once or twice I thought I heard the sound of shots! I tell you, order out a coach, and come along with me, or I will fill the house and all the village with my screaming."

Weeping bitterly, she hastened to the window; the Abbé held her back, and sought in vain to soothe her.

They heard a sound of wheels: she threw up the window, exclaiming: "He is dead! They are bringing home his body. "He is coming out," replied the Abbé; "you perceive he lives. "He is wounded," said she wildly, "else he would have come on horseback. They are holding him! The wound is dangerous She ran to the door, and down the stairs: the Abbé hastened after her; and Wilhelm following, observed the fair one meet her lover who had now dismounted.

Lothario leaned on his attendant, whom Wilhelm at once knew as his ancient patron Jarno. The wounded man spoke very tenderly and kindly to the tearful damsel; he rested on her shoulder, and came slowly up the steps; saluted Wilhelm as he passed, and was conducted to his cabinet.

Jarno soon returned, and going up to Wilhelm, "It appears," said he, "you are predestined everywhere to find a theatre and actors. We have here commenced a play which is not altogether pleasant."

"I rejoice to find you," answered Wilhelm, "in so strange an hour: I am astonished, frightened; and your presence already quiets my mind. Tell me, is there danger? Is the Baron badly wounded?" "I imagine not," said Jarno.

It was not long till the young surgeon entered from the cabinet. "Now what say you?" cried Jarno to him. "That it is a dangerous piece of work," replied the other, putting several instruments into his leathern pouch. Wilhelm looked at the band, which was hanging from the pouch; he fancied he knew it. Bright contrary colours, a curious pattern, gold and silver wrought in singular figures, marked this band from all the bands in the world. Wilhelm was convinced he beheld the very pouch of the ancient surgeon, who had dressed his wounds in the green of the forest; and the hope, so long deferred, of again finding traces of the lovely Amazon, struck like a flame through all his soul.

"Where did you get that pouch?" cried he. "To whom did it belong before you? I beg of you, tell me." "I bought it at an auction," said the other: "what is it to me, whom it belonged to?" So speaking, he went out, and Jarno said: "If there would come but one word of truth from our young Doctor's mouth!" "Then he did not buy the pouch?" said Wilhelm. "Just as little as Lothario is in danger," said the other.

Wilhelm stood immersed in many reflections; Jarno asked how he had fared of late. Wilhelm sketched an outline of his history; and when he at last came to speak of Aurelia's death, and his message to the place, his auditor exclaimed: "Well! it is strange, most strange!"

The Abbé entered from Lothario's chamber; beckoned Jarno to go in instead of him; and said to Wilhelm: "The Baron bids me ask you to remain with us a day or two, to share his hospitality, and, in the present circumstances, contribute to his solacement. If you need to give any notice to your people, your letter shall be instantly despatched. Meanwhile, to make you understand this curious incident, of which you have been witness, I must tell you something, which indeed is no secret. The Baron

had a small adventure with a lady, which excited more than usual attention; the lady having taken him from a rival, and wishing to enjoy her victory too ostentatiously. After a time, he no longer found the same delight in her society; which he of course forsook: but being of a violent temper, she could not bear her fate with patience. Meeting at a ball, they had an open quarrel: she thought herself irreparably injured; and would be revenged. No knight stept forth to do battle for her; till her husband, whom for years she had not lived with, heard of the affair and took it up. He challenged the Baron, and today he has wounded him; yet, as I hear, the gallant Colonel has himself come still worse off."

From this hour, our friend was treated in the house as if he had belonged to it.

CHAPTER III.

At times they had read a little to the patient; Wilhelm joyfully performed this service. Lydia stirred not from Lothario's bed; her care for him absorbed her whole attention. But today the patient himself seemed occupied with thought: he bade them lay aside their book. "Today," said he, "I feel through my whole heart how foolishly we let our time pass on. How many things have I proposed to do, how many have I planned; yet how we loiter in our noblest purposes! I have just read over the scheme of the changes which I mean to make in my estates: and it is chiefly, I may say, on their account that I rejoice at the bullet's not having gone a deadlier road."

Lydia looked at him with tenderness, with tears in her eyes; as if to ask if *she*, if his friends could not pretend to any interest in his wish to live. Jarno answered: "Changes, such as you project, require to be considered well on every side, before they are resolved on."

"Long considerations," said Lothario, "are commonly a pr that we have not the point to be determined clearly in our e precipitate proceedings that we do not know it. I see distin that in managing my property, there are several particulars, which the services of my dependants cannot be remitted; cer rights which I must rigidly insist on: but I also see that are other articles, advantageous to me, but by no means pensable, which might admit of relaxation. Do I not profit l lands far better than my father did? Is not my income st creasing? And shall I alone enjoy this growing benefit? *not* those who labour with and for me partake, in their de

the advantages which expanding knowledge, which a period of improvement are procuring for us?"

"'Tis human nature!" cried Jarno: "I do not blame myself when I detect this selfish quality among the rest. Every man desires to gather all things round him, to shape and manage them according to his own pleasure: the money which he himself does not expend, he seldom reckons well expended."

"Certainly," observed Lothario, "much of the capital might be abated, if we consumed the interest less capriciously."

"The only thing I shall mention," said the other, "the only reason I can urge against your now proceeding with those alterations, which, for a time at least, must cause you loss, is, that you yourself are still in debt, and that the payment presses hard on you. My advice is, therefore, to postpone your plan till you are altogether free."

"And in the mean while leave it at the mercy of a bullet, or the fall of a tile, to annihilate the whole result of my existence and activity! O my friend! it is ever thus; it is ever the besetting fault of cultivated men, that they wish to spend their whole resources on some idea, scarcely any part of them on tangible existing objects. Why was it that I contracted debts, that I quarrelled with my uncle, that I left my sisters to themselves so long? Purely for the sake of an idea. In America, I fancied I might accomplish something; over seas, I hoped to become useful and essential: if any task was not begirt with a thousand dangers, I considered it trivial, unworthy of me. How differently do matters now appear! How precious, how important seems the duty which is nearest me, whatever it may be!"

"I recollect the letter which you sent me from the Western world," said Jarno: "it contained the words: 'I will return, and in my house, amid my fields, among my people, I will say: *Here or nowhere is America!*'"

"Yes, my friend! and I am still repeating it, and still repining at myself that I am not so busy here as I was there. For certain equable, continuous modes of life, there is nothing more than judgment necessary, and we study to attain nothing more; so that we become unable to discern what extraordinary services each vulgar day requires of us; or if we do discern them, we find abundance of excuses for not doing them. A judicious man is valuable to himself; but of little value for the general whole."

"We will not," said Jarno, "bear too hard upon judgment: let us grant that whenever extraordinary things are done, they are generally foolish."

"*Yes!* and just because they are not done according to the

proper plan. My brother-in-law, you see, is giving up his fortun so far as in his power, to the Community of Herrnhuth: he reckon that by doing so, he is advancing the salvation of his soul. Ha he sacrificed a small portion of his revenue, he might have re dered many people happy, might have made for them and for hin self a heaven upon earth. Our sacrifices are rarely of an activ kind; we, as it were, abandon what we give away. It is not fro resolution but despair, that we renounce our property. In thes days, I confess it, the image of the Count is hovering constantl before me; I have firmly resolved on doing from conviction, wha a crazy fear is forcing upon him. I will not wait for being curec Here are the papers: they require only to be properly drawn ou Take the lawyer with you; our guest will help: what I want, yo know as well as I; recovering or dying I will stand by it, and say *Here or nowhere is Herrnhuth!*"

When he mentioned dying, Lydia sank before his bed; sh hung upon his arm, and wept bitterly. The surgeon entered Jarno gave our friend the papers, and made Lydia leave the roon

"For Heaven's sake! what is this about the Count?" crie Wilhelm, when they reached the hall and were alone: "Wha Count is it that means to join the Herrnhuthers?"

"One whom you know very well," said Jarno. "You yourse are the ghost who have frightened the unhappy wiseacre in piety; you are the villain who have brought his pretty wife to su a state, that she inclines accompanying him."

"And she is Lothario's sister?" cried our friend.

"No other!"—"And Lothario knows—?"

"The whole."

"O let me fly!" cried Wilhelm: "How shall I appear be him? What can he say to me?"

"That no man should cast a stone at his brother; that one composes long speeches, with a view to shame his neigh he should speak them to a looking-glass."

"Do you know that too?"

"And many things beside," said Jarno with a smile. " the present case," continued he, "you shall not get away fr so easily as you did last time. You need not now be ap sive of my bounty-money; I have ceased to be a soldier; was one, you might have thought more charitably of me you saw me, many things have altered. My Prince, friend and benefactor being dead, I have now withdra busy life and its concerns. I used to have a pleasure in a what was reasonable; when I met with any despicabl *hesitated not to* call it so: and men had never done w

of my restless head and wicked tongue. The herd of people dread sound understanding more than anything; they ought to dread stupidity, if they had any notion what was really dreadful. Understanding is unpleasant, they must have it pushed aside; stupidity is but pernicious, they can let it stay. Well, be it so! I need to live; I will by and by communicate my plans to you; if you incline, you shall partake in them. But tell me first how things have gone with you. I see, I feel that you are changed. How is it with your ancient maggot of producing something beautiful and good in the society of gypsies?"

"Do not speak of it!" cried Wilhelm: "I have been already punished for it. People talk about the stage; but none, that has not been upon it personally, can form the smallest notion of it. How utterly these men are unacquainted with themselves, how thoughtlessly they carry on their trade, how boundless their pretensions are, no mortal can conceive. Each not only would be first, but sole; each wishes to exclude the rest, and does not see that even with them, he can scarcely accomplish anything. Each thinks himself a man of marvellous originality; yet with a ravening appetite for novelty, he cannot walk a footstep from the beaten track. How vehemently they counterwork each other! It is only the pitifullest self-love, the narrowest views of interest, that unite them. Of reciprocal accommodation they have no idea; backbiting and hidden spitefulness maintain a constant jealousy among them. In their lives they are either rakes or simpletons. Each claims the loftiest respect, each writhes under the slightest blame. 'All this he knew already,' he will tell you! Why then did he not do it? Ever needy, ever unconfiding, they seem as if their greatest fear were reason and good taste, their highest care were to secure the majesty of their self-will."

Wilhelm drew breath, intending to proceed with his eulogium, when an immoderate laugh from Jarno interrupted him. "Poor actors!" cried he; threw himself into a chair, and laughed away: "Poor dear actors! Do you know, my friend," continued he, recovering from his fit, "that you have been describing not the playhouse, but the world; that out of all ranks I could find you characters and doings in abundance, to suit your cruel pencil? Pardon me, it makes me laugh again, that you should think these amiable qualities existed on the boards alone."

Wilhelm checked his feelings: Jarno's extravagant, untimely laughter had in truth offended him. "It is scarcely hiding your misanthropy," said he, "when you maintain that faults like these are universal."

"And it shows your unacquaintance with the world, when you

impute them to the theatre in such a heinous light. I pardon in the player every fault that springs from self-deception and the desire to please. If he seem not something to himself and others, he is nothing. To seem is his vocation; he must prize his moment of applause, for he gets no other recompense; he must try to glitter, he is there to do so."

"You will give me leave at least to smile, in my turn," answered Wilhelm. "I should never have believed that you could be so merciful, so tolerant."

"I swear to you I am serious, fully and deliberately serious. All faults of the man I can pardon in the player; no fault of the player can I pardon in the man. Do not set me upon chanting my lament about the latter: it might have a sharper sound than yours."

The Surgeon entered from the cabinet; and to the question how his patient was, he answered with a lively air of complaisance: "Extremely well indeed; I hope soon to see him quite recovered." He hastened through the hall, not waiting Wilhelm's speech, who was preparing to inquire again with greater importunity about the leathern case. His anxiety to gain some tidings of his Amazon inspired him with confidence in Jarno: he disclosed his case to him, and begged his help. "You that know so many things," said he, "can you not discover this?"

Jarno reflected for a moment, then turning to his friend: "Be calm," said he, "give no one any hint of it: we shall come upon the fair one's footsteps, never fear. At present, I am anxious only for Lothario: the case is dangerous; the kindliness and comfortable talking of the Doctor tells me so. We should be quit of Lydia; for here she does no good: but how to set about the task, I know not. Tonight I am looking for our old Physician; we shall then take farther counsel."

CHAPTER IV.

THE Physician came: it was the good, old, little Doctor whom we know already, and to whom we were obliged for the communication of the pious Manuscript. First of all, he visited the wounded man; with whose condition he appeared to be by no means satisfied. He had next a long interview with Jarno: but they made no allusion to the subject of it when they came to supper.

Wilhelm saluted him in the kindest manner, and inquired *about the Harper.* "We have still hopes of bringing round the

hapless creature," answered the Physician. "He formed a dreary item in your limited and singular way of life," said Jarno. "How has it fared with him? Tell me."

Having satisfied Jarno's curiosity, the Physician thus proceeded: "I have never seen another man so strangely circumstanced. For many years, he has not felt the smallest interest in anything without him, scarcely paid the smallest notice to it: wrapped up in himself, he has looked at nothing but his own hollow empty Me, which seemed to him like an immeasurable abyss. It was really touching, when he spoke to us of this mournful state. 'Before me,' cried he, 'I see nothing; behind me nothing but an endless night, in which I live in the most horrid solitude. There is no feeling in me, but the feeling of my guilt: and this appears but like a dim formless spirit, far before me. Yet here there is no height, no depth, no forwards, no backwards; no words can express this never-changing state. Often in the agony of this sameness, I exclaim with violence: Forever! forever: and this dark incomprehensible word is clear and plain to the gloom of my condition. No ray of a Divinity illuminates this night; I shed all my tears by myself and for myself. Nothing is more horrible to me than friendship and love; for they alone excite in me the wish that the Apparitions which surround me might be real. But these two Spectres also have arisen from the abyss to plague me, and at length to tear from me the precious consciousness of my existence, unearthly though it be.'

"You should hear him speak," continued the Physician; "when in hours of confidence he thus alleviates his heart. I have listened to him often with the deepest feelings. When pressed by anything, and as it were compelled for an instant to confess that a space of time has passed, he looks astounded, then again refers the alteration to the things about him, considering it as an appearance of appearances, and so rejecting the idea of progress in duration. One night he sung a song about his gray hairs: we all sat round him weeping."

"O get it for me!" cried Wilhelm.

"But have you not discovered any trace of what he calls his crime?" inquired Jarno: "nor found out the reason of his wearing such a singular garb; of his conduct at the burning of the house; of his rage against the child?"

"It is only by conjectures that we can approximate to any knowledge of his fate: to question him directly, contradicts our principle. Observing easily that he was of the Catholic religion, we thought perhaps confession might afford him some assuagement; but he shrinks away, with the strangest gestures, every

time we try to introduce the priest to him. However, not to leav
your curiosity respecting him entirely unsatisfied, I may commu
nicate our suppositions on the subject. In his youth, we think
he must have been a clergyman: hence probably his wish to kee
his beard and long cloak. The joys of love appear to have re
mained for many years unknown to him. Late in life, as w
conceive, some aberration with a lady very nearly related to him
then her death, the consequence of an unlucky creature's birth
have altogether crazed his brain.

"His chief delusion is a fancy that he brings misfortune every
where along with him; and that death, to be unwittingly occa
sioned by a boy, is constantly impending over him. At first h
was afraid of Mignon, not knowing that she was a girl; then Feli
frightened him; and as, with all his misery, he has a boundless
love of life, this may perhaps have been the origin of his aversion
to the child."

"What hopes have you of his recovery?" inquired our friend.

"It advances slowly," answered the Physician; "yet it does
advance. He continues his appointed occupations: we have now
accustomed him to read the newspapers; he always looks for them
with eagerness."

"I am curious about his songs," said Jarno.

"Of these I can engage to get you several," replied the Docto
"Our parson's eldest son, who frequently writes down his father
sermons, has, unnoticed by the Harper, marked on paper many
stanzas of his singing; out of which some songs have gradua
been pieced together."

Next morning Jarno met our friend, and said to him: "
have to ask a kindness of you. Lydia must, for some time
removed: her violent unreasonable love and passionateness
ders the Baron's recovery. His wound requires rest and c
ness, though with his healthy temperament it is not dange
You see how Lydia tortures him with her tempestuous anxi
her ungovernable terrors, her never-drying tears; and—Eno
he added with a smile, after pausing for a moment, "our
expressly requires that she must quit us for a while. W
got her to believe that a lady, one of her most intimate fri
at present in the neighbourhood, wishing and expecting i
to see her. She has been prevailed upon to undertake a
to our lawyer's, which is but two leagues off. This man
secret: he will wofully lament that Fräulein Theresa sh
have left him again; he will seem to think she may stil
taken. Lydia will hasten after her; and if you prosp
led from place to place. At last, if she insist on tur

you must not contradict her; but the night will help you; the coachman is a cunning knave, and we shall speak with him before he goes. You are to travel with her in the coach, to talk to her, and manage the adventure."

"It is a strange and dubious commission that you give me," answered Wilhelm: "How painful is the sight of true love injured! And am I to be the instrument of injuring it? I have never cheated any person so; for it has always seemed to me that if we once begin deceiving with a view to good and useful purposes, we run the risk of carrying it to excess."

"Yet you cannot manage children otherwise," said Jarno.

"With children it may do," said Wilhelm; "for we love them tenderly, and take an open charge of them. But with our equals, in behalf of whom our heart is not so sure to call upon us for forbearance, it might frequently be dangerous. Yet do not think," he added, after pausing for a moment, "that I purpose to decline the task on this account. Honouring your judgment, as I do, feeling such attachment to your noble friend, such eagerness to forward his recovery by whatever means, I willingly forget myself and my opinions. It is not enough that we can risk our life to serve a friend; in the hour of need, we should also yield him our convictions. Our dearest passions, our best wishes we are bound to sacrifice in helping him. I undertake the charge; though it is easy to foresee the pain I shall have to suffer, from the tears, from the despair of Lydia."

"And for this, no small reward awaits you," answered Jarno: "Fräulein Theresa, whom you get acquainted with, is a lady such as you will rarely see. She puts many a man to shame: I may say, she is a genuine Amazon; while others are but pretty counterfeits, that wander up and down the world in that ambiguous dress."

Wilhelm was struck: he almost fancied that in Theresa he would find his Amazon again; especially as Jarno, whom he importuned to tell him more, broke off abruptly, and went away.

The new, near hope of once more seeing that beloved and honoured being, awoke a thousand feelings in his heart. He now looked upon the task, which had been given him, as the intervention of a special Providence; the thought that he was minded treacherously to carry off a helpless girl from the object of her sincerest warmest love, dwelt but a moment in his mind, as the shadow of a bird flits over the sunshiny earth.

The coach was at the door; Lydia lingered for a moment, as she was about to mount. "Salute your lord again for me," said she to the old servant; "tell him that I shall be home before

night." Tears were standing in her eyes, as she again looked back when the carriage started. She then turned round to Wilhelm; made an effort to compose herself, and said: "In Fräulein Theresa you will find a very interesting person. I wonder what it is that brings her hither: for, you must know, Lothario and she once passionately loved each other. In spite of the distance, he often used to visit her: I was staying with her then; I thought they would have lived and died for one another. But all at once it went to wreck, no creature could discover why. He had seen me, and I must confess that I was envious of Theresa's fortune; that I scarcely hid my love from him; that when he suddenly appeared to choose me in her stead, I could not but accept of him. She behaved to me beyond my wishes; though it almost seemed as if I had robbed her of this precious lover. But ah, how many thousand tears and pains that love of his has cost me! At first we met only now and then, and by stealth, at some appointed place; but I could not long endure that kind of life: in his presence only was I happy, wholly happy! Far from him, my eyes were never dry, my pulse was never calm. Once he stayed away for several days: I was altogether in despair; I ordered out my carriage, and surprised him here. He received me tenderly; and had not this unlucky quarrel happened, I should have led a heavenly life with him. But since the time when he began to be in danger and in pain, I shall not say what I have suffered: at this moment I am bitterly reproaching myself, that I could leave him for a single day."

Wilhelm was proceeding to inquire about Theresa, when they reached the lawyer's house. This gentleman came forward to the coach, lamenting wofully that Fräulein Theresa was already gone. He invited them to breakfast; signifying, however, that the lady might be overtaken in the nearest village. They determined upon following her: the coachman did not loiter; they had soon passed several villages, and yet come up with nobody. Lydia now gave orders for returning; the coachman drove along, as if he did not understand her. As she insisted with redoubled vehemence, Wilhelm called to him, and gave the promised token. The coachman answered, that it was not necessary to go back by the same road; he knew a shorter, and at the same time greatly easier one. He now turned aside across a wood, and over large commons. At last, no object they could recognise appearing, he confessed that unfortunately he had lost his way; declaring at the same time that he would soon get right again, as he saw a little town before him. Night came on; the coachman managed so discreetly that he *asked everywhere*, and nowhere waited for an answer. He drove

along all night: Lydia never closed an eye; in the moonshine she was constantly detecting similarities, which as constantly turned out to be dissimilar. In the morning, things around seemed known to her, and but more strange on that account. The coach drew up before a neat little country-house; a young lady stept out, and opened the carriage-door. Lydia looked at her with a stare of wonder; looked round; looked at her again; and fainted in the arms of Wilhelm.

CHAPTER V.

WILHELM was conducted to a little upper-room: the house was new, as small nearly as it could be, and extremely orderly and clean. In Theresa, who had welcomed him and Lydia at the coach, he had not found his Amazon: she was another and an altogether different woman. Handsome, and but of middle stature, she moved about with great alertness; and it seemed as if her clear blue open eyes let nothing that occurred escape them.

She entered Wilhelm's room, inquiring if he wanted anything. "Pardon me," said she, "for having lodged you in a chamber which the smell of paint still renders disagreeable: my little dwelling is but just made ready; you are handselling this room, which is appointed for my guests. Would that you had come on some more pleasant errand! Poor Lydia is like to be a dull companion; in other points also, you will have much to pardon. My cook has run away from me, at this unseasonable time; and a serving-man has bruised his hand. The case might happen I had to manage everything myself; and if it were so, why then we should just put up with it. One is plagued so with nobody as with one's servants; none of them will serve you, scarcely even serve himself."

She said a good deal more on different matters; in general she seemed to like speaking. Wilhelm inquired for Lydia; if he might not see her, and endeavour to excuse himself.

"It will have no effect at present," said Theresa; "time excuses, as it comforts. Words, in both cases, are of little effect. Lydia will not see you. 'Keep him from my sight,' she cried, when I was leaving her; 'I could almost despair of human nature. Such an honourable countenance, so frank a manner, and this secret guile!' Lothario she has quite forgiven: in a letter to the poor girl he declares: 'My friends persuaded me, my friends compelled me!' Among these she reckons you, and she condemns you with the rest."

"She does me too much honour in so blaming me," said Wilhelm: "I have no pretension to the friendship of that noble gentleman; on this occasion, I am but a guiltless instrument. I will not praise what I have done; it is enough that I could do it. It concerned the health, it concerned the life of a man, whom I value more than any one I ever knew before. O what a man is he, Fräulein; and what men are they that live about him! In their society I for the first time, I may well say, carried on a conversation; for the first time, was the inmost sense of my words returned to me, more rich, more full, more comprehensive, from another's mouth; what I had been groping for, was rendered clear to me; what I had been thinking, I was taught to see. Unfortunately this enjoyment was disturbed, at first by numerous anxieties and whims, and then by this unpleasant task. I undertook it with submission; for I reckoned it my duty, even though I sacrificed my feelings, to comply with the request of this gifted company of men."

While he spoke, Theresa had been looking at him with a very friendly air. "O how sweet is it, to hear one's own opinion uttered by a stranger tongue! We are never properly ourselves until another thinks entirely as we do. My own opinion of Lothario is perfectly the same as yours: it is not every one that does him justice; and therefore all that know him better are enthusiastic in esteem of him. The painful sentiment that mingles with the memory of him in my heart, cannot hinder me from thinking of him daily." A sigh heaved her bosom as she spoke thus; and a lovely tear glittered in her right eye. "Think not," continued she, "that I am so weak, so easy to be moved. It is but the eye that weeps. There was a little wart upon the under eyelid; they have happily removed it; but the eye has been weak ever since; the smallest cause brings a tear into it. Here sat the little wart: you cannot see a vestige of it now."

He saw no vestige; but he saw into her eye; it was clear as crystal; he almost imagined he could see to the very bottom of her soul.

"We have now," said she, "pronounced the watchword of our friendship: let us get entirely acquainted as fast as possible. The history of every person paints his character. I will tell you what my life has been: do you too place a little trust in me; and let us be united even when distance parts us. The world is so waste and empty, when we figure only towns and hills and rivers in it; but to know of some one here and there whom we accord with, who is living on with us even in silence, this makes our earthy ball a *peopled garden*."

She hastened off; engaging soon to take him out to walk. Her presence had affected him agreeably: he wished to be informed of her relation to Lothario. He was called; she came to meet him from her room. While they descended, necessarily one by one, the strait and even steepish stairs, she said: "All this might have been larger and grander, had I chosen to accept the offers of your generous friend: but to continue worthy of him, I must study to retain the qualities which gave me merit in his eyes.—Where is the steward?" asked she, stepping from the bottom of the stairs. "You must not think," continued she, "that I am rich enough to need a steward: the few acres of my own little property I myself can manage well enough. The steward is my new neighbour's, who has bought a fine estate beside us, every point of which I am acquainted with. The good old gentleman is lying ill of gout; his men are strangers here; I willingly assist in settling them."

They took a walk through fields, meadows and some orchards. Everywhere Theresa kept instructing the steward; nothing so minute but she could give account of it: and Wilhelm had reason to wonder at her knowledge, her precision, the prompt dexterity with which she suggested means for ends. She loitered nowhere; always hastened to the leading points; and thus her task was quickly over. "Salute your master," said she, as she sent away the man; "I mean to visit him as soon as possible, and wish him a complete recovery.—There now," she added with a smile, as soon as he was gone, "I might soon be rich: my good neighbour, I believe, would not be disinclined to offer me his hand."

"The old man with the gout?" cried Wilhelm: "I know not how, at your years, you could bring yourself to make so desperate a determination." "Nor am I tempted to it!" said Theresa: "Whoever can administer what he possesses has enough, and to be wealthy is a burdensome affair, unless you understand it."

Wilhelm testified his admiration at her skill in husbandry concerns. "Decided inclination, early opportunity, external impulse, and continued occupation in a useful business," said she, "make many things, which were at first far harder, possible in life. When you have learned what causes stimulated me in this pursuit, you will cease to wonder at the talent you now think strange."

On returning home, she sent him to her little garden. Here he could scarcely turn himself, so narrow were the walks, so thickly was it sown and planted. On looking over to the court, he could not help smiling: the firewood was lying there, as accurately sawed, split and piled, as if it had been part of the building, and had been intended to continue permanently there. The tubs and implements, *all clean*, were standing in their places: the house was

painted white and red; it was really pleasant to behold. Whatever can be done by handicraft, which knows not beautiful proportions, but labours for convenience, cheerfulness and durability, appeared united in this spot. They served him up dinner in his own room; he had time enough for meditating. Especially it struck him, that he should have got acquainted with another person of so interesting a character, who had been so closely related to Lothario. "It is just," said he to himself, "that a man so gifted should attract round him gifted women. How far the influence of manliness and dignity extends! Would that others did not come so wofully short, compared with him! Yes, confess thy fear. When thou meetest with thy Amazon, this woman of women, in spite of all thy hopes and dreaming, thou wilt find her, in the end, to thy humiliation and thy shame,—his bride."

CHAPTER VI.

WILHELM had passed a restless afternoon, not altogether without tedium; when towards evening his door opened, and a handsome hunter-boy stept forward with a bow. "Shall we have a walk?" said the youth; and in the instant, Wilhelm recognised Theresa by her lovely eyes.

"Pardon me this masquerade," said she; "for now, alas, it is nothing more. But as I am going to tell you of the time when I so enjoyed the world, I will recall those days, by every method, to my fancy. Come along! Even the place, where we have rested so often from our hunts and promenades, shall help me.

They went accordingly. On the way, Theresa said to her attendant: "It is not fair that I alone should speak: you already know enough of me, I nothing about you. Tell me in the mean while something of yourself, that I may gather courage to submit to you my history and situation." "Alas!" said Wilhelm, "I have nothing to relate but error on the back of error, deviation following deviation: and I know none from whom I would more gladly hide my present and my past embarrassments than from yourself. Your look, the scene you move in, your whole temperament and manner, prove to me that you have reason to rejoice in your bygone life; that you have travelled by a fair, clear path, in constant progress; that you have lost no time, that you have nothing to reproach yourself withal."

Theresa answered with a smile: "Let us see if you will think

so, after you have heard my history." They walked along: among some general remarks, Theresa asked him: "Are you free?" "I think I am," said he; "and yet I do not wish it." "Good!" said she: "that indicates a complicated story; you also will have something to relate."

Conversing thus, they ascended the hill, and placed themselves beside a lofty oak, which spread its shade far out on every side. "Here," said she, "beneath this German tree, will I disclose to you the history of a German maiden: listen to me patiently.

"My father was a wealthy nobleman of this province, a cheerful, clear-sighted, active, able man; a tender father, an upright friend, an excellent economist. I knew but one fault in him; he was too compliant to a wife who did not know his worth. Alas, that I should have to say so of my mother! Her nature was the opposite of his. She was quick and changeful; without affection either for her home, or for me her only child; extravagant, but beautiful, sprightly, full of talent, the delight of a circle she had gathered round her. Her society in truth was never large; nor did it long continue the same. It consisted principally of men; for no woman could like to be near her, still less could *she* endure the merit or the praise of any woman. I resembled my father, both in form and dispositions. As the duckling, with its first footsteps, seeks the water; so, from my earliest youth, the kitchen, the store-room, the granaries, the fields, were my selected element. Cleanliness and order in the house, seemed, even while I was playing in it, to be my peculiar instinct, my peculiar object. This tendency gave my father pleasure; and he directed, step by step, my childish endeavour into the suitablest employments. On the contrary, my mother did not like me, and she never for a moment hid it.

"I waxed in stature: with my years, increased my turn for occupation and my father's love to me. When we were by ourselves, when walking through the fields, when I was helping to examine his accounts, it was then I could see how glad he was. While gazing on his eyes, I felt as if I had been looking in upon myself: for it was in the eyes that I completely resembled him. But in the presence of my mother, he lost this energy, this aspect: he excused me mildly, when she blamed me unjustly and violently; he took my part, not as if he would protect me, but as if he would extenuate the demerit of my good qualities. To none of her caprices did he set himself in opposition. She began to be immensely taken with a passion for the stage; a theatre was soon got up; of men of all shapes and ages, crowding to display themselves along

with her upon her boards, she had abundance; of women, on the other hand, there was often a scarcity. Lydia, a pretty girl, who had been brought up with me, and who promised from the first to be extremely beautiful, had to undertake the secondary parts; the mothers and the aunts were represented by an ancient chambermaid; while the leading heroines, lovers, and shepherdesses of every kind, were seized on by my mother. I cannot tell you how ridiculous it seemed to me, to see the people, every one of whom I knew full well, standing on their scaffold, and pretending, after they had dressed themselves in other clothes, to pass for something else than what they were. In my eyes, they were never anything but Lydia and my mother, this baron and that secretary, whether they appeared as counts and princes or as peasants: and I could not understand how they meant to make me think that they were sad or happy, that they were indifferent or in love, liberal or avaricious, when I well knew the contrary to be the case. Accordingly, I very seldom stayed among the audience: I always snuffed their candles, that I might not be entirely without employment; I prepared the supper; and next morning, before they rose, I used to have their wardrobe all sorted, which commonly, the night before, they had left in a chaotic state.

"To my mother this activity appeared quite proper; but her love I could not gain. She despised me; and I know for certain that she more than once exclaimed with bitterness: 'If the mother could be as uncertain as the father, you would scarcely take this housemaid for my daughter!' Such treatment, I confess, at length entirely estranged me from her: I viewed her conduct as the conduct of a person unconnected with me; and being used to watch our servants like a falcon (for this, be it said in passing, is the ground of all true housekeeping), the proceedings of my mother and her friends, at the same time, naturally forced themselves upon my observation. It was easy to perceive that she did not look on all the men alike: I gave sharper heed; and soon found out that Lydia was her confidant, and had herself, by this opportunity, become acquainted with a passion, which from her earliest youth she had so often represented. I was aware of all their meetings: but I held my tongue; hinting nothing to my father, whom I was afraid of troubling. At last, however, I was obliged to speak. Many of their enterprises could not be accomplished without corrupting the servants. These now began to grow refractory; they despised my father's regulations, disregarded my commands. The disorders which arose from this I could not tolerate; I discovered all, complained of all to my father.

"*He listened* to me calmly. 'Good girl!' replied he with a

smile; 'I know it all: be quiet, bear it patiently; for it is on thy account alone that I endure it.'

"I was not quiet, I had not patience. I in secret blamed my father; for I did not think that any reason should induce him to endure such things. I called for regularity from all the servants; I was bent on driving matters to extremity.

"My mother had been rich before her marriage; yet she squandered more than she had a right to; and this, as I observed, occasioned many conferences between my parents. For a long time, the evil was not helped; till at last the passions of my mother brought it to a head.

"Her first gallant became unfaithful in a glaring manner: the house, the neighbourhood, her whole condition grew offensive to her. She insisted on removing to a different estate; there she was too solitary: she insisted on removing to the town; there she felt herself eclipsed among the crowd. Of much that passed between my father and her I know nothing: however, he at last determined, under stipulations which I did not learn, to consent that she should take a journey, which she had been meditating, to the south of France.

"We were now free; we lived as if in heaven: I do believe, my father could not be a loser, had he purchased her absence by a considerable sum. All our useless domestics were dismissed; and fortune seemed to smile on our undertakings: we had some extremely prosperous years; all things succeeded to our wish. But alas! this pleasing state was not of long continuance; altogether unexpectedly my father had a shock of palsy; it lamed his right side, and deprived him of the proper use of speech. We had to guess at everything that he required; for he never could pronounce the word that he intended. There were times when this was dreadfully afflicting to us: he would require expressly to be left alone with me; with earnest gestures, he would signify that every one should go away; and when we saw ourselves alone, he could not speak the word he meant. His impatience mounted to the highest pitch: his situation touched me to the inmost heart. Thus much seemed certain: he had something which he wished to tell me, which especially concerned my interest. What longing did I feel to know it! At other times, I could discover all things in his eyes: but now it was in vain. Even his eyes no longer spoke. Only this was clear: he wanted nothing, he desired nothing; he was striving to discover something to me; which unhappily I did not learn. His malady revisited him: he grew entirely inactive, incapable of motion, and a short time afterwards he died.

"I know not how it had got rooted in my thoughts, that some-

where he had hid a treasure, which he wished at death to leave me rather than my mother: I searched about for traces of it while he lived, but I could meet with none; at his death a seal was put on everything. I wrote to my mother, offering to continue in the house, and manage for her: she refused, and I was obliged to leave the place. A mutual testament was now produced; it gave my mother the possession and the use of all; and I was left, at least throughout her life, dependent on her. It was now that I conceived I rightly understood my father's beckonings: I pitied him for having been so weak; he had let himself be forced to do unjustly to me even after he was dead. Certain of my friends maintained, that it was little better than if he had disinherited me: they called upon me to attack the will by law; but this I never could resolve on doing. I reverenced my father's memory too much; I trusted in destiny; I trusted in myself.

"There was a lady in the neighbourhood possessed of large property, with whom I had always been on good terms: she gladly received me; I engaged to superintend her household, and ere long the task grew very easy to me. She lived regularly, she loved order in everything; and I faithfully assisted her in struggling with her steward and domestics. I am neither of a niggardly nor grudging temper; but we women are disposed to insist, more earnestly than men, that nothing shall be wasted. Embezzlement of all sorts is intolerable to us: we require that each enjoy exactly in so far as right entitles him.

"Here I was in my element once more; I mourned my father's death in silence. My protectress was content with me: one small circumstance alone disturbed my peace. Lydia returned: my mother had been harsh enough to cast the poor girl off, after having altogether spoiled her. Lydia had learned with her mistress to consider passions as her occupation; she was wont to curb herself in nothing. On her unexpected re-appearance, the lady whom I lived with took her in; she wished to help me, but could train herself to nothing.

"About this time, the relatives and future heirs of my protectress often visited the house, to recreate themselves with hunting. Lothario was frequently among them: it was not long till I had noticed, though without the smallest reference to myself, how far he was superior to the rest. He was courteous towards all; and Lydia seemed ere long to have attracted his attention to her. Constantly engaged in something, I was seldom with the company: while he was there I did not talk so much as usual; for I will confess it, lively conversation, from of old, had been to me the *finest seasoning* of existence. With my father I was wont to talk

of everything that happened. What you do not speak of, you will seldom accurately think of. No man had I ever heard with greater pleasure than I did Lothario, when he told us of his travels and campaigns. The world appeared to lie before him clear and open, as to me the district was in which I lived and managed. We were not entertained with marvellous personal adventures, the extravagant half-truths of a shallow traveller, who is always painting out himself, and not the country he has undertaken to describe. Lothario did not tell us his adventures; he led us to the place itself. I have seldom felt so pure a satisfaction.

"But still higher was my pleasure, when I heard him talk, one evening, about women. The subject happened to be introduced; some ladies of the neighbourhood had come to see us; and were speaking, in the common style, about the cultivation of the female mind. Our sex, they said, was treated unjustly; every sort of higher education men insisted on retaining for themselves: they admitted us to no science, they required us either to be dolls or family drudges. To all this Lothario said not much: but when the party was a little thinned, he gave us his opinion more explicitly. 'It is very strange,' cried he, 'that men are blamed for their proceeding here: they have placed woman on the highest station she is capable of occupying. And where is there any station higher than the ordering of the house? While the husband has to vex himself with outward matters, while he has wealth to gather and secure, while perhaps he takes part in the administration of the state, and everywhere depends on circumstances; ruling nothing, I may say, while he conceives that he is ruling much; compelled to be but politic where he would willingly be reasonable, to dissemble where he would be open, to be false where he would be upright; while thus, for the sake of an object which he never reaches, he must every moment sacrifice the first of objects, harmony with himself,—a reasonable housewife is actually governing in the interior of her family; has the comfort and activity of every person in it to provide for, and make possible. What is the highest happiness of mortals, if not to execute what we consider right and good; to be really masters of the means conducive to our aims? And where should or can our nearest aims be, but in the interior of our home? All those indispensable, and still to be renewed supplies, where do we expect, do we require to find them, if not in the place where we rise and where we go to sleep, where kitchen and cellar, and every species of accommodation for ourselves and ours is to be always ready? What unvarying activity is needed to conduct this constantly recurring series in unbroken living order! *How few* are the men, to whom it is given to return

regularly like a star, to command their day as they command their night; to form for themselves their household instruments, to sow and to reap, to gain and to expend, and to travel round their circle with perpetual success and peace and love! It is when a woman has attained this inward mastery, that she truly makes the husband whom she loves a master: her attention will acquire all sorts of knowledge; her activity will turn them all to profit. Thus is she dependent upon no one; and she procures her husband genuine independence, that which is interior and domestic: whatever he possesses, he beholds secured; what he earns, well employed; and thus he can direct his mind to lofty objects, and if fortune favours, he may act in the state the same character which so well becomes his wife at home.'

"He then described to us the kind of wife he wished. I reddened; for he was describing me as I looked and lived. I silently enjoyed my triumph; and the more, as I perceived, from all the circumstances, that he had not meant me individually, that indeed he did not know me. I cannot recollect a more delightful feeling in my life than this, when a man whom I so highly valued gave the preference, not to my person, but to my inmost nature. What a recompense did I consider it! What encouragement did it afford me!

"So soon as they were gone, my worthy benefactress, with a smile, observed to me: 'Pity that men often think and speak of what they will never execute, else here were a special match, the exact thing for my dear Theresa!' I made sport of her remark; and added, that indeed men's understanding gave its vote for household wives; but that their heart and imagination longed for other qualities; and that we household people could not stand a rivalry with beautiful and lovely women. This was spoken for the ear of Lydia; she did not hide from us that Lothario had made a deep impression on her heart; and in reality, he seemed at each new visit to grow more and more attentive to her. She was poor and not of rank; she could not think of marriage; but she was unable to resist the dear delight of charming and of being charmed. I had never loved, nor did I love at present: but though it was unspeakably agreeable to see in what light my turn of mind was viewed, how high it was ranked by such a man, I will confess I still was not altogether satisfied. I now wished that he should be acquainted with me, and should take a personal interest in me. This wish arose, without the smallest settled thought of anything that could result from it.

"The greatest service I did my benefactress, was in bringing into order the extensive forests which belonged to her. In this *precious property*, whose value time and circumstances were con-

tinually increasing, matters still went on according to the old routine; without regularity, without plan: no end to theft and fraud. Many hills were standing bare; an equal growth was nowhere to be found but in the oldest cuttings. I personally visited the whole of them, with an experienced forester. I got the woods correctly measured; I set men to hew, to sow, to plant; in a short time, all things were in progress. That I might mount more readily on horseback, and also walk on foot with less obstruction, I had a suit of men's clothes made for me; I was present in many places, I was feared in all.

"Hearing that our young friends with Lothario were purposing to have another hunt, it came into my head, for the first time in my life, to make a figure; or that I may not do myself injustice, to pass in the eyes of this noble gentleman for what I was. I put on my men's clothes, took my gun upon my shoulder, and went forward with our hunters, to await the party on our marches. They came; Lothario did not know me: a nephew of the lady's introduced me to him as a clever forester; joked about my youth, and carried on his jesting in my praise, till at last Lothario recognised me. The nephew seconded my project, as if we had concocted it together. He circumstantially and gratefully described what I had done for the estates of his aunt, and consequently for himself.

"Lothario listened with attention; he talked with me; inquired concerning all particulars of the estates and district. I of course was glad to have such an opportunity of showing him my knowledge: I stood my ordeal very well; I submitted certain projects of improvement to him; which he sanctioned, telling me of similar examples, and strengthening my arguments by the connexion which he gave them. My satisfaction grew more perfect every moment. Happily, however, I merely wished that he should be acquainted with me, not that he should love me. We came home; and I observed more clearly than before, that the attention he showed to Lydia seemed expressive of a secret inclination. I had reached my object; yet I was not at rest: from that day, he showed a true respect for me, a fine trust in me; in company he usually spoke to me, asked my opinion, and appeared to be persuaded that, in household matters, nothing was unknown to me. His sympathy excited me extremely: even when the conversation was of general finance and political economy, he used to lead me to take part in it; and in his absence, I endeavoured to acquire more knowledge of our province, nay of all the empire. The task was easy for me: it was but repeating on the great scale what I knew so accurately on the small.

"From this period he visited our house oftener. We talked, I may say, of everything: yet in some degree our conversation always in the end grew economical, if even but in a secondary sense. What immense effects a man, by the continuous application of his powers, his time, his money, even by means which seem but small, may bring about, was frequently and largely spoken of.

"I did not withstand the tendency which drew me towards him: and alas! I felt too soon how deep, how cordial, how pure and genuine was my love, as I believed it more and more apparent that Lydia and not myself was the occasion of these visits. She, at least, was most vividly persuaded so; she made me her confidant; and this, again, in some degree, consoled me. For in truth, what she explained so much to her advantage, I reckoned nowise of importance; there was not a trace of any serious lasting union being meditated; but the more distinctly did I see the wish of the impassioned girl to be his at any price.

"Thus did matters stand, when the lady of the house surprised me with an unexpected message. 'Lothario,' said she, 'offers you his hand, and desires through life to have you ever at his side.' She enlarged upon my qualities, and told me, what I liked sufficiently to hear, that in me Lothario was persuaded he had found the person whom he had so long been seeking for.

"The height of happiness was now attained for me: my hand was asked by a man for whom I had the greatest value; beside whom and along with whom I might expect a full, expanded, free and profitable employment of my inborn tendency, of my talent perfected by practice. The sum of my existence seemed to have enlarged itself into infinitude. I gave my consent; he himself came, and spoke with me in private; he held out his hand to me; he looked into my eyes, he clasped me in his arms, and pressed a kiss upon my lips. It was the first and the last. He confided to me all his circumstances; told me how much his American campaign had cost him, what debts he had accumulated on his property; that, on this score, he had in some measure quarrelled with his grandunele; that the worthy gentleman intended to relieve him, though truly in his own peculiar way, being minded to provide him with a rich wife, whereas a man of sense would choose a household wife at all events; that however, by his sister's influence, he hoped his noble relative would be persuaded. He set before me the condition of his fortune, his plans, his prospects, and requested my coöperation. Till his uncle should consent, our promise was to be a secret.

"Scarcely was he gone, when Lydia asked me, whether he had spoken of her. I answered no; and tired her with a long detail

of economical affairs. She was restless, out of humour; and his conduct, when he came again, did not improve her situation.

"But the sun, I see, is bending to the place of rest. Well for you, my friend! You would otherwise have had to hear this story, which I often enough go over by myself, in all its most minute particulars. Let me hasten: we are coming to an epoch, on which it is not good to linger.

"By Lothario I was made acquainted with his noble sister; and she, at a convenient time, contrived to introduce me to the uncle. I gained the old man; he consented to our wishes; and I returned, with happy tidings, to my benefactress. The affair was now no secret in the house: Lydia heard of it; she thought the thing impossible. When she could no longer doubt of it, she vanished all at once: we knew not whither she had gone.

"Our marriage-day was coming near: I had often asked him for his portrait; just as he was going off, I reminded him that he had promised it. He said: 'You have never given me the case you want to have it fitted into.' This was true: I had got a present from a female friend, on which I set no ordinary value. Her name, worked from her own hair, was fastened on the outer glass; within there was a vacant piece of ivory, on which her portrait was to have been painted, when a sudden death snatched her from me. Lothario's love had cheered me at the time her death lay heavy on my spirits: and I wished to have the void, which she had left me in her present, filled by the picture of my friend.

"I ran to my chamber; fetched my jewel-box, and opened it in his presence. Scarcely had he looked into it, when he noticed a medallion with the portrait of a lady. He took it in his hand, considered it attentively, and asked me hastily whose face it was. 'My mother's,' answered I. 'I could have sworn,' said he, 'that it was the portrait of a Madame Saint Alban, whom I met some years ago in Switzerland.' 'It is the same,' replied I, smiling; 'and so you have unwittingly become acquainted with your step-mother. Saint Alban is the name my mother has assumed for travelling with: she passes under it in France at present.'

"'I am the miserablest man alive!' exclaimed he, as he threw the portrait back into the box, covered his eyes with his hand, and hurried from the room. He sprang on horseback; I ran to the balcony, and called out after him: he turned, waved his hand to me, went speedily away,—and I have never seen him more."

The sun went down: Theresa gazed with unaverted looks upon the splendour; and both her fine eyes filled with tears.

Theresa spoke not: she laid her hand upon her new friend's

hands: he kissed it with emotion; she dried her tears, and rose. "Let us return, and see that all is right," said she.

The conversation was not lively by the way. They entered the garden-door, and noticed Lydia sitting on a bench: she rose, withdrew before them, and walked in. She had a paper in her hand; two little girls were by her. "I see," observed Theresa, "she is still carrying her only comfort, Lothario's letter, with her. He promises that she shall live with him again, so soon as he is well: he begs of her till then to stay in peace with me. On these words she hangs; with these lines she solaces herself: but with his friends she is extremely angry."

Meanwhile the two children had approached. They courtesied to Theresa, and gave her an account of all that had occurred while she was absent. "You see here another part of my employment," said Theresa. "Lothario's sister and I have made a league: we educate some little ones in common: such as promise to be lively serviceable housewives I take charge of; she of such as show a finer and more quiet talent: it is right to provide for the happiness of future husbands both in household and in intellectual matters. When you become acquainted with my noble friend, a new era in your life will open. Her beauty, her goodness, make her worthy of the reverence of the world." Wilhelm did not venture to confess, that unhappily the lovely Countess was already known to him: that his transient connexion with her would occasion him perpetual sorrow. He was well pleased that Theresa let the conversation drop; that some business called for her within. He was now alone: the intelligence which he had just received, of the young and lovely Countess being driven to replace, by deeds of benevolence, her own lost comfort, made him very sad; he felt that with her it was but a need of self-oblivion, an attempt to supply, by the hopes of happiness to others, the want of a cheerful enjoyment of existence in herself. He thought Theresa happy, since even in that unexpected melancholy alteration which had taken place in her prospects, there was no alteration needed in herself. "How fortunate beyond all others," cried he, "is the man who, in order to adjust himself to fate, is not required to cast away his whole preceding life!"

Theresa came into his room, and begged pardon for disturbing him. "My whole library," said she, "is in the wall-press here; they are rather books which I do not throw aside, than which I have taken up. Lydia wants a pious book: there are one or two of that sort among them. Persons who throughout the whole twelve months are worldly, think it necessary to be godly at a time *of straits: all* moral and religious matters they regard as physic,

which is to be taken, with aversion, when they are unwell: in a clergyman, a moralist, they see nothing but a doctor, whom they cannot soon enough get rid of. Now, I confess, I look upon religion as a kind of diet, which can only be so when I make a constant practice of it, when throughout the whole twelve months I never lose it out of sight."

She searched among the books; she found some edifying works, as they are called. "It was of my mother," said Theresa, "that poor Lydia learned to have recourse to books like these. While her gallant continued faithful, plays and novels were her life; his departure brought religious writings once more into credit. I, for my share, cannot understand," continued she, "how men have made themselves believe that God speaks to us through books and histories. The man, to whom the universe does not reveal directly what relation it has to him; whose heart does not tell him what he owes to himself and others,—that man will scarcely learn it out of books; which generally do little more than give our errors names."

She left our friend alone: he passed his evening in examining the little library; it had in truth been gathered quite at random.

Theresa, for the few days Wilhelm spent with her, continued still the same: she related to him, at different times, the consequences of that singular incident with great minuteness. Day and hour, place and name, were present to her memory: we shall here compress into a word or two, so much of it as will be necessary for the information of our readers.

The reason of Lothario's quick departure was unhappily too easy to explain. He had met Theresa's mother on her journey: her charms attracted him; she was no niggard of them; and this luckless transitory aberration came at length to shut him out from being united to a lady, whom nature seemed to have expressly made for him. As for Theresa, she continued in the pure circle of her duties. They learned that Lydia had been living in the neighbourhood in secret. She was happy that the marriage, though for unknown causes, had not been completed. She endeavoured to renew her intimacy with Lothario: and more, as it seemed, out of desperation than affection, by surprise than with consideration, from tedium than of purpose, he had met her wishes.

Theresa was quiet on the subject; she made no pretensions farther to him; and if he had even been her husband, she would probably have had sufficient spirit to endure a matter of this kind, if it had not troubled her domestic order: at least she often used to say, that a wife, who properly conducted her economy, should

take no umbrage at such little fancies of her husband, but be always certain that he would return.

Ere long, Theresa's mother had deranged her fortune: the losses fell upon the daughter, whose share of the effects, in consequence, was small. The old lady, who had been Theresa's benefactress, died; leaving her a little property in land, and a handsome sum by way of legacy. Theresa soon contrived to make herself at home in this new narrow circle. Lothario offered her a better property, Jarno endeavouring to negotiate the business: but she refused it. "I will show," said she, "in this little that I deserved to share the great with him: but I keep this before me, that, should accident embarrass me, on my own account or that of others, I will betake myself without the smallest hesitation to my generous friend."

There is nothing less liable to be concealed and unemployed than well-directed practical activity. Scarcely had she settled in her little property, when her acquaintance and advice began to be desired by many of her neighbours; and the proprietor of the adjacent lands gave her plainly enough to understand, that it depended on herself alone, whether she would take his hand, and be heiress of the greater part of his estates. She had already mentioned the matter to our friend: she often jested with him about marriages, suitable and unsuitable.

"Nothing," said she once, "gives a greater loose to people's tongues, than when a marriage happens, which they can denominate unsuitable: and yet the unsuitable are far more common than the suitable; for, alas, with most marriages, it is not long till things assume a very piteous look. The confusion of ranks by marriage can be called unsuitable, only when the one party is unable to participate in the manner of existence which is native, habitual, and which at length grows absolutely necessary to the other. The different classes have different ways of living, which they cannot change or communicate to one another; and this is the reason why connexions such as these, in general, were better not formed. Yet exceptions, and exceptions of the happiest kind, are possible. Thus too, the marriage of a young woman with a man advanced in life is generally unsuitable; yet I have seen some such turn out extremely well. For me, I know but of one kind of marriage that would be entirely unsuitable; that in which I should be called upon to make a show, and manage ceremonies: I had rather give my hand to the son of any honest farmer in the neighbourhood."

Wilhelm at length made ready for returning. He requested *of Theresa to* obtain for him a parting word with Lydia. The

impassioned girl at last consented: he said some kindly things to her; to which she answered: "The first burst of anguish I have conquered. Lothario will be ever dear to me: but for those friends of his, I know them; and it grieves me that they are about him. The Abbé, for a whim's sake, could leave a person in extreme need, or even plunge one into it; the Doctor would have all things go on like clock-work; Jarno has no heart: and you—at least no force of character! Just go on; let these three people use you as their tool; they will have many an execution to commit to you. For a long time, as I know well, my presence has been hateful to them: I had not found out their secret; but I had observed that they had one. Why these bolted rooms, these strange passages? Why can no one ever reach the central tower? Why did they banish me, whenever they could, to my own chamber? I will confess, jealousy at first incited me to these discoveries: I feared some lucky rival might be hid there. I have now laid aside that suspicion: I am well convinced that Lothario loves me, that he means honourably by me; but I am quite as well convinced that his false and artful friends betray him. If you would really do him service; if you would ever be forgiven for the injury which I have suffered from you, free him from the hands of these men. But what am I expecting! Give this letter to him: repeat what it contains; that I will love him forever, that I depend upon his word. Ah!" cried she, rising and throwing herself with tears upon Theresa's neck: "he is surrounded by my foes; they will endeavour to persuade him that I have sacrificed nothing for his sake: O! Lothario may well believe that he is worthy of any sacrifice, without needing to be grateful for it."

Wilhelm's parting with Theresa was more cheerful: she wished they might soon meet again. "Me you wholly know," said she: "I alone have talked while we have been together. It will be your duty, next time, to repay my candour."

During his return, he kept contemplating this new and bright phenomenon, with the liveliest recollection. What confidence had she inspired him with! He thought of Mignon and Felix; and how happy they might be if under her direction: then he thought of himself; and felt what pleasure it would be to live beside a being so entirely serene and clear. As he approached Lothario's Castle, he observed, with more than usual interest, the central tower and the many passages and side-buildings: he resolved to question Jarno or the Abbé on the subject, by the earliest opportunity.

CHAPTER VII.

On arriving at the Castle, Wilhelm found its noble owner in the way of full recovery: the Doctor and the Abbé had gone off; Jarno alone was there. It was not long till the patient now and then could ride; sometimes by himself; sometimes with his friends. His conversation was at once courteous and earnest, instructive and enlivening: you could often notice in it traces of a tender sensibility, although he strove to hide it, and almost seemed to blame it, when in spite of him it came to view.

One evening while at table he was silent, though his look was very cheerful.

"Today," said Jarno, "you have met with an adventure; and a pleasing one?"

"I give you credit for your penetration!" said Lothario. "Yes, I have met with a very pleasing adventure. At another time, perhaps I should not have considered it so charming as today, when it came upon me so attractively. Towards night, I rode out beyond the river, through the hamlets, by a path which I had often visited in former years. My corporeal sufferings must have reduced me more than I supposed: I felt weak; but as my strength was re-awakening, I was as it were new-born. All objects seemed to wear the hues they had in earlier times; all looked graceful, lovely, charming, as they have not looked to me for many years. I easily observed that it was mere debility; yet I continued to enjoy it: I rode softly onwards, and could now conceive how men may grow to like diseases, which attune us to those sweet emotions. You know, perhaps, what used of old so frequently to lead me that way?"

"If I mistake not," answered Jarno, "it was a little love concern you were engaged in with a farmer's daughter."

"It might be called a great one," said Lothario: "for we loved each other deeply, seriously and for a long time. Today, it happened, everything combined to represent before me in its liveliest colour the earliest season of our love. The boys were again shaking maybugs from the trees; the ashen grove had not grown larger since the day I saw her first. It was now long since I had met with Margaret. She is married at a distance; and I had heard by chance, that she was come with her children, some weeks ago, to pay a visit to her father."

"This ride, then, was not altogether accidental?"

"I will not deny," replied Lothario, "that I wished to meet *her. On coming* near the house, I saw her father sitting at the

door; a child of probably a year old was standing by him. As I approached, a female gave a hasty look from an upper window; and a minute afterwards, I heard some person tripping downstairs. I thought surely it was she: and I will confess, I was flattering myself that she had recognised me, and was hastening to meet me. But what was my surprise and disappointment, when she bounded from the door; seized the child, to which the horses had come pretty close, and took it in! It gave me a painful twinge: my vanity, however, was a little solaced, when I thought I saw a tint of redness on her neck, and on the ear, which was uncovered.

"I drew up, and spoke a little with the father, glancing sideways, in the mean time, over all the windows, to observe if she would not appear at some of them: but no trace of her was visible. Ask I would not; so I rode away. My displeasure was a little mollified by wonder: though I had not seen the face, it appeared to me that she was scarcely changed; and ten years are a pretty space! Nay she looked even younger, quite as slim, as light of foot; her neck if possible was lovelier than before; her cheeks as quick at blushing; yet she was the mother of six children, perhaps of more. This apparition suited the enchantment which surrounded me so well, that I rode along with feelings grown still younger: and I did not turn till I was at the forest, when the sun was going down. Strongly as the falling dew, and the prescription of our Doctor, called upon me to proceed direct homewards, I could not help again going round by the farmhouse. I observed a woman walking up and down the garden, which is fenced by a light hedge. I rode along the footpath to it; and found myself at no great distance from the person whom I wanted.

"Though the evening sun was glancing in my eyes, I saw that she was busy with the hedge, which only slightly covered her. I thought I recognised my mistress. On coming up, I halted, not without a palpitation at the heart. Some high twigs of wild roses, which a soft air was blowing to and fro, made her figure indistinct to me. I spoke to her, asked her how she was. She answered in an under-tone: 'Quite well.' In the mean time I perceived a child behind the hedge, engaged in plucking roses, and I took the opportunity of asking where her other children were. 'It is not my child,' said she: 'that were rather early!' And at this moment, it happened that the twigs were blown aside, and her face could be distinctly seen. I knew not what to make of the affair. It was my mistress, and it was not. Almost younger, almost lovelier than *she used* to be ten years before. 'Are you not the

farmer's daughter, then?' inquired I, half confused. 'No,' said she: 'I am her cousin.'

"'You resemble one another wonderfully,' added I.

"'Yes, so says every one that knew her half-a-score of years ago.'

"I continued putting various questions to her: my mistake was pleasant to me, even after I had found it out. I could not leave this living image of bygone blessedness, that stood before me. The child meanwhile had gone away; it had wandered to the pond in search of flowers. She took her leave, and hastened after it.

"I had now, however, learned, that my former love was really in her father's house: while riding forward, I employed myself in guessing whether it had been her cousin or she, that had secured the child from harm. I more than once, in thought, repeated all the circumstances of the incident: I can remember few things that have affected me more gratefully. But I feel that I am still unwell: we must ask the Doctor to deliver us from the remains of this pathetic humour."

With confidential narratives of pretty love adventures, it often happens as with ghost-stories; when the first is told, the others follow of themselves.

Our little party, in recalling other times, found numerous passages of this description. Lothario had the most to tell. Jarno's histories were all of one peculiar character: what Wilhelm could disclose we already know. He was apprehensive they might mention his adventure with the Countess; but it was not hinted at, not even in the remotest manner.

"It is true," observed Lothario, "there can scarcely any feeling in the world be more agreeable, than when the heart, after a pause of indifference, again opens to love for some new object: yet I would forever have renounced that happiness, had fate been pleased to unite me with Theresa. We are not always youths; we ought not always to be children. To the man, who knows the world; who understands what he should do in it, what he should hope from it, nothing can be more desirable than meeting with a wife, who will everywhere coöperate with him, who will everywhere prepare his way for him; whose diligence takes up what his must leave; whose occupation spreads itself on every side, while his must travel forward on its single path. What a heaven had I figured for myself beside Theresa! Not the heaven of an enthusiastic bliss; but of a sure life on earth: order in prosperity, *courage* in adversity, care for the smallest, and a spirit capable of *comprehending* and managing the greatest. O! I saw in her the

qualities, which, when developed, make such women as we find in history, whose excellence appears to us far preferable to that of men: this clearness of view; this expertness in all emergencies; this sureness in details, which brings the whole so accurately out, although they never seem to think of it. You may well forgive me," added he, and turned to Wilhelm with a smile, "that I forsook Aurelia for Theresa: with the one I could expect a calm and cheerful life, with the other not a happy hour."

"I will confess," said Wilhelm, "that in coming hither, I had no small anger in my heart against you; that I proposed to censure with severity your conduct to Aurelia."

"It was really censurable," said Lothario: "I should not have exchanged my friendship for her with the sentiment of love; I should not, in place of the respect which she deserved, have intruded an attachment she was neither calculated to excite nor to maintain. Alas! she was not lovely when she loved; the greatest misery that can befall a woman."

"Well, it is past!" said Wilhelm. "We cannot always shun the things we blame: in spite of us, our feelings and our actions sometimes strangely swerve from their natural and right direction; yet there are certain duties which we never should lose sight of. Peace be to the ashes of our friend! Without censuring ourselves or her, let us, with sympathising hearts, strew flowers upon her grave. But at the grave in which the hapless mother sleeps, let me ask why you acknowledge not the child; a son whom any father might rejoice in, and whom you appear entirely to overlook? With your pure and tender nature, how can you altogether cast away the instinct of a parent? All this while, you have not spent one syllable upon that precious creature, of whose attractions I could say so much."

"Whom do you speak of?" asked Lothario: "I do not understand you."

"Of whom but of your son, Aurelia's son, the lovely child, to whose good fortune there is nothing wanting, but that a tender father should acknowledge and receive him."

"You mistake, my friend," exclaimed Lothario: "Aurelia never had a son, at least by me: I know of no child, or I would with joy acknowledge it; and even in the present case, I will gladly look upon the little creature as a relic of her, and take charge of educating it. But did she ever give you to believe that the boy was hers, was mine?"

"I cannot recollect that I ever heard a word from her expressly on the subject: but we took it up so, and I never for a moment doubted it."

"I can give you something like a clue to this perplexity," said Jarno. "An old woman, whom you must have noticed often, gave Aurelia the child; she accepted it with passion, hoping to alleviate her sorrows by its presence: and, in truth, it gave her many a comfortable hour."

This discovery awoke anxieties in Wilhelm; he thought of his dear Mignon and his beautiful Felix with the liveliest distinctness. He expressed his wish to remove them both from the state in which they were.

"We shall soon arrange it," said Lothario. "The little girl may be committed to Theresa; she cannot be in better hands. As for the boy, I think you should yourself take charge of him: what in us the women leave uncultivated, children cultivate, when we retain them near us."

"But first, I think," said Jarno, "you will once for all renounce the stage, as you have no talent for it."

Our friend was struck: he had to curb himself, for Jarno's harsh sentence had not a little wounded his self-love. "If you convince me of that," replied he, forcing a smile, "you will do me a service; though it is but a mournful service to rouse one from a pleasing dream."

"Without enlarging on the subject," answered Jarno, "I could merely wish you would go and fetch the children. The rest will come in course."

"I am ready," answered Wilhelm: "I am restless, and curious to see if I can get no farther knowledge of the boy: I long to see the little girl, who has attached herself so strangely to me."

It was agreed that he should lose no time in setting out. Next day, he had prepared himself; his horse was saddled: he only waited for Lothario, to take leave of him. At the dinner hour, they went as usual to table, not waiting for the master of the house. He did not come till late; and then sat down by them.

"I could bet," said Jarno, "that today you have again been making trial of your tenderness of heart; you have not been able to withstand the curiosity to see your quondam love."

"Guessed!" replied Lothario.

"Let us hear," said Jarno, "how it went: I long to know."

"I confess," replied Lothario, "the affair lay nearer my heart than it reasonably ought: so I formed the resolution of again riding out, and actually seeing the person, whose renewed young image had affected me with such a pleasing illusion. I alighted at some distance from the house, and sent the horses to a side, that the children, who were playing at the door, might not be disturbed. I entered the house; by chance she met me just within

the threshold: it was herself; and I recognised her, notwithstanding the striking change. She had grown stouter, and seemed to be larger: her gracefulness was shaded by a look of staidness; her vivacity had passed into a calm reflectiveness. Her head, which she once bore so airily and freely, drooped a little; slight furrows had been traced upon her brow.

"She cast down her eyes on seeing me; but no blush announced any inward movement of the heart. I held out my hand to her, she gave me hers: I inquired about her husband, he was absent; about her children, she stept out and called them; all came in and gathered round her. Nothing is more charming than to see a mother with a child upon her arm; nothing is more reverend than a mother among many children. That I might say something, I asked the name of the youngest. She desired me to walk in, and see her father: I agreed; she introduced me to the room, where everything was standing, almost just as I had left it; and what seemed stranger still, the fair cousin, her living image, was sitting on the very seat behind the spinning-wheel, where I had found my love so often in the self-same form. A little girl, the very figure of her mother, had come after us; and thus I stood in the most curious scene, between the future and the past, as in a grove of oranges, where within a little circle, flowers and fruits are living, in successive stages of their growth, beside each other. The cousin went away to fetch us some refreshment; I gave the woman I had loved so much my hand, and said to her: 'I feel a true joy in seeing you again.' 'You are very good to say so,' answered she: 'but I also can assure you I feel the highest joy. How often have I wished to see you once more in my life! I have wished it in moments, which I regarded as my last.' She said this with a settled voice, without appearance of emotion, with that natural air which of old delighted me so much. The cousin returned; the father with her: and I leave you to conceive with what feelings I remained, and with what I came away."

CHAPTER VIII.

In his journey to the town, our friend was thinking of the lovely women whom he knew, or had heard of: their curious fortunes, which contained so little happiness, were present to him with a sad distinctness. "Ah!" cried he, "poor Mariana! What shall I yet learn of thee? And thou noble Amazon, glorious protecting spirit, to whom I owe so much, whom I everywhere expect to

meet, and nowhere see, in what mournful circumstances may I find thee, shouldst thou again appear before me!"

On his arrival in the town, there was not one of his acquaintances at home: he hastened to the theatre; he supposed they would be rehearsing. Here, however, all was still; the house seemed empty; one little door alone was open. Passing through it to the stage, he found Aurelia's ancient serving-maid, employed in sewing linen for a new decoration: there was barely light enough to let her work. Felix and Mignon were sitting by her on the floor: they had a book between them; and while Mignon read aloud, Felix was repeating all the words, as if he too knew his letters, as if he too could read.

The children started up and ran to him: he embraced them with the tenderest feelings, and brought them closer to the woman. "Art thou the person," said he to her, with an earnest voice, "from whom Aurelia received this child?" She looked up from her work, and turned her face to him; he saw her in full light; he started back in terror; it was old Barbara.

"Where is Mariana?" cried he. "Far from here," replied the crone.

"And Felix——?"

"Is the son of that unhappy, and too true and tender-hearted girl! May you never feel what you have made us suffer! May the treasure which I now deliver you, make you as happy as he made us wretched!"

She arose to go away: Wilhelm held her fast. "I mean not to escape you," said she; "let me fetch a paper that will make you glad and sorrowful."

She retired; and Wilhelm gazed upon the child with a painful joy: he durst not reckon him his own. "He is thine!" cried Mignon; "he is thine!" and pressed the child to Wilhelm's knee.

Barbara came back, and handed him a letter. "Here are Mariana's last words," said she.

"She is dead!" cried he.

"Dead," said the old woman. "I wish to spare you all reproaches."

Astonished and confounded, Wilhelm broke up the letter; but scarcely had he read the first words of it, when a bitter grief took hold of him; he let the letter fall; and sank upon a seat. Mignon hurried to him, trying to console him. In the mean time, Felix had picked up the letter; he teased his playmate, till she yielded, till she knelt beside him, and read it over. Felix repeated *the words*, and Wilhelm was compelled to hear them twice. "If *this sheet should* ever reach thee, then lament thy ill-starred

friend. Thy love has caused her death. The boy, whose birth I survive but a few days, is thine: I die faithful to thee, much as appearances may be against me: with thee I lost everything that bound me to life. I die content; for they have assured me that the child is healthy and will live. Listen to old Barbara; forgive her; farewell, and forget me not."

What a painful, and yet to his comfort, half-enigmatic letter! Its contents pierced through his heart, as the children, stuttering and stammering, pronounced and repeated them.

"There you have it now!" said the crone, not waiting till he had recovered. "Thank Heaven that having lost so true a love, you have still so fine a child remaining. Your grief will be unequalled, when you learn how the poor good girl stood faithful to you to the end; how miserable she became, and what she sacrificed for your sake."

"Let me drain the cup of sorrow and of joy at once!" cried Wilhelm. "Convince me, even persuade me that she was a good girl, that she deserved respect as well as love; then leave me to my grief for her irreparable loss."

"It is not yet time," said Barbara; "I have work to do, and I would not we were seen together. Let it be a secret that Felix is your son: I should have too much abuse to suffer from the company, for having formerly deceived them. Mignon will not betray us; she is good and close."

"I have known it long, and I said nothing," answered Mignon. "How is it possible?" cried Barbara. "Whence?" cried Wilhelm.

"The spirit told it me."

"Where? Where?"

"In the vault, when the old man drew his knife, it called to me: 'Bring his father,' and I thought it must be thou."

"*Who* called to thee?"

"I know not; in my heart, in my head, I was terrified; I trembled, I prayed, then it called, and I understood it."

Wilhelm pressed her to his heart; recommended Felix to her, and retired. He had not observed till then that she was grown much paler and thinner than when he left her. Madam Melina was the first acquaintance he met: she received him in the friendliest manner. "O, that you might find everything among us as you wished!" exclaimed she.

"I doubt it," answered Wilhelm; "I do not expect it. Confess that they have taken all their measures to dispense with me."

"Why would you go away?" replied his friend.

"We cannot soon enough convince ourselves," said he, "how very simply we may be dispensed with in the world. What im-

portant personages we conceive ourselves to be! We think that it is we alone who animate the circle we move in; that, in our absence, life, nourishment and breath will make a general pause: and alas! the void which occurs is scarcely remarked, so soon is it filled up again; nay it is often but the place, if not for something better, at least for something more agreeable."

"And the sorrows of our friends we are not to take into account?"

"For our friends, too, it is well, when they soon recover their composure, when they say each to himself: There where thou art, there where thou remainest, accomplish what thou canst; be busy, be courteous, and let the present scene delight thee."

On a narrower inquiry, he found what he had looked for; the opera had been set up, and was exclusively attracting the attention of the public. His parts had in the mean while been distributed between Horatio and Laertes; and both of them were in the habit of eliciting from the spectators far more liberal applause than he had ever been enabled to obtain.

Laertes entered, and Madam Melina cried: "Look you here at this lucky fellow: he is soon to be a capitalist, or Heaven knows what!" Wilhelm, in embracing him, discovered that his coat was superfine: the rest of his apparel was simple, but of the very best materials.

"Solve me the riddle!" cried our friend.

"You are still in time to learn," replied Laertes, "that my running to and fro is now about to be repaid; that a partner in a large commercial house is turning to advantage my acquirements from books or observation, and allowing me a share with him. I would give something, could I purchase back my confidence in women: there is a pretty niece in the house; and I see well enough that, if I pleased, I might soon be a made man."

"You have not heard," said Frau Melina, "that a marriage has already taken place among ourselves? Serlo is actually wedded to the fair Elmira: her father would not tolerate their secret correspondence."

They talked, in this manner, about many things that had occurred while he was absent: nor was it difficult for him to observe, that, according to the present temper and constitution of the company, his dismissal had already taken place.

He impatiently expected Barbara, who had appointed him to wait for her far in the night. She was to come when all were sleeping; she required as many preparations as if she had been the youngest maiden gliding in to her beloved. Meanwhile he *read, a hundred* times, the letter she had given him; read with

unspeakable delight the word *faithful* in the hand of his darling; with horror the announcement of her death, whose approaches she appeared to view unmoved.

Midnight was past, when something rustled at the half-open door, and Barbara came in with a little basket. "I am to tell you the story of our woes," said she; "and I must believe that you will sit unmoved at the recital; that you are waiting for me but to satisfy your curiosity; that you will now, as you did formerly, retire within your cold selfishness, while our hearts are breaking. But look you here! Thus, on that happy evening, did I bring you the bottle of champagne; thus did I place the three glasses on the table: and as you then began, with soft nursery tales, to cozen us and lull us asleep, so will I now with stern truths instruct you and keep you waking."

Wilhelm knew not what to say, when the old woman in fact let go the cork, and filled the three glasses to the brim.

"Drink!" cried she, having emptied at a draught her foaming glass. "Drink, ere the spirit of it pass! This third glass shall froth away untasted to the memory of my unhappy Mariana. How red were her lips, when she then drank your health! Ah, and now forever pale and cold!"

"Sibyl! Fury!" cried Wilhelm, springing up, and striking the table with his fist, "what evil spirit possesses thee and drives thee? For what dost thou take me, that thou thinkest the simplest narrative of Mariana's death and sorrows will not harrow me enough, but usest these hellish arts to sharpen my torment? If thy unsatiable greediness is such, that thou must revel at the funeral table, drink and speak! I have loathed thee from of old; and I cannot reckon Mariana guiltless while I even look upon thee, her companion."

"Softly, mein herr!" replied the crone; "you shall not ruffle me. Your debts to us are deep and dark: the railing of a debtor does not anger one. But you are right: the simplest narrative will punish you sufficiently. Hear then the struggle and the victory of Mariana striving to continue yours."

"Continue mine?" cried Wilhelm: "what fable dost thou mean to tell me?"

"Interrupt me not," said she; "hear me, and then give what belief you list: to me it is all one. Did you not, the last night you were with us, find a letter in the room and take it with you?"

"I found the letter *after* I had taken it with me: it was lying in the neckerchief, which, in the warmth of my love, I had seized and carried off."

"What did the sheet contain?"

"The expectation of an angry lover to be better treated on the next, than he had been on the preceding evening. And that you kept your word to him, I need not be told; for I saw him with my own eyes gliding from your house before daybreak."

"You may have seen him: but what occurred within; how sadly Mariana passed that night, how fretfully I passed it, you are yet to learn. I will be altogether candid; I will neither hide nor palliate the fact, that I persuaded Mariana to yield to the solicitations of a certain Norberg: it was with repugnance that she followed my advice, nay that she even heard it. He was rich; he seemed attached; I hoped he would be constant. Soon after, he was forced to go upon his journey, and Mariana became acquainted with you. What had I then to abide! What to hinder, what to undergo! 'O!' cried she often, 'hadst thou spared my youth, my innocence but four short weeks, I might have found a worthy object of my love; I had then been worthy of him, and love might have given, with a quiet conscience, what now I have sold against my will.' She entirely abandoned herself to her affection for you: I need not ask if you were happy. Over her understanding I had an unbounded power; for I knew the means of satisfying all her little inclinations: but over her heart I had no control; for she never sanctioned what I did for her, what I counselled her to do, when her heart said nay. It was only to irresistible necessity that she would yield: but ere long the necessity appeared to her extremely pressing. In the first period of her youth, she had never known want: by a complication of misfortunes her people lost their fortune; the poor girl had been used to have a number of conveniences; and upon her young spirit certain principles of honour had been stamped, which made her restless, without much helping her. She had not the smallest skill in worldly matters; she was innocent in the strictest meaning of the word. She had no idea that one could buy without paying: nothing frightened her more than being in debt; she always rather liked to give than take. This, and this alone, was what made it possible, that she could be constrained to give herself away, in order to get rid of various little debts which weighed upon her."

"And couldst not thou," cried Wilhelm in an angry tone, "have saved her?"

"O yes!" replied the beldame; "with hunger and need; with sorrow and privation: but for this I was not disposed."

"Abominable, base procuress! So thou hast sacrificed the hapless creature? Offered her up to thy throat, to thy insatiable maw?"

"*It were better* to compose yourself, and cease your reviling,"

said the dame. "If you will revile, go to your high noble houses: there you will meet with many a mother full of anxious cares to find out for some lovely heavenly maiden the most odious of men, provided he be the richest. See the poor creature shivering and faltering before her fate; and nowhere finding consolation, till some more experienced female lets her understand, that by marriage she acquires the right, in future, to dispose of her heart and person as she pleases."

"Peace!" cried Wilhelm: "dost thou think that one crime can be the excuse of another? To thy story, without farther observations!"

"Do you listen then, without blaming! Mariana became yours against my will. In this adventure at least I have nothing to reproach myself with. Norberg returned; he made haste to visit Mariana: she received him coldly and angrily; would not even admit him to a kiss. I employed all my art in apologising for her conduct; gave him to understand that her confessor had awakened her conscience; that so long as conscientious scruples lasted, one was bound to respect them. I at last so far succeeded that he went away; I promising to do my utmost for him. He was rich and rude; but there was a touch of goodness in him, and he loved Mariana without limit. He promised to be patient; and I laboured with the greatest ardour not to try him too far. With Mariana I had a stubborn contest: I persuaded her, nay I may call it forced her, by the threat of leaving her, to write to Norberg and invite him for the night. You came, and by chance picked up his answer in the neckerchief. Your presence broke my game. For scarcely were you gone, when she anew began her lamentation: she swore she would not be unfaithful to you; she was so passionate, so frantic, that I could not help sincerely pitying her. In the end, I promised, that for this night also, I would pacify her lover, and send him off, under some pretence or other. I entreated her to go to bed; but she did not seem to trust me; she kept on her clothes, and at last fell asleep, without undressing, agitated and exhausted with weeping as she was.

"Norberg came: representing in the blackest hues her conscientious agonies and her repentance, I endeavoured to retain him: he wished to see her, and I went into the room to prepare her; he followed me, and both of us at once came forward to her bed. She awoke; sprang wildly up, and tore herself from our arms: she conjured and begged, she entreated, threatened and declared she would not yield. She was improvident enough to let fall some words about the true state of her affections; which poor Norberg had to understand in a spiritual sense. At length he left

her, and she locked her door. I kept him long with me, and talked with him about her situation: I told him that she was with child; that, poor girl, she should be humoured. He was so delighted with his fatherhood, with his prospect of a boy, that he granted everything she wished; he promised rather to set out and travel for a time, than vex his dear, and injure her by these internal troubles. With such intentions, at an early hour he glided out; and if you, mein herr, stood sentry by our house, there was nothing wanting to your happiness, but to have looked into the bosom of your rival, whom you thought so favoured and so fortunate, and whose appearance drove you to despair."

"Art thou speaking truth?" said Wilhelm.

"True," said the crone, "as I still hope to drive you to despair.

"Yes, certainly you would despair, if I could rightly paint to you the following morning. How cheerfully did she awake; how kindly did she call me in; how warmly thank me, how cordially press me to her bosom! 'Now,' said she, stepping up to her mirror with a smile, 'can I again take pleasure in myself, and in my looks, since once more I am my own, am his, my one beloved friend's. How sweet is it to conquer! How I thank thee for taking charge of me; for having turned thy prudence and thy understanding, once, at least, to my advantage! Stand by me, and devise the means of making me entirely happy!'

"I assented, would not irritate her; I flattered her hopes, and she caressed me tenderly. If she retired but a moment from the window, I was made to stand and watch; for you, of course, would pass; for she at least would see you. Thus did we spend the restless day. At night, at the accustomed hour, we looked for you with certainty. I was already out waiting at the staircase; I grew weary, and came in to her again. With surprise I found her in her military dress: she looked cheerful and charming, beyond what I had ever seen her. 'Do I not deserve,' said she, 'to appear tonight in man's apparel? Have I not struggled bravely? My dearest shall see me as he saw me for the first time. I will press him as tenderly and with greater freedom to my heart than then; for am not I his much more than I was then, when a noble resolution had not freed me? But,' added she, after pausing for a little, 'I have not yet entirely won him; I must still risk the uttermost, in order to be worthy, to be certain of possessing him; I must disclose the whole to him, discover to him all my state, then leave it to himself to keep or to reject me. This scene I am preparing for my friend, preparing for myself: and were his feelings *capable of casting* me away, I should then belong again entirely to

myself; my punishment would bring me consolation, I would suffer all that fate could lay upon me.'

"With such purposes and hopes, mein herr, this lovely girl expected you: you came not. O! how shall I describe the state of watching and of hope? I see thee still before me, with what love, what heartfelt love, thou spokest of the man, whose cruelty thou hadst not yet experienced."

"Good, dear Barbara!" cried Wilhelm, springing up, and seizing the old woman by the hand, "we have had enough of mummery and preparation! Thy indifferent, thy calm, contented tone betrays thee. Give me back my Mariana! She is living, she is near at hand. Not in vain didst thou choose this late lonely hour to visit me; not in vain hast thou prepared me by thy most delicious narrative. Where is she? Where hast thou hidden her? I believe all, I will promise to believe all, so thou but show her to me, so thou give her to my arms. The shadow of her I have seen already: let me clasp her once more to my bosom. I will kneel before her, I will entreat forgiveness; I will congratulate her upon her victory over herself and thee; I will bring my Felix to her. Come! where hast thou concealed her? Leave *her*, leave me no longer in uncertainty! Thy object is attained. Where hast thou hidden her? Let me light thee with this candle, let me once more see her fair and kindly face!"

He had pulled old Barbara from her chair: she stared at him; tears started into her eyes, wild pangs of grief took hold of her. "What luckless error," cried she, "leaves you still a moment's hope? Yes, I have hidden her; but beneath the ground: neither the light of the sun, nor any social taper shall again illuminate her kindly face. Take the boy Felix to her grave, and say to him: 'There lies thy mother, whom thy father doomed unheard.' The heart of Mariana beats no longer with impatience to behold you; not in a neighbouring chamber is she waiting the conclusion of my narrative, or fable; the dark chamber has received her, to which no bridegroom follows, from which none comes to meet a lover."

She cast herself upon the floor beside a chair, and wept bitterly. Wilhelm now, for the first time, felt entirely convinced that Mariana was no more; his emotions it is easy to conceive. The old woman rose: "I have nothing more to tell you," cried she, and threw a packet on the table. "Here are some writings that will put your cruelty to shame: peruse these sheets with unwet eyes, if you can." She glided softly out. Our friend had not the heart to open the pocket-book that night: he had himself presented it to Mariana; he knew that she had carefully preserved in it every letter he had sent her. Next morning he prevailed

upon himself: he untied the ribbon; little notes came forward written with pencil in his own hand; and recalled to him every situation, from the first day of their graceful acquaintance to the last of their stern separation. In particular, it was not without acute anguish, that he read a small series of billets, which had been addressed to himself, and to which, as he saw from their tenor, Werner had refused admittance.

"No one of my letters has yet penetrated to thee; my entreaties, my prayers have not reached thee; was it thyself that gave these cruel orders? Shall I never see thee more? Yet again I attempt it: I entreat thee, come, O come! I ask not to retain thee, if I might but once more press thee to my heart."

"When I used to sit beside thee, holding thy hands, looking in thy eyes; and with the full heart of love and trust to call thee, 'Dear, dear good Wilhelm!' it would please thee so, that I had to repeat it over and over. I repeat it once again: 'Dear, dear good Wilhelm! Be good as thou wert; come, and leave me not to perish in my wretchedness.'"

"Thou regardest me as guilty: I am so; but not as thou thinkest. Come, let me have this single comfort to be altogether known to thee; let what will befall me afterwards."

"Not for my sake alone, for thy own too, I beg of thee to come. I feel the intolerable pains thou art suffering, whilst thou fliest from me. Come, that our separation may be less cruel! Perhaps I was never worthy of thee till this moment, when thou art repelling me to boundless woe."

"By all that is holy, by all that can touch a human heart, I call upon thee! It involves the safety of a soul, it involves a life, two lives, one of which must ever be dear to thee. This, too, thy suspicion will discredit: yet I will speak it in the hour of death: the child which I carry under my heart is thine. Since I began to love thee, no other man has even pressed my hand: O that thy love, that thy uprightness, had been the companions of my youth!"

"Thou wilt not hear me? I must even be silent. But these letters will not die; perhaps they will speak to thee, when the shroud is covering my lips, and the voice of thy repentance cannot reach my ear. Through my weary life, to the last moment, this will be my only comfort: that though I cannot call myself blameless, towards thee I am free from blame."

Wilhelm could proceed no farther: he resigned himself entirely to his sorrow; which became still more afflicting, when, Laertes entering, he was obliged to hide his feelings. Laertes showed a purse of ducats; and began to count and reckon them, assuring Wilhelm that there could be nothing finer in the world than for a man to feel himself in the way to wealth; that nothing then could trouble or detain him. Wilhelm bethought him of his dream, and smiled; but at the same time, he remembered with a shudder, that in his vision Mariana had forsaken him, to follow his departed father, and that both of them at last had moved about the garden, hovering in the air like spirits.

Laertes forced him from his meditations; he brought him to a coffee-house, where, immediately on Wilhelm's entrance, several persons gathered round him. They were men who had applauded his performance on the stage: they expressed their joy at meeting him; lamenting that, as they had heard, he meant to leave the theatre. They spoke so reasonably and kindly of himself and his acting, of his talent and their hopes from it, that Wilhelm, not without emotion, cried at last: "O how infinitely precious would such sympathy have been to me some months ago! How instructive, how encouraging! Never had I turned my mind so totally from the concerns of the stage, never had I gone so far as to despair of the public."

"So far as this," said an elderly man who now stept forward, "we should never go. The public is large; true judgment, true feeling, are not quite so rare as one believes; only the artist ought not to demand an unconditional approval of his work. Unconditional approval is always the least valuable; conditional you gentlemen are not content with. In life, as in art, I know well, a person must take counsel with himself when he purposes to do or to produce anything: but when it is produced or done, he must listen with attention to the voices of a number, and with a little practice, out of these many votes he will be able to collect a perfect judgment. The few, who could themselves pronounce one, for the most part hold their peace."

"This *they should* not do," said Wilhelm. "I have often heard

people, who themselves kept silence in regard to works of merit, complaining and lamenting that silence was kept."

"Today, then, we will speak aloud," cried a young man: "You must dine with us, and we will try to pay off a little of the debt we have owed to you, and sometimes also to our good Aurelia."

This invitation Wilhelm courteously declined: he went to Frau Melina, whom he wished to speak with on the subject of the children, as he meant to take them from her.

Old Barbara's secret was not too religiously observed by him. He betrayed himself so soon as he again beheld the lovely Felix. "O my child!" cried he; "My dear child!" He lifted him, and pressed him to his heart. "Father! what hast thou brought for me?" cried the child. Mignon looked at both, as if she meant to warn them not to blab.

"What new phenomenon is this?" said Frau Melina. They got the children sent away; and Wilhelm, thinking that he did not owe old Barbara the strictest secrecy, disclosed the whole affair to Frau Melina. She viewed him with a smile. "O! these credulous men!" exclaimed she. "If anything is lying in their path, it is so easy to impose it on them; while in other cases they will neither look to the right nor left, and can value nothing, which they have not previously impressed with the stamp of an arbitrary passion!" She sighed, against her will: if our friend had not been altogether blind, he must have noticed in her conduct an affection for him which had never been entirely subdued.

He now spoke with her about the children; how he purposed to keep Felix with him, and to place Mignon in the country. Madam Melina, though sorry at the thought of parting with them, said the plan was good, nay absolutely necessary. Felix was becoming wild with her; and Mignon seemed to need fresh air and other occupation; she was sickly, and was not yet recovering.

"Let it not mislead you," added Frau Melina, "that I have lightly hinted doubts about the boy's being really yours. The old woman, it is true, deserves but little confidence; yet a person who invents untruths for her advantage may likewise speak the truth when truths are profitable to her. Aurelia she had hoodwinked to believe that Felix was Lothario's son: and it is a property of us women that we cordially like the children of our lovers, though we do not know the mothers, or even hate them from the heart." Felix came jumping in; she pressed him to her with a tenderness which was not usual to her.

Wilhelm hastened home, and sent for Barbara; who, however, would not undertake to meet him till the twilight. He received *her angrily.* "There is nothing in the world more shameful," said

he, "than establishing oneself on lies and fables. Already thou hast done much mischief with them; and now when thy word could decide the fortune of my life, now must I stand dubious, not venturing to call the child my own, though to possess him without scruple, would form my highest happiness. I cannot look upon thee, scandalous creature, without hatred and contempt."

"Your conduct, if I speak with candour," said the old woman, "appears to me intolerable. Even if Felix were not yours, he is the fairest and the loveliest child in nature; one might purchase him at any price, to have him always near one. Is he not worthy your acceptance? Do not I deserve for my care, for the labour I have had with him, a little pension for the small remainder of my life? O, you gentlemen who know no want! It is well for you to talk of truth and honour: but how the miserable being whose smallest necessity is unprovided for, who sees in her perplexities no friend, no help, no counsel; how she is to press through the crowd of selfish men, and to starve in silence, you are seldom at the trouble to consider. Did you read Mariana's letters? They are the letters she wrote to you at that unhappy season. It was in vain that I attempted to approach you to deliver you these sheets: your savage brother-in-law had so begirt you, that craft and cunning were of no avail; and at last when he began to threaten me and Mariana with imprisonment, I had then to cease my efforts, and renounce all hope. Does not everything agree with what I told you? And does not Norberg's letter put the story altogether out of doubt?"

"What letter?" asked he.

"Did you not find it in the pocket-book?" said Barbara.

"I have not yet read all of them."

"Give me the pocket-book: on that paper everything depends. Norberg's luckless billet caused this sorrowful perplexity; another from his hand may loose the knots, so far as aught may still depend upon unravelling them." She took a letter from the book; Wilhelm recognised that odious writing; he constrained himself and read:

"Tell me, girl, how hast thou got such power over me? I would not have believed that a goddess herself could make a sighing lover of me. Instead of hastening towards me with open arms, thou shrankest back from me: one might have taken it for aversion. Is it fair that I should spend the night with old Barbara, sitting on a trunk, and but two doors between me and my pretty Mariana? It is too bad, I tell thee! I have promised to allow thee time to think; not to press thee unrelentingly; I could run mad at every wasted quarter of an hour. Have not I given thee

gifts according to my power? Dost thou still doubt of my love? What wilt thou have? Do but tell me: thou shalt want for nothing. Would the Devil had the priest that put such stuff into thy head! Why didst thou go to such a churl? There are plenty of them that allow young people somewhat. Enough! I tell thee things must alter: in two days I must have an answer; for I am to leave the town; and if thou become not kind and friendly to me, thou shalt never see me more. . . . ."

In this style, the letter spun itself to great length; turning, to Wilhelm's painful satisfaction, still about the same point; and testifying for the truth of the account which he had got from Barbara. A second letter clearly proved, that Mariana in the sequel also had maintained her purpose; and it was not without heartfelt grief that out of these and other papers Wilhelm learned the history of the unlucky girl to the very hour of her death.

Barbara had gradually tamed the rude Norberg, by announcing to him Mariana's death, and leaving him in the belief, that Felix was his son. Once or twice he had sent her money; which, however, she retained for herself, having talked Aurelia into taking charge of the child. But unhappily this secret source of riches did not long endure. Norberg by a life of riot had impaired his fortune; and by repeated love-affairs his heart was rendered callous to his supposed first-born.

Probable as all this seemed, beautifully as it all agreed, Wilhelm did not venture to give way to joy. He still appeared to dread a present coming from his evil Genius.

"Your jealous fears," said Barbara, who guessed his mood of mind, "time alone can cure. Look upon the child as a stranger one; take stricter heed of him on that account; observe his gifts, his temper, his capacities; and if you do not, by and by, discover in him the exact resemblance of yourself, your eyes must certainly be bad. Of this I can assure you, were I a man, no one should foist a child on me: but it is a happiness for women, that in these cases men are not so quick of sight."

These things over, Wilhelm and Barbara parted; he was to take Felix with him; she to carry Mignon to Theresa, and afterwards to live in any place she pleased, upon a small annuity which he engaged to settle on her.

He sent for Mignon, to prepare her for the new arrangement. "Master!" said she, "keep me with thee: it will do me good and do me ill."

He told her that, as she was now grown up, there should be something farther done for her instruction. "I am sufficiently *instructed*," answered she, "to love and grieve."

He directed her attention to her health, and showed that she required continuous care, and the direction of a good physician. "Why care for me," said she, "when there are so many things to care for?"

After he had laboured greatly to persuade her that he could not take her with him, that he would conduct her to a place where he might often see her, she appeared as if she had not heard a word of it. "Thou wishest not to have me with thee?" said she. "Perhaps it is better: send me to the old Harper; the poor man is lonely where he is."

Wilhelm tried to show her that the old man was in comfortable circumstances. "Every hour I long for him," replied the child.

"I did not see," said Wilhelm, "that thou wert so fond of him when he was living with us."

"I was frightened for him, when he was awake; I could not bear his eyes: but when he was asleep, I liked so well to sit by him! I used to chase the flies from him; I could not look at him enough. O! he has stood by me in fearful moments; none knows how much I owe him. Had I known the road, I should have run away to him already."

Wilhelm set the circumstances in detail before her; he said, that she had always been a reasonable child, and that on this occasion also she might do as she desired. "Reason is cruel," said she; "the heart is better; I will go as thou requirest, only leave me Felix."

After much discussion, her opinion was not altered; and Wilhelm at last resolved on giving Barbara both the children, and sending them together to Theresa. This was the easier for him, as he still feared to look upon the lovely Felix as his son. He would take him on his arm, and carry him about: the child delighted to be held before the glass; Wilhelm also liked, though unavowedly, to hold him there, and seek resemblances between their faces. If for a moment any striking similarity appeared between them, he would press the boy in his arms; and then at once affrighted by the thought that he might be mistaken, he would set him down, and let him run away. "O!" cried he, "if I were to appropriate this priceless treasure, and it were then to be snatched from me, I should be the most unhappy man on earth!"

The children had been sent away; and Wilhelm was about to take a formal leave of the theatre, when he felt that in reality he had already taken leave, and needed but to go. Mariana was no more; his two guardian spirits had departed, and his thoughts hied after them. The fair boy hovered like a beautiful uncertain vision in the eyes of his imagination: he saw him, at Theresa's

hand, running through the fields and woods, forming his mind and person, in the free air, beside a free and cheerful foster-mother. Theresa had become far dearer to him since he figured her in company with Felix. Even while sitting in the theatre, he thought of her with smiles; he was almost in her own case, the stage could now produce no more illusion in him.

Serlo and Melina were excessively polite to him, when they observed that he was making no pretensions to his former place. A portion of the public wished to see him act again: this he could not accede to; nor in the company did any one desire it, saving Frau Melina.

Of this friend he now took leave; he was moved at parting with her; he exclaimed: "Why do we presume to promise anything depending on an unknown future! The most slight engagement we have not power to keep; far less a purpose of importance. I feel ashamed in recollecting what I promised to you all, in that unhappy night, when we were lying plundered, sick and wounded, crammed into a miserable tavern. How did misfortune elevate my courage; what a treasure did I think I had found in my good wishes! And of all this not a jot has taken effect! I leave you as your debtor: and my comfort is, that our people prized my promise at its actual worth, and never more took notice of it."

"Be not unjust to yourself," said Frau Melina: "if no one acknowledges what you have done for us, I at least will not forget it. Our whole condition had been different, if you had not been with us. But it is with our purposes as with our wishes. They seem no longer what they were, when they have been accomplished, been fulfilled; and we think we have done, have wished for nothing."

"You shall not, by your friendly statement," answered Wilhelm, "put my conscience to peace. I shall always look upon myself as in your debt."

"Nay, perhaps you are so," said Madam Melina; "but not in the manner you suppose. We reckon it a shame to fail in the fulfilment of a promise we have uttered with the voice. O my friend, a worthy person by his very presence promises us much! The confidence which he elicits, the inclination he inspires, the hopes which he awakens are unbounded: he is, and he continues, in our debt, although he does not know it. Fare you well! If our external circumstances have been happily repaired by your direction, there is a void produced by your departure, in my mind, which will not be so easily filled up again."

Before leaving the city, Wilhelm wrote a copious sheet to Wer-

ner. He had before exchanged some letters; but, not being able to agree, they had at length ceased to write. Now, however, Wilhelm had again approximated to his brother; he was just about to do what Werner had so earnestly desired. He could say: 'I am abandoning the stage; I mean to join myself with men whose intercourse, in every sense, must lead me to a sure and suitable activity.' He inquired about his property: and it now seemed strange to him, that he had never for so long a time disturbed himself about it. He knew not that it is the manner of all persons who attach importance to their inward cultivation, altogether to neglect their outward circumstances. This had been Wilhelm's case: he now for the first time seemed to notice, that to work effectively, he stood in need of outward means. He entered on his journey, this time, in a temper altogether different from that of last; the prospects he had in view were charming; he hoped to meet with something cheerful by the way.

CHAPTER IX.

On returning to Lothario's Castle, Wilhelm found that changes had occurred. Jarno met him with the tidings, that Lothario's uncle being dead, the Baron had himself set out to take possession of the heritage. "You come in time," said he, "to help the Abbé and me. Lothario has commissioned us to purchase some extensive properties of land in this quarter: he has long contemplated the bargain, and we have now got cash and credit just in season. The only point which made us hesitate, was, that a distant trading house had also views upon the same estates; at length we have determined to make common cause with it, as otherwise we might outbid each other without need or reason. The trader seems to be a prudent man. At present we are making estimates and calculations: we must also settle economically how the lands are to be shared, so that each of us may have a fine estate." The papers were submitted to our friend; the fields, meadows, houses, were inspected; and though Jarno and the Abbé seemed to understand the matter fully, Wilhelm could not help desiring that Theresa had been with them.

In these labours several days were spent, and Wilhelm had scarcely time to tell his friends of his adventures and his dubious fatherhood. This incident, to him so interesting, they treated with indifference and levity.

He had noticed, that they frequently in confidential conversation, while at table or in walks, would suddenly stop short, and

give their words another application, thereby showing, at least, that they had on the anvil many things which were concealed from him. He bethought him of what Lydia had said; and he put the greater faith in it, as one entire division of the Castle had always been inaccessible to him. The way to certain galleries, particularly to the ancient tower, with which externally he was so well acquainted, he had often sought, and hitherto in vain.

One evening Jarno said to him: "We can now consider you as ours, with such security, that it were unjust if we did not introduce you deeper into our mysteries. It is right that a man, when he first enters upon life, should think highly of himself, should determine to attain many eminent distinctions, should endeavour to make all things possible; but when his education has proceeded to a certain pitch, it is advantageous for him that he learn to lose himself among a mass of men, that he learn to live for the sake of others, and to forget himself in an activity prescribed by duty. It is then that he first becomes acquainted with himself; for it is conduct alone that compares us with others. You shall soon see what a curious little world is at your very hand, and how well you are known in it. Tomorrow morning before sunrise be dressed and ready."

Jarno came at the appointed hour: he led our friend through certain known and unknown chambers of the Castle, then through several galleries; till at last they reached a large old door, strongly framed with iron. Jarno knocked; the door went up a little, so as to admit one person. Jarno introduced our friend, and did not follow him. Wilhelm found himself in an obscure and narrow stand: all was dark round him: and when he tried to go a step forward, he found himself hemmed in. A voice not altogether strange to him cried: "Enter!" and he now discovered that the sides of the place where he was were merely hung with tapestry, through which a feeble light glimmered into him. "Enter!" cried the voice again: he raised the tapestry and entered.

The hall, in which he now stood, appeared to have at one time been a chapel; instead of the altar he observed a large table raised some steps above the floor, and covered with a green cloth hanging over it. On the top of this, a drawn curtain seemed as if it hid a picture; on the sides were spaces beautifully worked, and covered in with fine wire-netting, like the shelves of a library; only here, instead of books, a multitude of rolls had been inserted. Nobody was in the hall; the rising sun shone through the window, right on Wilhelm, and kindly saluted him as he came in.

"Be seated!" cried a voice, which seemed to issue from the *altar.* Wilhelm placed himself in a small arm-chair, which stood

against the tapestry where he had entered. There was no seat but this in the room; Wilhelm had to be content with it, though the morning radiance dazzled him; the chair stood fast, he could only keep his hand before his eyes.

But now the curtain, which hung down above the altar, went asunder with a gentle rustling; and showed, within a picture-frame, a dark empty aperture. A man stept forward at it, in a common dress; saluted the astonished looker-on, and said to him: "Do you not recognise me? Among the many things which you would like to know, do you feel no curiosity to learn where your grandfather's collection of pictures and statues are at present? Have you forgot the painting which you once so much delighted in? Where, think you, is the sick king's son now languishing?" Wilhelm, without difficulty, recognised the stranger, whom, in that important night, he had conversed with at the inn. "Perhaps," continued his interrogator, "we should now be less at variance in regard to Destiny and Character."

Wilhelm was about to answer, when the curtain quickly flew together. "Strange!" said Wilhelm to himself: "Can chance occurrences have a connexion? Is what we call Destiny but Chance? Where *is* my grandfather's collection; and why am I remembered of it in these solemn moments?"

He had not leisure to pursue his thoughts: the curtain once more parted; and a person stood before him, whom he instantly perceived to be the country clergyman, that had attended him and his companions on that pleasure sail of theirs. He had a resemblance to the Abbé, though he seemed to be a different person. With a cheerful countenance, in a tone of dignity, he said: "To guard from error, is not the instructor's duty; but to lead the erring pupil; nay, to let him quaff his error in deep satiating draughts, this is the instructor's wisdom. He who only tastes his error, will long dwell with it, will take delight in it as in a singular felicity: while he who drains it to the dregs will, if he be not crazy, find it out." The curtain closed again; and Wilhelm had a little time to think. "What error can he mean," said he within himself, "but the error which has clung to me through my whole life; that I sought for cultivation where it was not to be found; that I fancied I could form a talent in me, while without the smallest gift for it."

The curtain dashed asunder faster than before; an officer advanced, and said in passing: "Learn to know the men who may be trusted!" The curtain closed; and Wilhelm did not long consider, till he found this officer to be the one who had embraced him in the Count's park, and had caused his taking Jarno for a

crimp. How that stranger had come hither, who he was, were riddles to our friend. "If so many men," cried he, "took interest in thee, know thy way of life, and how it should be carried on, why did they not conduct thee with greater strictness, with greater seriousness? Why did they favour thy silly sports, instead of drawing thee away from them?"

"Dispute not with us!" cried a voice: "Thou art saved, thou art on the way to the goal. None of thy follies wilt thou repent; none wilt thou wish to repeat; no luckier destiny can be allotted to a man." The curtain went asunder; and in full armour stood the old King of Denmark in the space. "I am thy father's spirit," said the figure, "and I depart in comfort, since my wishes for thee are accomplished, in a higher sense than I myself contemplated. Steep regions cannot be surmounted save by winding paths; on the plain, straight roads conduct from place to place. Farewell, and think of me, when thou enjoyest what I have provided for thee."

Wilhelm was exceedingly amazed and struck: he thought it was his father's voice; and yet in truth it was not: the present and the past alike confounded and perplexed him.

He had not meditated long, when the Abbé came to view, and placed himself behind the green table. "Come hither!" cried he to his marvelling friend. He went, and mounted up the steps. On the green cloth lay a little roll. "Here is your indenture," said the Abbé: "take it to heart; it is of weighty import." Wilhelm lifted, opened it, and read:

INDENTURE.

Art is long, life short, judgment difficult, opportunity transient. To act is easy, to think is hard; to act according to our thought is troublesome. Every beginning is cheerful; the threshold is the place of expectation. The boy stands astonished, his impressions guide him; he learns sportfully, seriousness comes on him by surprise. Imitation is born with us; what should be imitated is not easy to discover. The excellent is rarely found, more rarely valued. The height charms us, the steps to it do not: with the summit in our eye, we love to walk along the plain. It is but a part of art that can be taught; the artist needs it all. Who knows it half, speaks much, and is always wrong; who knows it wholly, inclines to act, and speaks seldom or late. The former have no secrets and no force: the instruction they can give is like baked bread, savoury and satisfying for a single day; but flour cannot be sown and seed-corn ought not to be ground. Words are good, but *they are* not the best. The best is not to be explained by words.

The spirit in which we act is the highest matter. Action can be understood and again represented by the spirit alone. No one knows what he is doing, while he acts aright; but of what is wrong we are always conscious. Whoever works with symbols only, is a pedant, a hypocrite, or a bungler. There are many such, and they like to be together. Their babbling detains the scholar: their obstinate mediocrity vexes even the best. The instruction which the true artist gives us, opens the mind; for where words fail him, deeds speak. The true scholar learns from the known to unfold the unknown, and approaches more and more to being a master.

"Enough!" cried the Abbé; "the rest in due time. Now, look round you among these cases."

Wilhelm went, and read the titles of the rolls. With astonishment, he found *Lothario's Apprenticeship*, *Jarno's Apprenticeship*, and own *Apprenticeship* placed there, with many others whose names his he did not know.

"May I hope to cast a look into these rolls?"

"In this chamber there is now nothing hid from you."

"May I put a question?"

"Without scruple; and you may expect a positive reply, if it concerns a matter which is nearest your heart, and ought to be so."

"Good then! Ye marvellous sages, whose sight has pierced so many secrets, can you tell me whether Felix is in truth my son?"

"Hail to you for this question!" cried the Abbé, clapping hands for joy. "Felix is your son! By the holiest that lies hid among us, I swear to you, Felix is your son; nor, in our opinion, was the mother that is gone unworthy of you. Receive the lovely child from our hands; turn round, and venture to be happy."

Wilhelm heard a noise behind him: he turned round, and saw a child's face peeping archly through the tapestry at the end of the room; it was Felix. The boy playfully hid himself, so soon as he was noticed. "Come forward!" cried the Abbé; he came running; his father rushed towards him, took him in his arms, and pressed him to his heart. "Yes! I feel it," cried he, "thou art mine! What a gift of Heaven have I to thank my friends for! Whence, or how comest thou, my child, at this important moment?"

"Ask not," said the Abbé. "Hail to thee, young man! Thy Apprenticeship is done; Nature has pronounced thee free."

BOOK VIII.

CHAPTER I.

FELIX skipped into the garden; Wilhelm followed him with rapture: a lovely morning was displaying everything with fresh charms; our friend enjoyed the most delightful moment. Felix was new in the free and lordly world; nor did his father know much more than he about the objects, concerning which the little creature was repeatedly and unweariedly inquiring. At last they joined the gardener, who had to tell them the names and uses of a multitude of plants. Wilhelm looked on Nature as with unscaled eyes; the child's new-fangled curiosity first made him sensible how weak an interest he himself had taken in external things, how small his actual knowledge was. Not till this day, the happiest of his life, did his own cultivation seem to have commenced: he felt the necessity of learning, being called upon to teach.

Jarno and the Abbé did not show themselves again till evening, when they brought a guest along with them. Wilhelm viewed the stranger with amazement; he could scarce believe his eyes: it was Werner; who, likewise, for a moment, hesitated in his recognition. They embraced each other tenderly; neither of them could conceal that he thought the other greatly altered. Werner declared that his friend was taller, stronger, straighter; that he had become more polished in his looks and carriage. "Something of his old true-heartedness, I miss, however," added he. "That too will soon appear again," said Wilhelm, "when we have recovered from our first astonishment."

The impression Werner made upon his friend was by no means so favourable. The honest man seemed rather to have retrograded than advanced. He was much leaner than of old; his peaked face appeared to have grown sharper, his nose longer; brow and crown had lost their hair; the voice, clear, eager, shrill, the hollow breast and stooping shoulders, the sallow cheeks, announced indubitably that a melancholic drudge was there.

Wilhelm was discreet enough to speak but sparingly of these great changes; while the other, on the contrary, gave free course to his friendly joy. "In truth," cried he, "if thou hast spent thy time badly, and, as I suppose, gained nothing, it must be owned thou art grown a piece of manhood such as cannot fail to turn to somewhat. Do not waste and squander me this too again; with such a figure thou shalt buy some rich and beautiful heiress." "I see," said Wilhelm, smiling, "thou wilt not belie thy character. Scarcely hast thou found thy brother after long absence, when thou lookest on him as a piece of goods, a thing to speculate on, and make profit by."

Jarno and the Abbé did not seem at all astonished at this recognition; they allowed the two to expatiate on the past and present as they pleased. Werner walked round and round his friend; turned him to this side and to that; so as almost to embarrass him. "No!" cried he, "such a thing as this I never met with, and yet I know that I am not mistaken. Thy eyes are deeper, thy brow is broader; thy nose has grown finer, thy mouth more lovely. Do but look at him, how he stands; how it all suits and fits together! Well, idling is the way to grow. But for me, poor devil," said he, looking at himself in the glass, "if I had not all this while been making store of money, it were over with me altogether."

Werner had got Wilhelm's last letter; the distant trading house, in common with which Lothario meant to purchase the estates, was theirs. On that business Werner had come hither, not dreaming that he should meet with Wilhelm on the way. The Baron's lawyer came; the papers were produced; Werner reckoned the conditions reasonable. "If you mean well," said he, "as you seem to do, with this young man, you will of yourselves take care that our part be not abridged: it shall be at my friend's option whether he will take the land, and lay out a portion of his fortune on it." Jarno and the Abbé protested that they did not need this admonition. Scarcely had the business been discussed in general terms, when Werner signified a longing for a game at ombre; to which, in consequence, Jarno and the Abbé set themselves along with him. He was now grown so accustomed to it, that he could not pass the evening without cards.

The two friends, after supper, being left alone, began to talk, and question one another very keenly, touching everything they wished to have communicated. Wilhelm spoke in high terms of his situation, of his happiness in being received among such men. Werner shook his head and said: "Well, I see, we should believe nothing that we do not see with our eyes. More than one obliging

friend assured me thou wert living with a wild young nobleman, wert supplying him with actresses, helping him to waste his money; that, by thy means, he had quarrelled with every one of his relations." "For my own sake, and the sake of these worthy gentlemen, I should be vexed at this," said Wilhelm, "had not my theatrical experience made me tolerant to every sort of calumny. How can men judge rightly of our actions, which appear but singly or in fragments to them: of which they see the smallest portion; while good and bad takes place in secret, and for most part nothing comes to light but an indifferent show? Are not the actors and actresses in a play set up on boards before them; lamps are lit on every side; the whole transaction is comprised within three hours; yet scarcely one of them knows rightly what to make of it."

Our friend proceeded to inquire about his family, his young comrades, his native town. Werner told, with great haste, of changes that had taken place, of changes that were still in progress. "The women in our house," said he, "are satisfied and happy; we are never short of money. One half of their time they spend in dressing; the other in showing themselves when dressed. They are as domestic as a reasonable man could wish. My boys are growing up to prudent youths. I already, as in vision, see them sitting, writing, reckoning, running, trading, trucking: each of them, as soon as possible, shall have a business of his own. As to what concerns our fortune, thou wilt be contented with the state of it. When we have got these lands in order, thou must come directly home with me; for it now appears as if thou too couldst mingle with some skill in worldly undertakings. Thanks to thy new friends, who have set thee on the proper path. I am certainly a fool: I never knew till now how well I liked thee, now when I cannot gape and gaze at thee enough, so well and handsome thou lookest. That is in truth another form than the portrait which was sent thy sister; which occasioned such disputes at home. Both mother and daughter thought young master very handsome indeed, with his slack collar, half-open breast, large ruff, sleek pendent hair, round hat, short waistcoat, and wide pantaloons; while I, on the other hand, maintained that the costume was scarce two finger-breadths from that of Harlequin. But now thou lookest like a man; only the cue is wanting, in which I beg of thee to bind thy hair; else some time or other, they will seize thee as a Jew, and demand toll and tribute of thee."

Felix in the mean time had come into the room; and as they did not mind him, he had laid himself upon the sofa, and was fallen asleep. "What urchin is this?" said Werner. Wilhelm at

that moment had not the heart to tell the truth; nor did he wish to lay a still ambiguous narrative before a man, who was by nature anything but credulous.

The whole party now proceeded to the lands, to view them, and conclude the bargain. Wilhelm would not part with Felix from his side; for the boy's sake, he rejoiced exceedingly in the intended purchase. The longing of the child for cherries and berries, the season for which was at hand, brought to his mind the days of his own youth, and the manifold duties of a father, to prepare, to procure, and to maintain for his family a constant series of enjoyments. With what interest he viewed the nurseries and the buildings! How zealously he contemplated repairing what had been neglected, restoring what had fallen! He no longer looked upon the world with the eyes of a bird of passage: an edifice he did not now consider as a grove that is hastily put together, and that withers ere one leaves it. Everything that he proposed commencing was to be completed for his boy; everything that he erected was to last for several generations. In this sense, his apprenticeship was ended: with the feeling of a father, he had acquired all the virtues of a citizen. He felt this, and nothing could exceed his joy. "O needless strictness of morality!" exclaimed he, "while Nature in her own kindly manner trains us to all that we require to be. O strange demands of civil society, which first perplexes and misleads us, then asks of us more than Nature herself! Woe to every sort of culture which destroys the most effectual means of all true culture, and directs us to the end, instead of rendering us happy on the way!"

Much as he had already seen in his life, it seemed as if the observation of the child afforded him his first clear view of human nature. The theatre, the world had appeared before him, only as a multitude of thrown dice, every one of which upon its upper surface indicates a greater or a smaller value; and which, when reckoned up together, make a sum. But here in the person of the boy, as we might say, a single die was laid before him, on the many sides of which the worth and worthlessness of man's nature were legibly engraved.

The child's desire to have distinctions made in his ideas grew stronger every day. Having learned that things had names, he wished to hear the name of everything: supposing that there could be nothing which his father did not know, he often teased him with his questions, and caused him to inquire concerning objects, which but for this he would have passed without notice. Our innate tendency to pry into the origin and end of things was likewise soon developed in the boy. When he asked whence

came the wind, and whither went the flame, his father for the first time truly felt the limitation of his own powers; and wished to understand how far man may venture with his thoughts, and what things he may hope ever to give account of to himself or others. The anger of the child, when he saw injustice done to any living thing, was extremely grateful to the father, as the symptom of a generous heart. Felix once struck fiercely at the cook for cutting up some pigeons. The fine impression this produced on Wilhelm was, indeed, ere long disturbed, when he found the boy unmercifully tearing sparrows in pieces, and beating frogs to death. This trait reminded him of many men, who appear so scrupulously just, when without passion, and witnessing the proceedings of other men.

The pleasant feeling, that the boy was producing so fine and wholesome an influence on his being, was in a short time troubled for a moment, when our friend observed that in truth the boy was educating him more than he the boy. The child's conduct he was not qualified to correct: its mind he could not guide in any path but a spontaneous one. The evil habits which Aurelia had so violently striven against, had all, as it seemed, on her death, assumed their ancient privileges. Felix still never shut the door behind him, he still would not eat from a plate; and no greater pleasure could befall him than when he happened to be overlooked, and could take his bit immediately from the dish, or let the full glass stand, and drink out of the bottle. He delighted also very much when he could set himself in a corner with a book, and say with a serious air: "I must study this scholar stuff!" though he neither knew his letters nor would learn them.

Thus, when Wilhelm thought how little he had done for Felix, how little he was capable of doing, there arose at times a restlessness within him, which appeared to counterbalance all his happiness. "Are we men, then," said he, "so selfishly formed that we cannot possibly take proper charge of any one without us? Am I not acting with the boy exactly as I did with Mignon? I drew the dear child towards me; her presence gave me pleasure; yet I cruelly neglected her. What did I do for her education, which she longed for with such earnestness? Nothing! I left her to herself, and to all the accidents to which in a society of coarse people she could be exposed. And now for this boy, who seemed so interesting before he could be precious to thee, has thy heart ever bid thee do the smallest service to him? It is time that thou shouldst cease to waste thy own years and those of others: awake, and think what thou shouldst do for thyself, and for this good being, *whom* love and nature have so firmly bound to thee."

This soliloquy was but an introduction to admit that he had already thought, and cared, and tried, and chosen: he could delay no longer to confess it. After sorrow, often and in vain repeated, for the loss of Mariana, he distinctly felt that he must seek a mother for the boy; and also that he could not find one equal to Theresa. With this gifted lady he was thoroughly acquainted. Such a spouse and helpmate seemed the only one to trust oneself to, in such circumstances. Her generous affection for Lothario did not make him hesitate. By a singular destiny, they two had been forever parted; Theresa looked upon herself as free; she had talked of marrying, with indifference indeed, but as of a matter understood.

After long deliberation, he determined on communicating to her everything he knew about himself. She was to be made acquainted with him, as he already was with her. He accordingly began to take a survey of his history: but it seemed to him so empty of events, and in general so little to his credit, that he more than once was on the point of giving up his purpose. At last, however, he resolved on asking Jarno for the Roll of his Apprenticeship, which he had noticed lying in the Tower: Jarno said it was the very time for that, and Wilhelm consequently got it.

It is a feeling of awe and fear, which seizes on a man of noble mind, when conscious that his character is just about to be exhibited before him. Every transition is a crisis; and a crisis presupposes sickness. With what reluctance do we look into the glass after rising from a sick-bed! The recovery we feel: the effects of the past disease are all we see. Wilhelm had, however, been sufficiently prepared; events had already spoken loudly to him, and his friends had not spared him. If he opened the roll of parchment with some hurry, he grew calmer and calmer the farther he read. He found his life delineated with large sharp strokes; neither unconnected incidents, nor narrow sentiments perplexed his view; the most bland and general reflections taught without shaming him. For the first time, his own figure was presented to him; not indeed, as in a mirror, a second self; but as in a portrait, another self: we do not, it is true, recognise ourselves in every feature; but we are delighted that a thinking spirit has so understood us, that such gifts have been employed in representing us, that an image of what we were exists and may endure when we ourselves are gone.

Wilhelm next employed himself in setting forth the history of his life, for the perusal of Theresa; all the circumstances of it were recalled to memory by what he had been reading; he almost felt ashamed that, to her great virtues, he had nothing to oppose

which indicated a judicious activity. He had been minute in his written narrative; he was brief in the letter which he sent along with it. He solicited her friendship, her love, if it were possible; he offered her his hand, and entreated for a quick decision.

After some internal contest whether it was proper to impart this weighty business to his friends, to Jarno and the Abbé, he determined not to do so. His resolution was so firm, the business was of such importance, that he could not have submitted it to the decision of the wisest and best of men. He was even cautious enough to carry his letter with his own hand to the nearest post. From his parchment roll it appeared with certainty enough that, in very many actions of his life, in which he had conceived himself to be proceeding freely and in secret, he had been observed, nay guided; and perhaps the thought of this had given him an unpleasant feeling; and he wished at least in speaking to Theresa's heart, to speak purely from the heart; to owe his fate to her decision and determination only. Hence in this solemn point he scrupled not to give his overseers the slip.

CHAPTER II.

Scarcely was the letter gone, when Lothario returned. Every one was gladdened at the prospect of so speedily concluding the important business which they had in hand: Wilhelm waited with anxiety to see how all these many threads were to be loosed, or tied anew, and how his own future state was to be settled. Lothario gave a kindly salutation to them all: he was quite recovered and serene; he had the air of one who knows what he should do, and who finds no hindrance in the way of doing it.

His cordial greeting Wilhelm could scarcely repay. "This," he had to own within himself, "is the friend, the lover, bridegroom of Theresa; in his stead thou art presuming to intrude. Dost thou think it possible for thee to banish, to obliterate an impression such as this?" Had the letter not been sent away, perhaps he would not have ventured sending it at all. But happily the die was cast: it might be, Theresa had already taken up her resolution, and only distance shrouded with its veil a happy termination. The winning or the losing must soon be decided. By such considerations, he endeavoured to compose himself; and yet the movements of his heart were almost feverish. He could give but little attention to the weighty business, on which in some *degree the fate* of his whole property depended. In passionate

moments, how trivial do we reckon all that is about us, all that belongs to us!

Happily for him, Lothario treated the affair with magnanimity, and Werner with an air of ease. The latter, in his violent desire of gain, experienced a lively pleasure in contemplating the fine estate which was to be his friend's. Lothario, for his part, seemed to be revolving very different thoughts. "I cannot take such pleasure in the acquirement of property," said he, "as in the justness of it."

"And, in the name of Heaven," cried Werner, "is not this of ours acquired justly?"

"Not altogether," said Lothario.

"Are we not giving hard cash for it?"

"Doubtless," replied Lothario; "and most probably you will consider what I am now hinting at as nothing but a whim. No property appears to me quite just, quite free of flaw, except it contribute to the state its due proportion."

"How!" said Werner: "You would rather that our lands, which we have purchased free from burden, had been taxable?"

"Yes," replied Lothario, "in a suitable degree. It is only by this equality with every other kind of property, that our possession of it can be made secure. In these new times, when so many old ideas are tottering, what is the grand reason why the peasant reckons the possession of the noble less equitable than his own? Simply that the noble is not burdened, and lies a burden on him."

"But how would the interest of our capital agree with that?" said Werner.

"Perfectly well," returned the other; "if the state, for a regular and fair contribution, would relieve us from the feudal hocus-pocus; would allow us to proceed with our lands according to our pleasure: so that we were not compelled to retain such masses of them undivided, so that we might part them more equally among our children, whom we might thus introduce to vigorous and free activity; instead of leaving them the poor inheritance of these our limited and limiting privileges, to enjoy which we must ever be invoking the ghosts of our forefathers. How much happier were men and women in our rank of life, if they might with unforbidden eyes look round them, and elevate by their selection, here a worthy maiden, there a worthy youth, regarding nothing farther than their own ideas of happiness in marriage! The state would have more, perhaps better citizens, and would not so often be distressed for want of heads and hands."

"I can assure you honestly," said Werner, "I never in my life

thought about the state: my taxes, tolls and tributes I have paid because it was the custom."

"Still, however," said Lothario, "I hope to make a worthy patriot of you. As he alone is a good father, who at table serves his children first, so is he alone a good citizen, who, before all other outlays, discharges what he owes the state."

By such general reflections their special business was accelerated rather than retarded. It was nearly over, when Lothario said to Wilhelm: "I must send you to a place where you are needed more than here. My sister bids me beg of you to go to her as soon as possible. Poor Mignon seems to be decaying more and more: and it is thought your presence might allay the malady. Besides telling me in person, my sister has despatched this note after me: so that you perceive she reckons it a pressing case." Lothario handed him a billet. Wilhelm, who had listened in extreme perplexity, at once discovered in these hasty pencil-strokes the hand of the Countess, and knew not what to answer.

"Take Felix with you," said Lothario: "the little ones will cheer each other. You must be upon the road tomorrow morning early; my sister's coach, in which my people travelled hither, is still here: I will give you horses half the way; the rest you post. A prosperous journey to you! Make many compliments from me, when you arrive; tell my sister I shall soon be back, and that she must prepare for guests. Our granduncle's friend, the Marchese Cipriani, is on his way to visit us: he hoped to find the old man still in life; they meant to entertain each other with their common love of art, and the recollection of their early intimacy. The Marchese, much younger than my uncle, owed to him the greater part of his accomplishments. We must exert all our endeavours to fill up in some measure the void which is awaiting him; and a larger party is the readiest means."

Lothario went with the Abbé to his chamber; Jarno had ridden off before; Wilhelm hastened to his room. There was none to whom he could unbosom his distress; none by whose assistance he could turn aside the project, which he viewed with so much fear. The little servant came, requesting him to pack: they were to put the luggage on tonight, meaning to set out by daybreak. Wilhelm knew not what to do; at length he cried: "Well, I shall leave this house at any rate; on the road I may consider what is to be done; at all events I will halt in the middle of my journey; I can send a message hither, I can write what I recoil from saying; then let come of it what will." In spite of this resolution, he spent a sleepless night: a look on Felix resting so serenely *was the only* thing that gave him any solace. "O! who knows,"

cried he, "what trials are before me; who knows how sharply bygone errors will yet punish me; how often good and reasonable projects for the future shall miscarry! But this treasure, which I call my own, continue it to me, thou exorable or inexorable Fate! Were it possible that this best part of myself were taken from me, that this heart could be torn from my heart, then farewell sense and understanding; farewell all care and foresight; vanish thou tendency to perseverance! All that distinguishes us from the beasts, pass away! And if it is not lawful for a man to end his heavy days by the act of his own hand, may speedy madness banish consciousness, before Death, which destroys it forever, shall bring on his own long night."

He seized the boy in his arms, kissed him, clasped him and wetted him with plenteous tears.

The child awoke: his clear eye, his friendly look, touched his father to the inmost heart. "What a scene awaits me," cried he, "when I shall present thee to the beautiful unhappy Countess, when she shall press thee to her bosom, which thy father has so deeply injured! Ought I not to fear that she will push thee from her with a cry, when the touch of thee renews her real or fancied pain!" The coachman did not leave him time for farther thought or hesitation; but forced him into the carriage before day. Wilhelm wrapped his Felix well; the morning was cold but clear; the child, for the first time in his life, saw the sun rise. His astonishment at the first fiery glance of the luminary, at the growing power of the light, his pleasure and his strange remarks rejoiced the father, and afforded him a glimpse into the heart of the boy, before which, as over a clear and silent sea, the sun was mounting and hovering.

In a little town the coachman halted; unyoked his horses, and rode back. Wilhelm took possession of a room, and asked himself seriously whether he would stay or proceed. Thus irresolute he ventured to take out the little note, which hitherto he had never had the heart to look on: it contained the following words: "Send thy young friend very soon; Mignon for the last two days has been growing rather worse. Sad as the occasion is, I shall be happy to get acquainted with him."

The concluding words Wilhelm, at the first glance, had not seen. He was terrified on reading them, and instantly determined not to go. "How?" cried he, "Lothario, knowing what occurred between us, has not told her who I am? She is not, with a settled mind, expecting an acquaintance, whom she would rather not see: she expects a stranger; and I enter! I see her shudder and start back, I see her blush! No, it is impossible for me to encounter

such a scene!" Just then his horses were led out and yoked: Wilhelm was determined to take off his luggage and remain. He felt extremely agitated. Hearing the maid running up-stairs to tell him, as he thought, that all was ready, he began on the spur of the instant to devise some pretext for continuing; his eyes were fixed, without attention, on the letter which he still held in his hand. "In the name of Heaven!" cried he, "what is this? It is not the hand of the Countess, it is the hand of the Amazon!"

The maid came in; requested him to walk down, and took Felix with her. "Is it possible," exclaimed he, "is it true? What shall I do? Remain, and wait, and certify myself? Or hasten, hasten and rush into an explanation? Thou art on the way to her, and thou canst loiter? This night thou mayest see her, and thou wilt voluntarily lock thyself in prison? It is her hand; yes, it is hers! This hand calls thee; her coach is yoked to lead thee to her! Now the riddle is explained: Lothario has two sisters; my relation to the one he knows; how much I owe to the other is unknown to him. Nor is she aware that the wounded stroller, who stands indebted to her for his health, if not his life, has been received with such unmerited attention in her brother's house."

Felix, who was swinging to and fro in the coach, cried up to him: "Father! Come, O come! Look at the pretty clouds, the pretty colours!" "Yes, I come," cried Wilhelm, springing downstairs; "and all the glories of the sky, which thou, good creature, so admirest, are as nothing to the moment which I look for."

Sitting in the coach, he recalled all the circumstances of the matter to his memory. "So this is the Natalia, then, Theresa's friend! What a discovery; what hopes, what prospects! How strange that the fear of speaking about the one sister should have altogether concealed from me the existence of the other!" With what joy he looked on Felix! He anticipated for the child, as for himself, the best reception.

Evening at last came on; the sun had set; the road was not the best; the postilion drove slowly; Felix had fallen asleep, and new cares and doubts arose in the bosom of our friend. "What delusion, what fantasies are these that rule thee!" said he to himself: "An uncertain similarity of handwriting has at once assured thee, and given thee matter for the strangest castles in the air." He again brought out the paper; in the departing light he again imagined that he recognised the hand of the Countess: his eyes could no longer find in the parts what his heart had at once shown him in the whole. "These horses, then, are running with thee to a scene of terror! Who knows but in a few hours they may have *to bring* thee back again? And if thou shouldst meet with her

alone! But perhaps her husband will be there; perhaps the Baroness? How altered will she be! Shall I not fail, and sink to the earth, at sight of her?"

Yet a faint hope that it might be his Amazon, would often gleam through these gloomy thoughts. It was now night: the carriage rolled into a court-yard, and halted; a servant with a link stept out of a stately portal, and came down the broad steps to the carriage-door. "You have been long looked for," said he, opening it. Wilhelm dismounted; took the sleeping Felix in his arms: the first servant called to a second, who was standing in the door with a light: "Show the gentleman up to the Baroness."

Quick as lightning, it went through Wilhelm's soul: "What a happiness! Be it by accident or of purpose, the Baroness is here! I shall see her first; apparently the Countess has retired to rest. Ye good spirits, grant that the moment of deepest perplexity may pass tolerably over!"

He entered the house: he found himself in the most earnest, and, as he almost felt, the holiest place that he had ever trod. A pendent dazzling lustre threw its light upon a broad and softly rising flight of stairs, which lay before him, and which parted into two divisions at a turn above. Marble statues and busts were standing upon pedestals and arranged in niches: some of them seemed known to him. The impressions of our childhood abide with us, even in their minutest traces. He recognised a Muse, which had formerly belonged to his grandfather; not indeed by its form or worth, but by an arm which had been restored, and some new-inserted pieces of the robe. He felt as if a fairy tale had turned out to be true. The child was heavy in his arms; he lingered on the stairs, and knelt down, as if to place him more conveniently. His real want, however, was to get a moment's breathing time. He could scarcely raise himself again. The servant, who was carrying the light, offered to take Felix; but Wilhelm could not part with him. He had now mounted to an antechamber; in which, to his still greater astonishment, he observed the well-known picture of the sick king's son hanging on the wall. He had scarcely time to cast a look on it; the servant hurried him along through two rooms into a cabinet. Here, behind a light-screen, which threw a shadow on her, sat a young lady reading. "O that it were she!" said he within himself at this decisive moment. He set down the boy, who seemed to be awakening; he meant to approach the lady; but the child sank together drunk with sleep; the lady rose, and came to him. It was the Amazon! Unable to restrain himself, he fell upon his knee, and cried: "It is she!" He seized her hand, and kissed it with unbounded rap-

ture. The child was lying on the carpet between them, sleeping softly.

Felix was carried to the sofa: Natalia sat down beside him; she directed Wilhelm to the chair which was standing nearest them. She proposed to order some refreshments; these our friend declined; he was altogether occupied convincing himself that it was she, closely examining her features, shaded by the screen, and accurately recognising them. She told him of Mignon's sickness, in general terms; that the poor child was gradually consuming under the influence of a few deep feelings; that, with her extreme excitability, and her endeavouring to hide it, her little heart often suffered violent and dangerous pains; that on any unexpected agitation of her mind, this primary organ of life would suddenly stop, and no trace of the vital movement could be felt in the good child's bosom. That when such an agonising cramp was past, the force of nature would again express itself in strong pulses, and now torment the child by its excess, as she had before suffered by its defect.

Wilhelm recollected one spasmodic scene of that description, and Natalia referred him to the doctor, who would speak with him at large on the affair, and explain more circumstantially why he, the friend and benefactor of the child, had been at present sent for. "One curious change," Natalia added, "you will find in her: she now wears women's clothes, to which she had once such an aversion."

"How did you succeed in this?" said Wilhelm.

"If it was indeed a thing to be desired," said she, "we owe it all to chance. Hear how it happened. Perhaps you are aware that I have constantly about me a number of little girls, whose opening minds I endeavour, as they grow in strength, to train to what is good and right. From my mouth they learn nothing but what I myself regard as true: yet I cannot and would not hinder them from gathering, among other people, many fragments of the common prejudices and errors which are current in the world. If they inquire of me about them, I attempt, as far as possible, to join these alien and intrusive notions to some just one, and thus to render them, if not useful, at least harmless. Some time ago, my girls had heard among the peasants' children many tales of angels, of Knecht Rupert and such shadowy characters, who, they understood, appeared at certain times in person, to give presents to good children, and to punish naughty ones. They had an idea that these strange visitants were people in disguise: in this I confirmed them; and without entering into explanations, I determined on the first opportunity, to let them see a spectacle of that sort.

It chanced that the birthday of two twin-sisters, whose behaviour had been always very good, was near; I promised that, on this occasion, the little present they had so well deserved should be delivered to them by an angel. They were on the stretch of curiosity regarding this phenomenon. I had chosen Mignon for the part; and accordingly, at the appointed day, I had her suitably equipt in a long light snow-white dress. She was, of course, provided with a golden girdle round her waist, and a golden fillet on her hair. I at first proposed to omit the wings; but the young ladies who were decking her, insisted on a pair of large golden pinions, in preparing which they meant to show their highest art. Thus did the strange apparition, with a lily in the one hand, and a little basket in the other, glide in among the girls: she surprised even me. 'There comes the angel!' said I. The children all shrank back; at last they cried: 'It is Mignon!' yet they durst not venture to approach the wondrous figure.

'Here are your gifts,' said she, putting down the basket. They gathered around her, they viewed, they felt, they questioned her.

'Art thou an angel?' asked one of them.

'I wish I were,' said Mignon.

'Why dost thou bear a lily?'

'So pure and so open should my heart be; then were I happy.'

'What wings are these? Let us see them!'

'They represent far finer ones, which are not yet unfolded.'

"And thus significantly did she answer all their other childlike, innocent inquiries. The little party having satisfied their curiosity, and the impression of the show beginning to abate, we were for proceeding to undress the little angel. This, however, she resisted: she took her cithern; she seated herself here, on this high writing-table, and sang a little song with touching grace:

Such let me seem, till such I be;
Take not my snow-white dress away!
Soon from this dusk of earth I flee
Up to the glittering lands of day.

There first a little space I rest,
Then wake so glad, to scene so kind;
In earthly robes no longer drest,
This band, this girdle left behind.

And those calm shining sons of morn
They ask not who is maid or boy;
No robes, no garments there are worn,
Our body pure from sin's alloy.

Through little life not much I toil'd,
Yet anguish long this heart has wrung,
Untimely woe my blossom spoil'd;
Make me again forever young!

"I immediately determined upon leaving her the dress," proceeded Natalia; "and procuring her some others of a similar kind. These she now wears; and in them, I think, her form has quite a different expression."

As it was already late, Natalia let the stranger go: he parted from her not without anxiety. "Is she married or not?" asked he within himself. He had been afraid, at every rustling, that the door would open, and her husband enter. The serving-man, who showed him to his room, went off, before our friend had mustered resolution to inquire regarding this. His unrest held him long awake; he kept comparing the figure of the Amazon with the figure of his new acquaintance. The two would not combine: the former he had, as it were, himself fashioned; the latter seemed as if it would almost new-fashion *him*.

CHAPTER III.

NEXT morning, while all was yet quiet, he went about viewing the house. It was the purest, finest, stateliest piece of architecture he had ever seen. "True art," cried he, "is like good company: it constrains us in the most delightful way to recognise the measure by which, and up to which, our inward nature has been shaped by culture." The impression which the busts and statues of his grandfather made upon him was exceedingly agreeable. With a longing mind, he hastened to the picture of the sick king's son; and he still felt it to be charming and affecting. The servant opened to him various other chambers: he found a library, a museum, a cabinet of philosophical instruments. In much of this he could not help perceiving his extreme ignorance. Meanwhile Felix had awakened, and come running after him. The thought of how and when he might receive Theresa's letter gave him pain; he dreaded seeing Mignon, and in some degree Natalia. How unlike his present state was his state at the moment when he sealed the letter to Theresa, and with a glad heart wholly gave himself to that noble being!

Natalia sent for him to breakfast. He proceeded to a room, where several tidy little girls, all apparently below ten years, were occupied in furnishing a table, while another of the same appearance brought in various sorts of beverage.

Wilhelm cast his eye upon a picture, hung above the sofa; he could not but recognise in it the portrait of Natalia, little as the execution satisfied him. Natalia entered, and the likeness seemed entirely to vanish. To his comfort, it was painted with the cross of a religious order on its breast; and he now saw another such upon Natalia's.

"I have just been looking at the portrait here," said he; "and it seems surprising that a painter could have been at once so true and so false. The picture resembles you in general extremely well, and yet it neither has your features nor your character."

"It is rather matter of surprise," replied Natalia, "that the likeness is so good. It is not my picture; but the picture of an aunt, whom I resembled even in childhood, though she was then advanced in years. It was painted when her age was just about what mine is: at the first glance every one imagines it is meant for me. You should have been acquainted with that excellent lady. I owe her much. A very weak state of health, perhaps too much employment with her own thoughts, and withal a moral and religious scrupulosity, prevented her from being to the world what, in other circumstances, she might have become. She was a light that shone but on a few friends, and on me especially."

"Can it be possible," said Wilhelm, after thinking for a moment, while so many circumstances seemed to correspond so well, "can it be possible that the fair and noble Saint, whose meek Confessions I had liberty to study, was your aunt?"

"You read the manuscript?" inquired Natalia.

"Yes," said Wilhelm, "with the greatest sympathy, and not without effect upon my life. What most impressed me in this paper was, if I may term it so, the purity of being, not only of the writer herself, but of all that lay round her; that self-dependence of nature, that impossibility of admitting anything into her soul which would not harmonise with its own noble lovely tone."

"You are more tolerant to this fine spirit," said Natalia, "nay I will say more just, than many other men, to whom the narrative has been imparted. Every cultivated person knows how he has had to strive against a certain rudeness both in himself and others; how much his culture costs him; how apt he is, after all, in certain cases, to recollect himself alone, forgetting what he owes to others. How often has a worthy person to reproach himself for having failed to act with proper delicacy! And when a fair nature too delicately, too conscientiously cultivates, nay, if you will, overcultivates itself, there seems to be no toleration, no indulgence for it in the world. Yet such persons are, without us, what the ideal of perfection is within us: models not for being imitated, but for

being aimed at. We laugh at the cleanliness of the Dutch: but would our friend Theresa be what she is, if some such notion were not always present to her in her housekeeping?"

"I see before me then," cried Wilhelm, "in Theresa's friend, the same Natalia whom her amiable relative was so attached to; the Natalia, who from her youth was so affectionate, so sympathising and helpful! It was only out of such a line that such a being could proceed. What a prospect opens before me, while I at once survey your ancestors, and all the circle you belong to!"

"Yes," replied Natalia, "in a certain sense, the story of my aunt would give you the faithfullest picture of us. Her love to me, indeed, has made her praise the little girl too much: in speaking of a child, we never speak of what is present, but of what we hope for."

Wilhelm, in the mean time, was rapidly reflecting that Lothario's parentage and early youth were now likewise known to him. The fair Countess, too, appeared before him in her childhood, with the aunt's pearls about her neck: he himself had been near those pearls, when her soft lovely lips bent down to meet his own. These beautiful remembrances he sought to drive away by other thoughts. He ran through the characters to whom that manuscript had introduced him. "I am here then," cried he, "in your worthy uncle's house! It is no house, it is a temple, and you are the priestess, nay the Genius of it: I shall recollect for life my impression yesternight, when I entered, and the old figures of my earliest days were again before me. I thought of the compassionate marble statues in Mignon's song: but these figures had not to lament about me; they looked upon me with a lofty earnestness, they brought my first years into immediate contact with the present moment. That ancient treasure of our family, the joy of my grandfather, I find here placed among so many other noble works of art; and myself, whom nature made the darling of the good old man, my unworthy self I find here also, Heavens! in what society, in what connexions!"

The girls had by degrees gone out to mind their little occupations. Natalia, left alone with Wilhelm, asked some farther explanation of his last remark. The discovery, that a number of her finest paintings and statues had at one time been the property of Wilhelm's grandfather, did not fail to give a cheerful stimulus to their discourse. As by that manuscript he had got acquainted with Natalia's house, so now he found himself too, as it were, in his inheritance. At length he asked for Mignon. His friend desired him to have patience till the Doctor, who had been called out *into the* neighbourhood, returned. It is easy to suppose that the

Doctor was the same little active man, whom we already know, and who was spoken of in the Confessions of a Fair Saint.

"Since I am now," said Wilhelm, "in the middle of your family circle, I presume the Abbé, whom that paper mentions, is the strange inexplicable person, whom, after the most singular series of events, I met with in your brother's house? Perhaps you can give some more accurate conception of him?"

"Of the Abbé there might much be said," replied Natalia: "what I know best about him is the influence which he exerted on our education. He was, for a time at least, convinced that education ought in every case to be adapted to the inclinations: his present views of it I know not. He maintained that with man the first and last consideration was activity, and that we could not act on anything, without the proper gifts for it, without an instinct impelling us to it. 'You admit,' he used to say, 'that poets must be born such; you admit this with regard to all professors of the fine arts; because you must admit it, because those workings of human nature cannot very plausibly be aped. But if we consider well, we shall find that every capability, however slight, is born with us: that there is no vague general capability in men. It is our ambiguous dissipating education that makes men uncertain: it awakens wishes, when it should be animating tendencies; instead of forwarding our real capacities, it turns our efforts towards objects which are frequently discordant with the mind that aims at them. I augur better of a child, a youth who is wandering astray on a path of his own, than of many who are walking aright upon paths which are not theirs. If the former, either by themselves, or by the guidance of others, ever find the right path, that is to say, the path which suits their nature, they will never leave it; while the latter are in danger every moment of shaking off a foreign yoke, and abandoning themselves to unrestricted license."

"It is strange," said Wilhelm, "that this same extraordinary man should likewise have taken charge of me; should, as it seems, have, in his own fashion, if not led, at least confirmed me in my errors, for a time. How he will answer to the charge of having joined with others, as it were, to make game of me, I wait patiently to see."

"Of this whim, if it is one," said Natalia, "I have little reason to complain: of all the family I answered best with it. Indeed I see not how Lothario could have got a finer breeding: but for my sister, the Countess, some other treatment might have suited better; perhaps they should have studied to infuse more earnestness and strength into her nature. As to brother Friedrich, what

is to become of him cannot be conjectured: he will fall a sacrifice, I fear, to this experiment in pedagogy."

"You have another brother then?" cried Wilhelm.

"Yes," replied Natalia; "and a light merry youth he is; and as they have not hindered him from roaming up and down the world, I know not what the wild dissipated boy will turn to. It is a great while since I saw him. The only thing which calms my fears is, that the Abbé, and the whole society about my brother, are receiving constant notice where he is and what he does."

Wilhelm was about to ask Natalia her opinion more precisely on the Abbé's paradoxes, as well as to solicit information about that mysterious society; but the Physician entering changed their conversation. After the first compliments of welcome, he began to speak of Mignon.

Natalia then took Felix by the hand, saying she would lead the child to Mignon, and prepare her for the entrance of her friend.

The Doctor, now alone with Wilhelm, thus proceeded: "I have wondrous things to tell you; such as you are not anticipating. Natalia has retired, that we might speak with greater liberty of certain matters, which, although I first learned them by her means, her presence would prevent us from discussing freely. The strange temper of the child seems to consist almost exclusively of deep longing; the desire of revisiting her native land, and the desire for you, my friend, are, I might almost say, the only earthly things about her. Both these feelings do but grasp towards an immeasurable distance, both objects lie before her unattainable. The neighbourhood of Milan seems to be her home: in very early childhood she was kidnapped from her parents by a company of rope-dancers. A more distinct account we cannot get from her, partly because she was then too young to recollect the names of men and places; but especially because she has made an oath to tell no living mortal her abode and parentage. For the strolling party, who came up with her when she had lost her way, and to whom she so accurately described her dwelling, with such piercing entreaties to conduct her home, but carried her along with them the faster; and at night in their quarters, when they thought the child was sleeping, joked about their precious capture, declaring she would never find the way home again. On this a horrid desperation fell upon the miserable creature; but at last the Holy Virgin rose before her eyes, and promised that she would assist her. The child then swore within herself a sacred oath, that she would henceforth trust no human creature, would disclose her history to no one, but live and die in hope of immediate

aid from Heaven. Even this, which I am telling you, Natalia did not learn expressly from her; but gathered it from detached expressions, songs and childlike inadvertencies, betraying what they meant to hide."

Wilhelm called to memory many a song and word of this dear child, which he could now explain. He earnestly requested the Physician to keep from him none of the confessions or mysterious poetry of this peculiar being.

"Prepare yourself," said the Physician, "for a strange confession; for a story with which you, without remembering it, have much to do; and which, as I greatly fear, has been decisive for the death and life of this good creature."

"Let me hear," said Wilhelm, "my impatience is unbounded."

"Do you recollect a secret nightly visit from a female," said the Doctor, "after your appearance in the character of Hamlet?"

"Yes, I recollect it well," cried Wilhelm blushing, "but I did not look to be reminded of it at the present moment."

"Do you know who it was?"

"I do not! You frighten me! In the name of Heaven, not Mignon surely? Who was it? Tell me, pray."

"I know it not myself."

"Not Mignon then?"

"No, certainly not Mignon: but Mignon was intending at the time to glide in to you: and saw, with horror, from a corner where she lay concealed, a rival get before her."

"A rival!" cried our friend: "Speak on, you more and more confound me."

"Be thankful," said the Doctor, "that you can arrive at the result so soon through means of me. Natalia and I, with but a distant interest in the matter, had distress enough to undergo, before we could thus far discover the perplexed condition of the poor dear creature, whom we wished to help. By some wanton speeches of Philina and the other girls, by a certain song which she had heard Philina sing, the child's attention had been roused; she longed to pass a night beside the man she loved, without conceiving anything to be implied in this beyond a happy and confiding rest. A love for you, my friend, was already keen and powerful in her little heart; in your arms, the child had found repose from many a sorrow; she now desired this happiness in all its fulness. At one time she proposed to ask you for it in a friendly manner; but a secret horror always held her back. At last, that merry night and the excitement of abundant wine inspired her with the courage to attempt the adventure, and glide in to you on that occasion. Accordingly she ran before, to hide

herself in your apartment, which was standing open; but just when she had reached the top of the stairs, having heard a rustling, she concealed herself, and saw a female in a white dress slip into your chamber. You yourself arrived soon after, and she heard you push the large bolt.

"Mignon's agony was now unutterable: all the violent feelings of a passionate jealousy mingled themselves with the unacknowledged longing of obscure desire, and seized her half-developed nature with tremendous force. Her heart, which hitherto had beaten violently with eagerness and expectation, now at once began to falter and stop; it pressed her bosom like a heap of lead; she could not draw her breath, she knew not what to do; she heard the sound of the old man's harp, hastened to the garret where he was, and passed the night at his feet in horrible convulsions."

The Physician paused a moment; then, as Wilhelm still kept silence, he proceeded: "Natalia told me, nothing in her life had so alarmed and touched her as the state of Mignon while relating this: indeed, our noble friend accused herself of cruelty in having, by her questions and management, drawn this confession from her, and renewed by recollection the violent sorrows of the poor little girl.

"'The dear creature,' said Natalia, 'had scarcely come so far with her recital, or rather with her answers to my questions, when she sank all at once before me on the ground, and with her hand on her bosom piteously moaned that the pain of that excruciating night was come back. She twisted herself like a worm upon the floor; and I had to summon all my composure, that I might remember and apply such means of remedy for mind and body as were known to me.'"

"It is a painful predicament you put me in," cried Wilhelm, "by impressing me so vividly with the feeling of my manifold injustice towards this unhappy and beloved being, at the very moment when I am again to meet her. If she is to see me, why do you deprive me of the courage to appear with freedom? And shall I confess it to you? Since her mind is so affected, I perceive not how my presence can be advantageous to her. If you, as a Physician, are persuaded that this double longing has so undermined her being as to threaten death, why should I renew her sorrows by my presence, and perhaps accelerate her end?"

"My friend," replied the Doctor, "where we cannot cure, it is our duty to alleviate; and how much the presence of a loved object tends to take from the imagination its destructive power, how it changes an impetuous longing to a peaceful looking, I

could prove by the most convincing instances. Everything in measure and with purpose! For, in other cases, this same presence may rekindle an affection nigh extinguished. But do you go and see the child; behave to her with kindness, and let us wait the consequence."

Natalia, at this moment coming back, bade Wilhelm follow her to Mignon. "She appears to feel quite happy with the boy," observed Natalia, "and I hope she will receive our friend with mildness." Wilhelm followed, not without reluctance: he was deeply moved by what he had been hearing; he feared a stormy scene of passion. It was altogether the reverse that happened on his entrance.

Mignon, dressed in long white women's-clothes, with her brown copious hair partly knotted, partly clustering out in locks, was sitting with the boy Felix on her lap, and pressing him against her heart. She looked like a departed spirit, he like life itself: it seemed as if Heaven and Earth were clasping one another. She held out her hand to Wilhelm with a smile, and said: "I thank thee for bringing back the child to me: they had taken him away, I know not how, and since then I could not live. So long as my heart needs anything on earth, thy Felix shall fill up the void."

The quietness, which Mignon had displayed on meeting with her friend, produced no little satisfaction in the party. The Doctor signified that Wilhelm should go frequently and see her; that in body as in mind, she should be kept as equable as possible. He himself departed, promising to return soon.

Wilhelm could now observe Natalia in her own circle: one would have desired nothing better than to live beside her. Her presence had the purest influence on the girls, and young ladies of various ages, who resided with her in the house, or came to pay her visits from the neighbourhood.

"The progress of your life," said Wilhelm once to her, "must always have been very even; your aunt's delineation of you in your childhood seems, if I mistake not, still to fit. It is easy to see, that you never were entangled in your path. You have never been compelled to retrograde."

"This I owe to my uncle and the Abbé," said Natalia, "who so well discriminated my prevailing turn of mind. From my youth upwards, I can recollect no livelier feeling than that I was constantly observing people's wants, and had an irresistible desire to make them up. The child that had not learned to stand on its feet, the old man that could no longer stand on his; the longing of a rich family for children, the inability of a poor one to main-

tain their children; each silent wish for some particular species of employment, the impulse towards any talent, the natural gifts for many little necessary arts of life, were sure to strike me: my eye seemed formed by nature for detecting them. I saw such things, where no one had directed my attention; I seemed born for seeing them alone. The charms of inanimate nature, to which so many persons are exceedingly susceptible, had no effect upon me; the charms of art, if possible, had less. My most delightful occupation was and is, when a deficiency, a want appeared before me anywhere, to set about devising a supply, a remedy, a help for it.

"If I saw a poor creature in rags, the superfluous clothes I had noticed hanging in the wardrobes of my friends, immediately occurred to me; if I saw children wasting for want of care, I was sure to recollect some lady I had found oppressed with tedium amid riches and conveniences: if I saw too many persons crammed into a narrow space, I thought they should be lodged in the spacious chambers of palaces and vacant houses. This mode of viewing things was altogether natural, without the least reflection; so that in my childhood I often made the strangest work of it, and more than once embarrassed people by my singular proposals. Another of my peculiarities was this, I did not learn till late, and after many efforts, to consider money as a means of satisfying wants: my benefits were all distributed in kind, and my simplicity, I know, was frequently the cause of laughter. None but the Abbé seemed to understand me; he met me everywhere; he made me acquainted with myself, with these wishes, these tendencies, and taught me how to satisfy them suitably."

"Do you then," said Wilhelm, "in the education of your little female world employ the method of these extraordinary men? Do you too leave every mind to form itself? Do you too leave your girls to search and wander, to pursue delusions, happily to reach the goal, or miserably lose themselves in error?"

"No!" replied Natalia: "such treatment as that would altogether contradict my notions. To my mind, he who does not help us at the needful moment, never helps; he who does not counsel at the needful moment, never counsels. I also reckon it essential that we lay down and continually impress on children certain laws, to operate as a kind of hold in life. Nay, I could almost venture to assert that it is better to be wrong by rule, than to be wrong with nothing but the fitful caprices of our disposition to impel us hither and thither: and in my way of viewing men, there always seems to be a void in their nature, which cannot be filled up, except by some decisive and distinctly settled law."

"Your manner of proceeding then," said Wilhelm, "is entirely different from the manner of our friends?"

"Yes," replied Natalia: "and you may see the unexampled tolerance of these men, from the fact, that they nowise disturb me in my practice; but leave me on my own path, simply because it is my own, and even assist me in everything that I require of them."

A more minute description of Natalia's plans in managing her children we reserve for some other opportunity.

Mignon often asked to be of their society; and this they granted her with greater readiness, as she appeared to be again accustoming herself to Wilhelm, to be opening her heart to him, and in general to have become more cheerful and contented with existence. In walking, being easily fatigued, she liked to hang upon his arm. "Mignon," she would say, "now climbs and bounds no more; yet she still longs to mount the summits of the hills, to skip from house to house, from tree to tree. How enviable are the birds; and then so prettily and socially they build their nests too!"

Ere long it became habitual for her to invite her friend, more than once every day, into the garden. When Wilhelm was engaged or absent, Felix had to take his place; and if poor Mignon seemed at times quite loosened from the earth, there were other moments when she would again hold fast to father and son, and seem to dread a separation from them more than anything beside.

Natalia wore a thoughtful look. "We meant," said she, "to open her tender little heart, by sending for you hither. I know not whether we did prudently." She stopped, and seemed expecting Wilhelm to say something. To him also it occurred that by his marriage with Theresa, Mignon, in the present circumstances, would be fearfully offended: but in his uncertainty, he did not venture mentioning his project; he had no suspicion that Natalia knew of it.

As little could he talk with freedom, when his noble friend began to speak about her sister; to praise her good qualities, and to lament her hapless situation. He felt exceedingly embarrassed when Natalia told him he would shortly see the Countess here. "Her husband," said she, "has now no object but replacing Zinzendorf in the Community; and by insight and activity supporting and extending that establishment. He is coming with his wife, to take a sort of leave; he then purposes visiting the various spots where the Community have settled. They appear to treat him as he wishes: and I should not wonder if, in order to be alto-

gether like his predecessor, he ventured, with my sister, on a voyage to America; for being already well-nigh convinced that a little more would make a saint of him, the wish to superadd the dignity of martyrdom has probably enough often flitted through his mind."

CHAPTER IV.

They had often spoken of Theresa, often mentioned her in passing; and Wilhelm almost every time was minded to confess that he had offered her his heart and hand. A certain feeling, which he was not able to explain, restrained him; he paused and wavered, till at length Natalia, with the heavenly, modest, cheerful smile she often wore, said to him: "It seems then I at last must break silence, and force myself into your confidence! Why, my friend, do you keep secret from me an affair of such importance to yourself, and so closely touching my concerns? You have made my friend the offer of your hand: I do not mix uncalled in the transaction: here are my credentials; here is the letter which she writes to you, which she sends you through my hands."

"A letter from Theresa!" cried he.

"Yes, mein herr! Your destiny is settled; you are happy. Let me congratulate my friend and you on your good fortune."

Wilhelm spoke not, but gazed out before him. Natalia looked at him; she saw that he was pale. "Your joy is strong," continued she; "it takes the form of terror, it deprives you of the power to speak. My participation is not the less cordial that I show it you in words. I hope you will be grateful: for I may say, my influence on the decision of your bride has not been small: she asked me for advice; and as it happened by a singular coincidence, that you were here just then, I was enabled to destroy the few scruples she still entertained. Our messages went swiftly to and fro: here is her determination; here is the conclusion of the treaty! And now you shall read her other letters, you shall have a free clear look into the fair heart of your Theresa."

Wilhelm opened the letter, which she handed him unsealed. It contained these friendly words:

"I am yours, as I am and as you know me. I call you mine, as you are and as I know you. What in ourselves, what in our connexion wedlock changes, we shall study to adjust, by reason, cheerfulness and mutual goodwill. As it is no passion, but trust and inclination for each other that is leading us together, we run *less risk* than thousands of others. You will forgive me, will you

not, if I still think often and kindly of my former friend; in return, I will press your Felix to my heart, as if I were his mother. If you choose to share my little mansion straightway, we are lord and master there, and in the mean while the purchase of your land might be concluded. I could wish that no new arrangements were made in it without me. I could wish at once to prove that I deserve the confidence which you repose in me. Adieu, dear, dear Friend! Beloved Bridegroom, honoured Husband! Theresa clasps you to her breast with hope and joy. My friend will tell you more, will tell you all."

Wilhelm, to whose mind this sheet recalled the image of Theresa with the liveliest distinctness, had now recovered his composure. While reading, thoughts had rapidly alternated within his soul. With terror, he discovered in his heart the most vivid traces of an inclination to Natalia: he blamed himself, declaring every thought of that description to be madness; he represented to himself Theresa in her whole perfection; he again perused the letter, he grew cheerful, or rather he so far regained his self-possession that he could appear cheerful. Natalia handed him the letters which had passed between Theresa and herself: out of Theresa's we propose extracting one or two passages.

After delineating her bridegroom in her own peculiar way, Theresa thus proceeded:

"Such is the notion I have formed of the man who now offers me his hand. What he thinks of himself thou shalt see by and by, in the papers he has sent me, where he altogether candidly draws his own portrait; I feel persuaded that I shall be happy with him."

"As to rank, thou knowest my ideas on this point long ago. Some people look on disagreement of external circumstances as a fearful thing, and cannot remedy it. I wish not to persuade any one, I wish to act according to my own persuasion. I mean not to set others an example, nor do I act without example. It is interior disagreements only that frighten me: a frame that does not fit what it is meant to hold; much pomp and little real enjoyment; wealth and avarice, nobility and rudeness, youth and pedantry, poverty and ceremonies, these are the things which would annihilate me, however it may please the world to stamp and rate them."

"If I hope that we shall suit each other, the hope is chiefly

founded upon this, that he resembles thee, my dear Natalia, thee whom I so highly prize and reverence. Yes, he has thy noble searching and striving for the Better, whereby we of ourselves produce the Good which we suppose we find. How often have I blamed thee, not in silence, for treating this or that person, for acting in this or that case, otherwise than I should have done; and yet in general the issue showed that thou wert right. 'When we take people,' thou wouldst say, 'merely as they are, we make them worse; when we treat them as if they were what they should be, we improve them as far as they can be improved.' To see or to act thus, I know full well is not for me. Skill, order, discipline, direction, that is my affair. I always recollect what Jarno said: 'Theresa trains her pupils, Natalia forms them.' Nay once he went so far as to assert that of the three fair qualities, faith, love and hope, I was entirely destitute. 'Instead of faith,' said he, 'she has penetration, instead of love she has steadfastness, instead of hope she has trust.' Indeed I will confess that till I knew thee, I knew nothing higher in the world than clearness and prudence: it was thy presence only that persuaded, animated, conquered me; to thy fair lofty soul I willingly give place. My friend too I honour on the same principle; the description of his life is a perpetual seeking without finding; not empty seeking, but wondrous, generous seeking; he fancies others may give him what can proceed from himself alone. So, love, the clearness of my vision has not injured me, on this occasion more than others: I know my husband better than he knows himself, and I value him the more. I see him, yet I see not over him; all my skill will not enable me to judge of what he can accomplish. When I think of him, his image always blends itself with thine: I know not how I have deserved to belong to two such persons. But I will deserve it, by endeavouring to do my duty, by fulfilling what is looked for from me."

"If I recollect Lothario? Vividly and daily. In the company which in thought surrounds me, I cannot want him for a moment. O, what a pity for this noble character, related by an error of his youth to me, that nature has related him to thee! A being such as thou, in truth, were worthier of him than I. To thee I could, I would surrender him. Let us be to him all we can, till he find a proper wife; and then too let us be, let us abide together."

"But what shall we say to our friends?" began Natalia.—"Your brother does not know of it?"—"Not a hint; your people know as little: we women have, on this occasion, managed the affair ourselves. Lydia had put some whims into Theresa's head, concerning Jarno and the Abbé. There are certain plans and secret combinations, with the general scheme of which I am acquainted, and into which I never thought of penetrating farther. With regard to these, Theresa has, through Lydia, taken up some shadow of suspicion: so in this decisive step, she would not suffer any one but me to influence her. With my brother it had been already settled, that they should merely announce their marriages to one another, not giving or asking counsel on the subject."

Natalia wrote a letter to her brother; she invited Wilhelm to subjoin a word or two, Theresa having so desired it. They were just about to seal, when Jarno unexpectedly sent up his name. His reception was of course as kind as possible: he wore a sportful merry air; he could not long forbear to tell his errand. "I am come," said he, "to give you very curious and very pleasing tidings: they concern Theresa. You have often blamed us, fair Natalia, for troubling our heads about so many things; but now you see how good it is to have one's spies in every place. Guess, and let us see your skill for once!"

The self-complacency with which he spoke these words, the roguish mien with which he looked at Wilhelm and Natalia, persuaded both of them that he had found their secret. Natalia answered smiling: "We are far more skilful than you think: before we even heard your riddle, we had put the answer to it down in black and white."

With these words, she handed him the letter to Lothario; satisfied at having met, in this way, the little triumph and surprise he had meant for them. Jarno took the sheet with some astonishment; ran it quickly over; started; let it drop from his hands, and stared at both his friends with an expression of amazement, nay of fright, which on his countenance was rare. He spoke no word.

Wilhelm and Natalia were not a little struck; Jarno stept up and down the room. "What shall I say?" cried he: "Or shall I say it at all? But it must come out; the perplexity is not to be avoided. So secret for secret; surprise against surprise! Theresa is not the daughter of her reputed mother! The hinderance is removed: I came to ask you to prepare her for a marriage with Lothario."

Jarno saw the shock which he had given his friends; they cast their eyes upon the ground. "The present case," said he, "is

one of those which are worse to bear in company. What each has to consider in it, he considers best in solitude: I at least require an hour of leave." He hastened to the garden; Wilhelm followed him mechanically, yet without approaching near.

At the end of an hour, they were again assembled. Wilhelm opened the conversation: "Formerly," said he, "while I was living without plan or object, in a state of carelessness, or I may say of levity, friendship, love, affection, trust came towards me with open arms, they pressed themselves upon me; but now when I am serious, destiny appears to take another course with me. This resolution, of soliciting Theresa's hand, is probably the first that has proceeded altogether from myself. I laid my plan considerately; my reason fully joined in it; by the consent of that noble maiden all my hopes were crowned. But now the strangest fate puts back my outstretched hand; Theresa reaches hers to me, but from afar, as in a dream; I cannot grasp it; and the lovely image leaves me forever. So fare thee well, thou lovely image! and all ye images of richest happiness that gathered round it!"

He was silent for a moment, looking out before him: Jarno was about to speak. "Let me have another word," cried Wilhelm, "for the lot is drawing which is to decide the destiny of all my life. At this moment, I am aided and confirmed by the impression which Lothario's presence made upon me at the first glance, and which has ever since continued with me. That man well merits every sort of friendship and affection; and without sacrifices friendship cannot be imagined. For his sake, it was easy for me to delude a hapless girl; for his sake it shall be possible for me to give away the worthiest bride. Return, relate the strange occurrence to him, and tell him what I am prepared for."

"In emergencies like this," said Jarno, "I hold that everything is done, if one do nothing rashly. Let us take no step till Lothario has agreed to it. I will go to him: wait patiently for my return, or for his letter."

He rode away; and left his friends in great disquiet. They had time to reconsider these events, to think of them maturely. It now first occurred to them, that they had taken Jarno's statement simply by itself, and without inquiring into any of the circumstances. Wilhelm was not altogether free from doubts: but next day, their astonishment, nay their bewilderment, arose still higher, when a messenger arriving from Theresa, brought the following letter to Natalia.

"Strange as it may seem, after all the letters I have sent, I am obliged to send another, begging that thou wouldst despatch my bridegroom to me instantly. He shall be my husband, what plans

soever they may lay to rob me of him. Give him the enclosed letter; only not before witnesses, whoever they may be!"

The enclosed letter was as follows: "What opinion will you form of your Theresa, when you see her all at once insisting passionately on a union which calm reason alone appeared to have appointed? Let nothing hinder you from setting out the moment you have read this letter. Come, my dear, dear friend; now three times dearer, since they are attempting to deprive me of you."

"What is to be done?" cried Wilhelm, after he had read the letter.

"In no case that I remember," said Natalia, after some reflection, "have my heart and judgment been so dumb as in the present one: what to do or to advise I know not."

"Can it be," cried Wilhelm vehemently, "that Lothario does not know of it; or if he does, that he is but like us, the sport of hidden plans? Has Jarno, when he saw our letter, devised that fable on the spot? Would he have told us something different, if we had not been so precipitate? What can they mean? What intentions can they have? What plan can Theresa mean? Yes, it must be owned, Lothario is begirt with secret influences and combinations: I myself have found that they are active, that they take a certain charge of the proceedings, of the destiny of several people, and contrive to guide them. The ulterior objects of these mysteries I know not; but their nearest purpose, that of snatching my Theresa from me, I perceive but too distinctly. On the one hand, this prospect of Lothario's happiness which they exhibit to me may be but a hollow show; on the other hand, I see my dear, my honoured bride inviting me to her affection. What shall I do? What shall I forbear?"

"A little patience!" said Natalia; "a little time for thought! In these singular perplexities, I know but this, that what can never be recalled should not be done in haste. To a fable, to an artful plan we have steadfastness and prudence to oppose: whether Jarno has been speaking true or false must soon appear. If my brother has actually hopes of a connexion with Theresa, it were hard to cut him off forever from that prospect, at the moment when it seems so kindly inviting him. Let us wait at least till we discover whether he himself knows anything of it, whether he believes and hopes."

These prudent counsels were confirmed by a letter from Lothario. "I do not send Jarno," he wrote: "a line from my hand is more to thee than the minutest narrative in the mouth of a messenger. I am certain, Theresa is not the daughter of her reputed mother: and I cannot renounce hope of being hers, till

she too is persuaded, and can then decide between my friend and me with calm consideration. Let him not leave thee, I entreat it! The happiness, the life of a brother is at stake. I promise thee, this uncertainty shall not be long."

"You see how the matter stands," said she to Wilhelm with a friendly air; "give me your word of honour that you will not leave the house!"

"I give it!" cried he, stretching out his hand; "I will not leave this house against your will. I thank Heaven, and my better Genius, that on this occasion I am led, and led by you."

Natalia wrote Theresa an account of everything; declaring that she would not let her friend away. She sent Lothario's letter also.

Theresa answered: "I wonder not a little that Lothario is himself convinced: to his sister he would not feign to this extent. I am vexed, greatly vexed. It is better that I say no more. But I will come to thee, so soon as I have got poor Lydia settled: they are treating her cruelly. I fear we are all betrayed, and shall be so betrayed that we shall never reach the truth. If my friend were of my opinion, he would give thee the slip after all, and throw himself into the arms of his Theresa, whom none shall take away from him. But I, as I dread, shall lose him, and not regain Lothario. From the latter they are taking Lydia, by showing him afar off the prospect of obtaining me. I will say no more: the entanglement will grow still deeper. Whether, in the mean time, these beautiful relations to each other may not be so pushed aside, so undermined and broken down, that when the darkness passes off, the mischief shall no longer admit of remedy, time will show. If my friend do not tear himself away, in a few days I myself will come and seek him out beside thee, and hold him fast. Thou marvellest how this passion can have gained the mastery of thy Theresa. It is no passion, but conviction; it is a belief that since Lothario can never be mine, this new friend will make me happy. Tell him so, in the name of the little boy that sat with him underneath the oak, and thanked him for his sympathy. Tell it him in the name of Theresa, who met his offers with a hearty openness. My first dream of living with Lothario has wandered far away from my soul; the dream of living with my other friend is yet wholly present to me. Do they hold me so light, as to think that it were easy to exchange the former with the latter?"

"I depend on you," said Natalia to Wilhelm, handing him the letter: "you will not leave me. Consider that the comfort of my life is in your hands. My being is so intimately bound and interwoven with my brother's, that he feels no sorrow which I do not

feel, no joy which does not likewise gladden me. Nay, I may truly say, through him alone I have experienced that the heart can be affected and exalted; that in the world there may be joy, love and an emotion which contents the soul beyond its utmost want."

She stopped; Wilhelm took her hand, and cried: "O continue! This is the time for a true mutual disclosure of our thoughts: it never was more necessary for us to be well acquainted with each other."

"Yes, my friend!" said she, smiling, with her quiet, soft, indescribable dignity; "perhaps it is not out of season, if I tell you that the whole of what so many books, of what the world holds up to us and names love, has always seemed to me a fable."

"You have never loved?" cried Wilhelm.

"Never or always!" said Natalia.

CHAPTER V.

DURING this conversation, they kept walking up and down the garden, and Natalia gathered various flowers of singular forms, entirely unknown to Wilhelm, who began to ask their names, and occupy himself about them.

"You know not," said Natalia, "for whom I have been plucking these? I intend them for my uncle, whom we are to visit. The sun is shining even now so bright on the Hall of the Past, I must lead you in this moment; and I never go to it, without a few of the flowers which my uncle liked particularly, in my hand. He was a peculiar man, susceptible of very strange impressions. For certain plants and animals, for certain neighbourhoods and persons, nay for certain sorts of minerals, he had an especial love, which he was rarely able to explain. 'Had I not,' he would often say, 'from youth, withstood myself, and striven to form my judgment upon wide and general principles, I had been the narrowest and most intolerable person living. For nothing can be more intolerable than circumscribed peculiarity, in one from whom a pure and suitable activity might be required.' And yet he was obliged to confess, that life and breath would almost leave him, if he did not now and then indulge himself, not from time to time allow himself a brief and passionate enjoyment of what he could not always praise and justify. 'It is not my fault,' said he, 'if I have not brought my inclinations and my reason into perfect harmony.' On such occasions, he would joke with me, and say: 'Natalia may

be looked upon as happy while she lives: her nature asks nothing which the world does not wish and use.'"

So speaking, they arrived again at the house. Natalia led him through a spacious passage, to a door, before which lay two granite Sphinxes. The door itself was in the Egyptian fashion, somewhat narrower above than below; and its brazen leaves prepared one for a serious or even a gloomy feeling. Wilhelm was in consequence agreeably surprised, when his expectation issued in a sentiment of pure cheerful serenity, as he entered a hall, where art and life took away all recollection of death and the grave. In the walls all round, a series of proportionable arches had been hollowed out, and large sarcophaguses stood in them: among the pillars in the intervals between them, smaller openings might be seen, adorned with urns and similar vessels. The remaining spaces of the walls and vaulted roof were regularly divided; and between bright and variegated borders, within garlands and other ornaments, a multitude of cheerful and significant figures had been painted, upon grounds of different sizes. The body of the edifice was covered with that fine yellow marble, which passes into reddish; clear blue stripes of a chemical substance happily imitating azure-stone, while they satisfied the eye with contrast, gave unity and combination to the whole. All this pomp and decoration showed itself in the chastest architectural forms: and thus every one who entered felt as if exalted above himself, while the coöperating products of art, for the first time, taught him what man is and what he may become.

Opposite the door, on a stately sarcophagus, lay a marble figure of a noble-looking man, reclined upon a pillow. He held a roll before him; and seemed to look at it with still attention. It was placed so that you could read with ease the words which stood there. *Think of living.*

Natalia took away a withered bunch of flowers, and laid the fresh one down before the figure of her uncle. For it was her uncle whom the marble represented: Wilhelm thought he recognised the features of the venerable gentleman, whom he had seen, when lying wounded in the green of the forest. "Here he and I passed many an hour," said Natalia, "while the hall was getting ready. In his latter years, he had gathered several skilful artists round him; and his chief delight was to invent or superintend the drawings and cartoons for these pictures."

Wilhelm could not satisfy himself with looking at the objects which surrounded him. "What a life," exclaimed he, "in this Hall of the Past! One might with equal justice name it Hall *of the* Present and the Future. Such all were, such all will be.

There is nothing transitory but the individual who looks at and enjoys it. Here, this figure of the mother pressing her infant to her bosom will survive many generations of happy mothers. Centuries hence, perhaps some father will take pleasure in contemplating this bearded man, who has laid aside his seriousness, and is playing with his son. Thus shamefaced will the bride sit for ages, and amid her silent wishes, need that she be comforted, that she be spoken to; thus impatient will the bridegroom listen on the threshold whether he may enter."

The figures Wilhelm was surveying with such rapture were of almost boundless number and variety. From the first jocund impulse of the child, merely to employ its every limb in sport, up to the peaceful sequestered earnestness of the sage, you might, in fair and living order, see delineated how man possesses no capacity or tendency without employing and enjoying it. From the first soft conscious feeling, when the maiden lingers in pulling up her pitcher, and looks with satisfaction at her image in the clear fountain, to those high solemnities when kings and nations invoke the Gods at the altar to witness their alliances, all was depicted, all was forcible and full of meaning.

It was a world, it was a heaven, that in this abode surrounded the spectator; and beside the thoughts which those polished forms suggested, beside the feelings they awoke, there still seemed something farther to be present, something by which the whole man felt himself laid hold of. Wilhelm too observed this, though unable to account for it. "What is this," exclaimed he, "which, independently of all signification, without any sympathy that human incidents and fortunes may inspire us with, acts on me so strongly and so gracefully? It speaks to me from the whole, it speaks from every part; though I have not fully understood the former, though I do not specially apply the latter to myself! What enchantment breathes from these surfaces, these lines, these heights and breadths, these masses and colours! What is it that makes these figures so delightful, even when slightly viewed, and merely in the light of decorations! Yes, I feel it: one might tarry here, might rest, might view the whole, and be happy; and yet feel and think something altogether different from aught that stood before his eyes."

And certainly if we were able to describe how happily the whole was subdivided, how everything determined by its place, by combination or by contrast, by uniformity or by variety, appeared exactly as it should have done, producing an effect as perfect as distinct, we should transport the reader to a scene, from which he would not be in haste to stir.

Four large marble candelabras rose in the corners of the hall; four smaller ones were in the midst of it, around a very beautifully worked sarcophagus, which, judging from its size, might once have held a young person of middle stature.

Natalia paused beside this monument; she laid her hand upon it as she said: "My worthy uncle had a great attachment to this fine antique. 'It is not,' he would often say, 'the first blossoms alone that drop; such you can keep above, in these little spaces; but fruits also, which, hanging on their twigs, long give us the fairest hope, whilst a secret worm is preparing their too early ripeness and their quick decay.' I fear," continued she, "his words have been prophetic of that dear little girl, who seems withdrawing gradually from our cares, and bending to this peaceful dwelling."

As they were about to go, Natalia stopped and said: "There is something still which merits your attention. Observe these half-round openings aloft on both sides. Here the choir can stand concealed while singing; these iron ornaments below the cornice serve for fastening-on the tapestry, which, by order of my uncle, must be hung round at every burial. Music, particularly song, was a pleasure he could not live without: and it was one of his peculiarities that he wished the singer not to be in view. 'In this respect,' he would say, 'they spoil us at the theatre; the music there is, as it were, subservient to the eye; it accompanies movements, not emotions. In oratorios and concerts, the form of the musician constantly disturbs us: true music is intended for the ear alone; a fine voice is the most universal thing that can be figured; and while the narrow individual that uses it presents himself before the eye, he cannot fail to trouble the effect of that pure universality. The person whom I am to speak with, I must see, because it is a solitary man, whose form and character gives worth or worthlessness to what he says: but, on the other hand, whoever sings to me must be invisible; his form must not confuse me, or corrupt my judgment. Here, it is but one human organ speaking to another; it is not spirit speaking to spirit, not a thousandfold world to the eye, not a heaven to the man.' On the same principles, in respect of instrumental music, he required that the orchestra should as much as possible be hid; because by the mechanical exertions, by the mean and awkward gestures of the performers, our feelings are so much dispersed and perplexed. Accordingly he always used to shut his eyes while hearing music; thereby to concentrate his whole being on the single pure enjoyment of the ear."

They were about to leave the Hall, when they heard the

children running hastily along the passage, and Felix crying: "No, I! No, I!"

Mignon rushed in at the open door: she was foremost, but out of breath, and could not speak a word. Felix, still at some distance, shouted out: "Mamma Theresa is come!" The children had run a race, as it seemed, to bring the news. Mignon was lying in Natalia's arms, her heart was beating fiercely.

"Naughty child," said Natalia, "art thou not forbidden violent motions? See how thy heart is beating!"

"Let it break!" said Mignon with a deep sigh: "it has beat too long."

They had scarcely composed themselves from this surprise, this sort of consternation, when Theresa entered. She flew to Natalia; clasped her and Mignon in her arms. Then turning round to Wilhelm, she looked at him with her clear eyes, and said: "Well, my friend, how is it with you? You have not let them cheat you?" He made a step towards her; she sprang to him, and hung upon his neck. "O my Theresa!" cried he.

"My friend, my love, my husband! Yes, forever thine!" cried she, amid the warmest kisses.

Felix pulled her by the gown, and cried: "Mamma Theresa, I am here too!" Natalia stood, and looked before her: Mignon on a sudden clapped her left hand on her heart; and stretching out the right arm violently, fell with a shriek at Natalia's feet, as dead.

The fright was great: no motion of the heart or pulse was to be traced. Wilhelm took her on his arm, and hastily carried her away; the body hung lax over his shoulders. The presence of the Doctor was of small avail: he and the young Surgeon, whom we know already, strove in vain. The dear little creature could not be recalled to life.

Natalia beckoned to Theresa: the latter took her friend by the hand and led him from the room. He was dumb, not uttering a word; he durst not meet her eyes. He sat down with her upon the sofa, where he had first found Natalia. He thought with great rapidity along a series of fateful incidents, or rather he did not think, but let his soul be worked on by the thoughts which would not leave it. There are moments in life, when past events, like winged shuttles, dart to and fro before us, and by their incessant movements weave a web, which we ourselves, in a greater or a less degree, have spun and put upon the loom. "My friend, my love!" said Theresa, breaking silence, as she took him by the hand: "Let us stand together firmly in this hour, as we perhaps shall often have to do in similar hours. These are occurrences, which it takes two united hearts to suffer. Think, my friend, feel

that thou art not alone; show that thou lovest thy Theresa by imparting thy sorrows to her!" She embraced him, and drew him softly to her bosom: he clasped her in his arms and pressed her strongly towards him. "The poor child," cried he, "used in mournful moments to seek shelter and protection in my unstable bosom: let the stability of thine assist me in this heavy hour." They held each other fast; he felt her heart beat against his breast; but in his spirit all was desolate and void; only the figures of Mignon and Natalia flitted like shadows across the waste of his imagination.

Natalia entered. "Give us thy blessing!" cried Theresa: "Let us, in this melancholy moment, be united before thee!" Wilhelm had hid his face upon Theresa's neck: he was so far relieved that he could weep. He did not hear Natalia come; he did not see her; but at the sound of her voice his tears redoubled. "What God has joined I will not part," she answered, smiling; "but to unite you is not in my power; nor am I gratified to see that sorrow and sympathy seem altogether to have banished from your hearts the recollection of my brother." At these words, Wilhelm started from Theresa's arms. "Whither are you going?" cried the ladies. "Let me see the child," said he, "whom I have killed! Misfortune when we look upon it with our eyes is smaller than when our imagination sinks the evil down into the recesses of the soul. Let us view the departed angel! Her serene countenance will say to us that it is well with her." As his friends could not restrain the agitated youth, they followed him; but the worthy Doctor with the Surgeon met them, and prevented them from coming near the dead. "Keep away from this mournful object," said he; "and allow me, so far as I am able, to give some continuance to these remains. On this dear and singular being I will now display the beautiful art not only of embalming bodies, but of retaining in them a look of life. As I foresaw her death, the preparations are already made; with these helps I shall undoubtedly succeed. Give me but a few days, and ask not to see the child again till I have brought her to the Hall of the Past."

The young Surgeon had in his hands that well-known case of instruments. "From whom can he have got it?" Wilhelm asked the Doctor. "I know it very well," replied Natalia: "he has it from his father, who dressed your wounds when we found you in the forest."

"Then I have not been mistaken! I recognised the band at once!" cried Wilhelm. "O get it for me! It was this that first gave me any hint of my unknown benefactress. What weal and woe will such a thing survive! Beside how many sorrows has

this band already been, and its threads still hold together! How many men's last moments has it witnessed, and its colours are not yet faded! It was near me in one of the fairest hours of my existence, when I lay wounded on the ground, and your helpful form appeared before me, and the child whom we are now lamenting sat with its bloody hair, busied with the tenderest care to save my life!"

It was not long that our friends could converse about this sad occurrence; that Theresa could inquire about the child, and the probable cause of its unexpected death: for strangers were announced; who, on making their appearance, proved to be well-known strangers. Lothario, Jarno and the Abbé entered. Natalia met her brother: among the rest, there was a momentary silence. Theresa, smiling on Lothario, said: "You scarcely expected to find me here; of course, it would not have been advisable that we should visit one another at the present time: however, after such an absence, take my cordial welcome."

Lothario took her hand, and answered: "If we are to suffer and renounce, it may as well take place in the presence of the object whom we love and wish for. I desire no influence on your determination; my confidence in your heart, in your understanding and clear sense, is still so great, that I willingly commit to your disposal my fate and that of my friend."

The conversation turned immediately to general, nay we may say, to trivial topics. The company soon separated into single pairs, for walking. Natalia was with her brother; Theresa with the Abbé; our friend was left with Jarno in the Castle.

The appearance of the guests at the moment when a heavy sorrow was oppressing Wilhelm, had, instead of dissipating his attention, irritated him and made him worse: he was fretful and suspicious, and unable or uncareful to conceal it, when Jarno questioned him about his sulky silence. "What is the use of saying more?" cried Wilhelm. "Lothario with his helpers is come: and it were strange if those mysterious watchmen of the tower, who are constantly so busy, did not now exert their influence on us, to effect I know not what strange purpose. So far as I have known these saintly gentlemen, it seems to be in every case their laudable endeavour to separate the united, and to unite the separated. What sort of web their weaving will produce, may probably to unholy eyes be forever a riddle."

"You are cross and bitter," said the other; "that is as it should be. Would you get into a proper passion, it were still better."

"That too might come about," said Wilhelm: "I fear much some of you are in the mind to load my patience, natural and acquired, beyond what it will bear."

"In the mean time," said the other, "till we see what *is* to be the issue of the matter, I could like to tell you somewhat of the tower, which you appear to view with such mistrust."

"It stands with you," said Wilhelm, "whether you will risk your eloquence on an attention so distracted. My mind is so engaged at present, that I know not whether I can take a proper interest in these very dignified adventures."

"Your pleasing humour shall not hinder me," said Jarno, "from explaining this affair to you. You reckon me a clever fellow; I want to make you reckon me an honest one; and what is more, on this occasion I am bidden speak."—"I could wish," said Wilhelm, "that you did it of yourself, and with an honest purpose to inform me; but as I cannot hear without suspicion, wherefore should I hear at all?"—"If I have nothing better to do," said Jarno, "than tell you stories, you too have time to listen to me; and to this you may perhaps feel more inclined, when I assure you, that all you saw in the tower was but the relics of a youthful undertaking, in regard to which the greater part of the initiated were once in deep earnest, though all of them now view it with a smile."

"So with these pompous signs and words, you do but mock?" cried Wilhelm. "With a solemn air, you lead us to a place inspiring reverence by its aspect; you make the strangest visions pass before us; you give us rolls full of glorious mystic apophthegms, of which in truth we understand but little; you disclose to us, that hitherto we have been pupils; you solemnly pronounce us free; and we are just as wise as we were."—"Have you not the parchment by you?" said the other. "It contains a deal of sense: those general apophthegms were not picked up at random; though they seem obscure and empty to a man without experiences to recollect while reading them. But give me the Indenture as we call it, if it is at hand."—"Quite at hand," cried Wilhelm; "such an amulet well merits being worn upon one's breast."—"Well," said Jarno, smiling, "who knows whether the contents of it may not one day find place in your head and heart?"

He opened the Roll, and glanced over the first half of it. "This," said he, "regards the cultivation of our gifts for art and science; of which let others speak: the second treats of life; here I am more at home."

He then began to read passages, speaking between whiles, and connecting them with his remarks and narrative. "The taste of youth for secrecy, for ceremonies, for imposing words, is extraordinary; and frequently bespeaks a certain depth of character. In those years, we wish to feel our whole nature seized and moved, *even though* it be but vaguely and darkly. The youth who hap-

pens to have lofty aspirations and forecastings, thinks that secrets yield him much, that he must depend much on secrets, and effect much by means of them. It was with such views that the Abbé favoured a certain Society of young men; partly according to his principle of aiding every tendency of nature, partly out of habit and inclination; for in former times he had himself been joined to an association, which appears to have accomplished many things in secret. For this business I was least of all adapted. I was older than the rest; from youth I had thought clearly; I wished in all things nothing more than clearness; I felt no interest in men, but to know them as they were. With the same taste I gradually infected all the best of our associates; and this circumstance had almost given a false direction to our plan of culture. For we now began to look at nothing but the errors and the narrowness of others, and to think ourselves a set of highly-gifted personages. Here the Abbé came to our assistance: he taught us, that we never should inspect the conduct of men, unless we at the same time took an interest in improving it; and that through action only could we ever be in a condition to inspect and watch ourselves. He advised us, however, to retain the primary forms of the Society: hence there was still a sort of law in our proceedings; the first mystic impressions might be traced in the constitution of the whole. At length, as by a practical similitude, it took the form of a corporate trade, whose business was the arts. Hence came the names of Apprentices, Assistants, and Masters. We wished to see with our own eyes, and to form for ourselves a special record of our own experience in the world. Hence those numerous confessions, which in part we ourselves wrote, in part made others write; and out of which the several *Apprenticeships* were afterwards compiled. The formation of his character is not the chief concern with every man. Many merely wish to find a sort of recipe for comfort, directions for acquiring riches, or whatever good they aim at. All such, when they would not be instructed in their proper duties, we were wont to mystify, to treat with juggleries, and every sort of hocus-pocus, and at length to shove aside. We advanced none to the rank of Masters, but such as clearly felt and recognised the purpose they were born for, and had got enough of practice to proceed along their way with a certain cheerfulness and ease."

"In my case, then," cried Wilhelm, "your ceremony has been very premature; for since the day when you pronounced me free, what I can, will, or shall do, has been more unknown to me than ever."—"We are not to blame for this perplexity; perhaps good fortune will deliver us. In the mean time listen: 'He in whom

there is much to be developed will be later in acquiring true perceptions of himself and of the world. There are few who at once have Thought and the capacity of Action. Thought expands, but lames; Action animates, but narrows.'"

"I beg of you," cried Wilhelm, "not to read me any more of that surprising stuff. These phrases have sufficiently confused me before."—"I will stick by my story then," said Jarno, half rolling up the parchment, into which, however, he kept casting frequent glances. "I myself have been of less service to the cause of our Society and of my fellow-men, than any other member. I am but a bad schoolmaster; I cannot bear to look on people making awkward trials; when I see a person wandering from his path, I feel constrained to call to him, although it were a night-walker going straight to break his neck. On this point, I had a continual struggle with the Abbé, who maintains that error can never be cured except by erring. About you, too, we often argued. He had taken an especial liking to you; and it is saying something to have caught so much of his attention. For me, you must admit, that every time we met, I told you just the naked truth."—"Certainly, you spared me very little," said the other, "and I think you still continue faithful to your principles."—"What is the use of sparing," answered Jarno, "when a young man of many good endowments is taking a quite false direction?"—"Pardon me," said Wilhelm, "you have rigorously enough denied me any talent for the stage; I confess to you, that though I have entirely renounced the art, I cannot think myself entirely incapable."—"And with me," said Jarno, "it is well enough decided, that a person who can only play himself is no player. Whoever cannot change himself, in temper and in form, into many forms, does not deserve the name. Thus you, for example, acted Hamlet and some other characters extremely well; because in these, your form, your disposition, and the temper of the moment suited. For an amateur theatre, for any one who saw no other way before him, this would perhaps have answered well enough. But," continued Jarno, looking on the roll, "'we should guard against a talent which we cannot hope to practise in perfection. Improve it as we may, we shall always in the end, when the merit of the master has become apparent to us, painfully lament the loss of time and strength devoted to such botching.'"

"Do not read!" cried Wilhelm: "I entreat you earnestly; speak on, tell, inform me! So the Abbé aided me in Hamlet: he provided me a Ghost?"—"Yes; for he asserted that it was the only way of curing you, if you were curable."—"And on this account *he left* the veil, and bade me fly?"—"Yes, he hoped that

having fairly acted Hamlet, your desire of acting would be satiated. He maintained that you would never go upon the stage again: I believed the contrary, and I was right. We argued on the subject, that very evening when the play was over."—"You saw me act then?"—"I did indeed."—"And who was it that played the Ghost?"—"That I cannot tell you; either the Abbé or his twin brother; but I think the latter, for he is a little taller."—"You have secrets from each other then?"—"Friends may and must *have* secrets from each other; but they *are* not secrets to each other."

"The very thought of that perplexity perplexes me. Let me understand the man, to whom I owe so many thanks as well as such reproaches."

"What gives him such a value in our estimation," answered Jarno, "what in some degree secures him the dominion over all of us, is the free sharp eye that nature has bestowed on him for all the powers which dwell in man, and are susceptible of cultivation, each according to its kind. Most men, even the most accomplished, are but limited: each prizes certain properties in others and himself; these alone he favours, these alone will he have cultivated. Directly the reverse is the procedure of our Abbé: for every gift he has a feeling; every gift he delights to recognise and forward. But I must look into my roll again! 'It is all men that make up mankind; all powers taken together that make up the world. These are frequently at variance: and as they endeavour to destroy each other, Nature holds them together, and again produces them. From the first animal tendency to handicraft attempts, up to the highest practising of intellectual art; from the inarticulate crowings of the happy infant, up to the polished utterance of the orator and singer; from the first bickerings of boys up to the vast equipments by which countries are conquered and retained; from the slightest kindliness and the most transitory love, up to the fiercest passion and the most earnest covenant; from the merest perception of sensible presence, up to the faintest presentiments and hopes of the remotest spiritual future; all this and much more also lies in man, and must be cultivated: yet not in one, but in many. Every gift is valuable, and ought to be unfolded. When one encourages the beautiful alone, and another encourages the useful alone, it takes them both to form a man. The useful encourages itself; for the multitude produce it, and no one can dispense with it: the beautiful must be encouraged; for few can set it forth, and many need it.'"

"Hold! hold!" cried Wilhelm: "I have read it all."—"Yet a line or two!" said Jarno: "Here is our worthy Abbé to a hair's

breadth: 'One power rules another; none can cultivate another: in each endowment, and not elsewhere, lies the force which must complete it: this many people do not understand, who yet attempt to teach and influence.'"—"I too do not understand it," answered Wilhelm.—"You will often hear the Abbé preach on this text; and, therefore, 'Let us merely keep a clear and steady eye on what is in ourselves; on what endowments of our own we mean to cultivate; let us be just to others; for we ourselves are only to be valued, in so far as we can value.'"—"For Heaven's sake, no more of these wise saws! I feel them to be but a sorry balsam for a wounded heart. Tell me rather, with your cruel settledness, what you expect of me, how and in what manner you intend to sacrifice me."—"For every such suspicion, I assure you, you will afterwards beg our pardon. It is your affair to try and choose; it is ours to aid you. A man is never happy till his vague striving has itself marked out its proper limitation. It is not to me that you must look, but to the Abbé: it is not of yourself that you must think, but of what surrounds you. Thus, for instance, learn to understand Lothario's superiority; how his quick and comprehensive vision is inseparably united with activity; how he constantly advances; how he expands his influence, and carries every one along with him. Wherever he may be, he bears a world about with him: his presence animates and kindles. Observe our good Physician, on the other hand! His nature seems to be directly the reverse. If the former only works upon the general whole, and at a distance, the latter turns his piercing eye upon the things that are beside him; he rather furnishes the means for being active, than himself displays or stimulates activity. His conduct is exactly like the conduct of a good domestic manager; he is busied silently, while he provides for each in his peculiar sphere; his knowledge is a constant gathering and expending, a taking in and giving out on the small scale. Perhaps Lothario in a single day might overturn what the other had for years been employed in building up: but perhaps Lothario also might impart to others, in a moment, strength sufficient to restore a hundredfold what he had overturned."—"It is but a sad employment," answered Wilhelm, "to contemplate the sublime advantages of others, at a moment when we are at variance with ourselves. Such contemplations suit the man at ease; not him whom passion and uncertainty are agitating."—"Peacefully and reasonably to contemplate is at no time hurtful," answered Jarno: "and while we use ourselves to think of the advantages of others, our own mind comes insensibly to imitate them; and every false activity, *to which* our fancy was alluring us, is then willingly abandoned.

Free your mind, if you can, from all suspicion and anxiety. Here comes the Abbé: be courteous towards him, till you have learned still farther what you owe him. The rogue! There he goes between Natalia and Theresa; I could bet he is contriving something. As in general he likes to act the part of Destiny a little; so he does not fail to show a taste for making matches, when he finds an opportunity."

Wilhelm, whose angry and fretful humour all the placid prudent words of Jarno had not bettered, thought his friend exceedingly indelicate for mentioning marriage at a moment like the present; he answered with a smile indeed, but a rather bitter one: "I thought the taste for making matches had been left to those that had a taste for one another."

CHAPTER VI.

THE company had met again; the conversation of our friends was necessarily interrupted. Ere long a courier was announced, as wishing to deliver with his own hand a letter to Lothario. The man was introduced: he had a vigorous sufficient look; his livery was rich and handsome. Wilhelm thought he knew him: nor was he mistaken; for it was the man whom he had sent to seek Philina and the fancied Mariana, and who never came back. Our friend was about to address him, when Lothario, who had read the letter, asked the courier with a serious, almost angry tone: "What is your master's name?"

"Of all questions," said the other with a prudent air, "this is the one which I am least prepared to answer. I hope the letter will communicate the necessary information: verbally I have been charged with nothing."

"Be it as it will," replied Lothario with a smile; "since your master puts such trust in me as to indite a letter so exceedingly facetious, he shall be welcome to us."—"He will not keep you long waiting for him," said the courier with a bow, and withdrew.

"Do but hear the distracted stupid message," said Lothario. "'As of all guests, Good Humour is believed to be the most agreeable wherever he appears, and as I always keep that gentleman beside me by way of travelling companion, I feel persuaded that the visit I intend to pay your noble Lordship will not be taken ill; on the contrary, I hope the whole of your illustrious family will witness my arrival with complete satisfaction', and in

due time also my departure; being always, *et cetera*, Count of Snailfoot.'"

"'Tis a new family," said the Abbé.

"A vicariat count, perhaps," said Jarno.

"The secret is easy to unriddle," said Natalia: "I wager it is none but brother Friedrich, who has threatened us with a visit ever since my uncle's death."

"Right! fair and skilful sister!" cried a voice from the nearest thicket; and immediately a pleasant, cheerful youth stept forward. Wilhelm could scarcely restrain a cry of wonder. "How?" exclaimed he: "Does our fair-haired knave, too, meet me here?" Friedrich looked attentively, and recognising Wilhelm, cried: "In truth it would not have astonished me so much to have beheld the famous Pyramids, which still stand fast in Egypt, or the grave of King Mausolus, which, as I am told, does not exist, here placed before me in my uncle's garden, as to find you in it, my old friend, and frequent benefactor. Accept my best and heartiest service!"

After he had kissed and complimented the whole circle, he again sprang towards Wilhelm, crying: "Use him well, this hero, this leader of armies, and dramatical philosopher! When we became acquainted first, I dressed his hair indifferently, I may say execrably; yet he afterwards saved me from a pretty load of blows. He is magnanimous as Scipio, munificent as Alexander; at times he is in love, yet he never hates his rivals. Far from heaping coals of fire on the heads of his enemies,—a piece of service, I am told, which we can do for any one,—he rather, when his friends have carried off his love, despatches good and trusty servants after them, that they may not strike their feet against a stone."

In the same style, he ran along with a volubility which baffled all attempts to restrain it; and as no one could reply to him in that vein, he had the conversation mostly to himself. "Do not wonder," cried he, "that I am so profoundly versed in sacred and profane writers: you shall hear by and by how I attained my learning." They wished to know how matters stood with him, where he had been; but crowds of proverbs and old stories choked his explanation.

Natalia whispered to Theresa: "His gaiety afflicts me; I am sure at heart he is not merry."

As, except a few jokes which Jarno answered, Friedrich's merriment was met by no response from those about him, he was obliged at last to say: "Well, there is nothing left for me, but among so many grave faces to be grave myself. And as in such a solemn scene, the burden of my sins falls heavy on my soul, I must hon-

estly resolve upon a general confession; for which, however, you, my worthy gentlemen and ladies, shall not be a jot the wiser. This honourable friend already knows a little of my walk and conversation; he alone shall know the rest; and this the rather, as he alone has any cause to ask about it. Are not you," continued he to Wilhelm, "curious about the how and where, the when and wherefore? And how it stands with the conjugation of the Greek verb φιλέω, φιλῶ, and the derivatives of that very amiable part of speech?'

He then took Wilhelm by the arm, and led him off, pressing him and skipping round him with the liveliest air of kindness.

Scarcely had they entered Wilhelm's room, when Friedrich noticed, in the window, a powder-knife, with the inscription, *Think of me.* "You keep your valuables well laid up!" said he: "This is the powder-knife Philina gave you, when I pulled your locks for you. I hope, in looking at it, you have diligently thought of that fair damsel: I assure you, she has not forgotten you; if I had not long ago obliterated every trace of jealousy from my heart, I could not look on you without envy."

"Talk no more of that creature," answered Wilhelm. "I confess, it was a while before I could get rid of the impression, which her looks and manner made on me; but that was all."

"Fy! fy!" cried Friedrich: "would any one deny his deary? You loved her as completely as a man could wish. No day passed without your giving her some present; and when a German gives, you may be sure he loves. No alternative remained for me but whisking her away from you; and in this the little red officer at last succeeded."

"How! You were the officer whom we discovered with her, whom she travelled off with?"

"Yes," said Friedrich, "whom you took for Mariana. We had sport enough at the mistake."

"What cruelty," cried Wilhelm, "to leave me in such suspense!"

"And besides to take the courier, whom you sent to catch us, into pay!" said Friedrich. "He is a very active fellow; we have kept him by us ever since. And the girl herself I love as desperately as ever. She has managed me in some peculiar style: I am almost in a mythologic case; every day I tremble at the thought of being metamorphosed."

"But tell me, pray," said Wilhelm, "where have you acquired this stock of erudition? It surprises me to hear the strange way you have assumed of speaking always with a reference to ancient histories and fables."

"It was by a pleasant plan," said Friedrich, "that I got my learning. Philina lives with me at present: we have got a lease of an old knightly castle from the farmer in whose ground it is: and there we live, with the hobgoblins of the place, as merrily as possible. In one of the rooms, we found a small but choice library, consisting of a folio *Bible*, *Gottfried's Chronicle*, two volumes of the *Theatrum Europæum*, an *Acerra Philologica*, *Gryphius' Writings*, and some other less important works. As we now and then, when tired of romping, felt the time hang heavy on our hands, we proposed to read some books; and before we were aware, the time hung heavier than ever. At last, Philina hit upon the royal plan of laying all the tomes, opened at once, upon a large table: we sat down opposite to one another: we read to one another; always in detached passages, first from this book, then from that. Here was a proper pleasure! We felt now as if we were in good society, where it is reckoned unbecoming to dwell on any subject, or search it to the bottom; we thought ourselves in witty gay society, where none will let his neighbour speak. We regularly treat ourselves with this diversion every day; and the erudition we obtain from it is quite surprising. Already there is nothing new for us under the sun; on everything we see or hear, our learning offers us a hint. This method of instruction we diversify in many ways. Frequently we read by an old spoiled sand-glass, which runs in a minute or two. The moment it is down, the silent party turns it round like lightning, and commences reading from his book; and no sooner is it down again, than the other cuts him short, and starts the former topic. Thus we study in a truly academic manner: only our hours are shorter, and our studies are extremely varied."

"This rioting is quite conceivable," said Wilhelm, "when a pair like you two are together: but how a pair so full of frolic stay together, does not seem so easily conceivable."

"It is our good fortune," answered Friedrich, "and our bad. Philina dare not let herself be seen, she cannot bear to see herself, she is in the family way. Nothing ever was so ludicrous and shapeless in the world. A little while before I came away, she chanced to cast an eye upon the looking-glass in passing. 'Faugh!' cried she, and turned away her face: 'the living picture of the Frau Melina! Shocking figure! One looks entirely deplorable!'"

"I confess," said Wilhelm with a smile, "it must be rather farcical to see a father and a mother such as you and she together."

"'Tis a foolish business," answered Friedrich, "that I must, at

last, be raised to the paternal dignity. But she asserts, and the time agrees. At first that cursed visit which she paid you after Hamlet gave me qualms."

"What visit?"

"I suppose you have not quite slept off the memory of it yet? The pretty, flesh-and-blood spirit of that night, if you do not know it, was Philina. The story was in truth a hard dower for me; but if we cannot be content with such things, we should not be in love. Fatherhood at any rate depends entirely upon conviction: I am convinced, and so I am a father. There, you see, I can employ my logic in the proper season too. And if the brat do not laugh itself to death so soon as it is born, it may prove, if not a useful, at least a pleasant citizen of this world."

Whilst our friends were talking thus of mirthful subjects, the rest of the party had begun a serious conversation. Scarcely were Friedrich and Wilhelm gone, when the Abbé led his friends, as if by chance, into a garden-house; and having got them seated, thus addressed them:

"We have in general terms asserted that Fräulein Theresa was not the daughter of her reputed mother: it is fit that we should now explain ourselves on this matter, in detail. I shall relate the story to you, which I undertake to prove and to elucidate in every point.

"Frau von *** spent the first years of her wedlock in the utmost concord with her husband; only they had this misfortune, that the children she brought him came into the world dead; and on occasion of the third, the mother was declared by the physicians to be on the verge of death, and to be sure of death if she should ever have another. The parties were obliged to take their resolution: they would not break the marriage; it was too suitable to both, in a civil point of view. Frau von *** sought in the culture of her mind, in a certain habit of display, in the joys of vanity, a compensation for the happiness of motherhood which was refused her. She cheerfully indulged her husband, when she noticed in him an attachment to a young lady, who had sole charge of their domestic economy; a person of beautiful exterior, and very solid character. Frau von *** herself, ere long, assisted in procuring an arrangement; by which the lady yielded to the wishes of Theresa's father; continuing to discharge her household duties, and testifying to the mistress of the family, if possible, a more submissive zeal to serve her than before.

"After a while, she declared herself with child: and both the father and his wife, on this occasion, though from very different causes, fell upon the same idea. Herr von *** wished to have

the offspring of his mistress educated in the house as his lawful child; and Frau von ***, angry that the indiscretion of her Doctor had allowed some whisper of her condition to go abroad, proposed by a supposititious child to counteract this; and likewise to retain, by such compliance, the superiority in her household, which otherwise she was like to lose. However, she was more backward than her husband: she observed his purpose; and contrived, without any formal question, to facilitate his explanation. She made her own terms; obtaining almost everything that she required; and hence the will, in which so little care was taken of the child. The old Doctor was dead: they applied to a young, active and discreet successor; he was well rewarded; he looked forward to the credit of exposing and remedying the unskilfulness and premature decision of his deceased colleague. The true mother, not unwillingly, consented; they managed the deception very well; Theresa came into the world, and was surrendered to a step-mother, while her mother fell a victim to the plot; having died by venturing out too early, and left the father inconsolable.

"Frau von *** had thus attained her object; in the eyes of the world she had a lovely child, which she paraded with excessive vanity; and she had also been delivered from a rival, whose fortune she envied, and whose influence, at least in prospect, she beheld with apprehension. The infant she loaded with her tenderness; and by affecting, in trustful hours, a lively feeling for her husband's loss, she gained mastery of his heart; so that in a manner he surrendered all to her; laid his own happiness and that of his child in her hands; nor was it till a short while prior to his death, and in some degree by the exertions of his grown-up daughter, that he again assumed the rule in his own house. This, fair Theresa, was in all probability the secret, which your father, in his last sickness, so struggled to communicate; this is what I wished to lay circumstantially before you, at a moment when our young friend, who by a strange concurrence has become your bridegroom, happens to be absent. Here are the papers, which will prove in the most rigorous manner everything that I have stated. You will also see from them how long I have been following the trace of this discovery, though till now I could never attain certainty respecting it. I did not risk imparting to my friend the possibility of such a happiness; it would have wounded him too deeply, had this hope a second time deceived him. You will understand poor Lydia's suspicions: I readily confess, I nowise favoured the attachment of our friend to her, whenever I began to look for a connexion with Theresa."

To this recital no one replied. The ladies, some days after-

wards, returned the papers, not making any farther mention of them.

There were other matters in abundance to engage the party when they were together; and the scenery around was so delightful, that our friends, singly or in company, on horseback, in carriages, or on foot, delighted to explore it. On one of these excursions, Jarno took an opportunity of opening the affair to Wilhelm: he delivered him the papers; not, however, seeming to require from him any resolution in regard to them.

"In the singular position I am placed in," said our friend, "I need only repeat to you what I said at first, in presence of Natalia, and with the clear intention to fulfil it. Lothario and his friends may require of me every sort of self-denial: I here abandon in their favour all pretension to Theresa; do you procure me, in return, a formal discharge. There requires no great reflection to decide. For some days, I have noticed that Theresa has to make an effort in retaining any show of the vivacity with which she welcomed me at first. Her affection is gone from me, or rather I have never had it."

"Such affairs are more conveniently explained," said Jarno, "by a gradual process, in silence and expectation, than by many words, which always cause a sort of fermentation and embarrassment."

"I rather think," said Wilhelm, "that precisely this affair admits of the most clear and calm decision on the spot. I have often been reproached with hesitation and uncertainty: why will you now, when I do not hesitate, commit against myself the fault you have often blamed in me? Do our neighbours take such trouble with our training, only to let us feel that they themselves are untrained? Yes, grant me soon the cheerful thought that I am out of a mistaken project, into which I entered with the purest feelings in the world."

Notwithstanding this request, some days elapsed without his hearing any more of the affair, or observing any farther alteration in his friends. The conversation, on the contrary, was general and of indifferent matters.

CHAPTER VII.

JARNO and Wilhelm were sitting one day by Natalia. "You are thoughtful, Jarno," said the lady; "I have seen it in your looks for some time."

"I am so," answered Jarno: "a weighty business is before me,

which we have for years been meditating, and must now begin to execute. You already know the outline of it: I may speak of it before our friend; for it will depend on himself, whether he too shall not share in it. You are going to get rid of me, before long: I mean to take a voyage to America."

"To America?" said Wilhelm smiling: "Such an adventure I did not anticipate from you; still less that you would have selected me for a companion."

"When you rightly understand our plan," said Jarno, "you will give it a more honourable name; and perhaps yourself be tempted to embark in it. Listen to me. It requires but a slight acquaintance with the business of the world to see that mighty changes are at hand, that property is almost nowhere quite secure."

"Of the business of the world I have no clear notion," interrupted Wilhelm; "and it is but of late that I ever thought about my property. Perhaps I had done well to drive it out of my head still longer; the care of securing it, appears to give us hypochondria."

"Hear me out," said Jarno: "Care beseems ripe age, that youth may live for a time free from care: in the conduct of poor mortals, equilibrium cannot be restored except by contraries. As matters go, it is anything but prudent to have property in only one place, to commit your money to a single spot; and it is difficult again to guide it well in many. We have therefore thought of something else. From our old tower there is a society to issue, which must spread itself through every quarter of the world, and to which members from every quarter of the world shall be admissible. We shall insure a competent subsistence to each other, in the single case of a revolution happening, which might drive any part of us entirely from their possessions. I am now proceeding to America, to profit by the good connexions which our friend established while he stayed there. The Abbé means to go to Russia: if you like to join us, you shall have the choice of continuing in Germany to help Lothario, or of accompanying me. I conjecture you will choose the latter: to take a distant journey is extremely serviceable to a young man."

Wilhelm thought a moment, and replied: "The offer well deserves consideration; for ere long the word with me must be, The farther off the better. You will let me know your plan, I hope, more perfectly. It is perhaps my ignorance of life that makes me think so; but such a combination seems to me to be attended with insuperable difficulties."

"The most of which, till now, have been avoided," answered

Jarno, "by the circumstance, that we have been but few in number, honourable, discreet, determined people, animated by a certain general feeling, out of which alone the feeling proper for societies can spring."—"And if you speak me fair," said Friedrich, who hitherto had only listened, "I too will go along with you."

Jarno shook his head.

"Well, what objections can you make?" cried Friedrich. "In a new colony, young colonists will be required; these I bring with me: merry colonists will also be required; of these I make you certain. Besides, I recollect a certain damsel, who is out of place on this side of the water, the fair, soft-hearted Lydia. What is the poor thing to do with her sorrow and mourning, unless she get an opportunity to throw it to the bottom of the sea, unless some brave fellow take her by the hand? You, my benefactor," said he, turning towards Wilhelm, "you have a taste for comforting forsaken persons: what withholds you now? Each of us might take his girl under his arm, and trudge with Jarno."

This proposal struck Wilhelm offensively. He answered with affected calmness: "I know not whether she is unengaged; and as in general I seem to be unfortunate in courtship, I shall hardly think of making the attempt."

"Brother Friedrich," said Natalia, "though thy own conduct is so full of levity, it does not follow that such sentiments will answer others. Our friend deserves a heart that shall belong to him alone, that shall not at his side be moved by foreign recollections. It was only with a character as pure and reasonable as Theresa's, that such a venture could be risked."

"Risk!" cried Friedrich: "In love it is all risk. In the grove or at the altar, with a clasp of the arms or a golden ring, by the chirping of the cricket or the sound of trumpets and kettle-drums, it is all but a risk; chance does it all."

"I have often noticed," said Natalia, "that our principles are just a supplement to our peculiar manner of existence. We delight to clothe our errors in the garb of universal laws; to attribute them to irresistibly appointed causes. Do but think, by what a path thy dear will lead thee, now that she has drawn thee towards her, and holds thee fast there."

"She herself is on a very pretty path," said Friedrich, "on the path to saintship. A by-path, it is true, and somewhat roundabout; but the pleasanter and surer for that. Maria of Magdala travelled it, and who can say how many more? But on the whole, sister, when the point in hand is love, thou shouldst not mingle in it. In my opinion, thou wilt never marry, till a bride is lacking

somewhere; in that case, thou wilt give thyself, with thy habitual charity, to be the supplement of some peculiar manner of existence; not otherwise. So let us strike a bargain with this soul-broker, and agree about our travelling company."

"You come too late with your proposals," answered Jarno; "Lydia is disposed of."

"And how?" cried Friedrich.

"I myself have offered her my hand," said Jarno.

"Old gentleman," said Friedrich, "you have done a feat to which, if we regard it as a substantive, various adjectives might be appended; various predicates, if we regard it as a subject."

"I must honestly confess," replied Natalia, "it appears a dangerous experiment to make a helpmate of a woman, at the very moment when her love for another man is like to drive her to despair."

"I have ventured," answered Jarno; "under a certain stipulation, she is to be mine. And, believe me, there is nothing in the world more precious than a heart susceptible of love and passion. Whether it has loved, whether it still loves, are points which I regard not. The love of which another is the object, charms me almost more than that which is directed to myself. I see the strength, the force of a tender soul, and my self-love does not trouble the delightful vision."

"Have you talked with Lydia, then, of late?" inquired Natalia.

Jarno smiled and nodded: Natalia shook her head, and said as he rose: "I really know not what to make of you; but me you shall not mystify, I promise you."

She was about retiring, when the Abbé entered with a letter in his hand. "Stay, if you please," said he to her: "I have a proposal here, respecting which your counsel will be welcome. The Marchese, your late uncle's friend, whom for some time we have been expecting, will be here in a day or two. He writes to me, that German is not so familiar to him as he had supposed; that he needs a person who possesses this and other languages to travel with him; that as he wishes to connect himself with scientific rather than political society, he cannot do without some such interpreter. I can think of no one better suited for the post than our young friend here. He knows the language; is acquainted with many things beside; and for himself, it cannot but be advantageous to travel over Germany in such society and such circumstances. Till we have seen our native country, we have no scale to judge of other countries by. What say you, my friend? What say you, Natalia?"

Nobody objected to the scheme: Jarno seemed to think his

Transatlantic project would not be a hindrance, as he did not mean to sail directly. Natalia did not speak; and Friedrich uttered various saws about the uses of travel.

This new project so provoked our friend, that he could hardly conceal his irritation. He saw, in this proposal, a concerted plan for getting rid of him as soon as possible; and what was worse, they went so openly to work, and seemed so utterly regardless of his feelings. The suspicions Lydia had excited in him, all that he himself had witnessed, rose again upon his mind; the simple manner in which everything had been explained by Jarno, now appeared to him another piece of artifice.

He constrained himself, and answered: "At all events, the offer will require mature deliberation."

"A quick decision may perhaps be necessary," said the Abbé.

"For that I am not prepared," answered Wilhelm. "We can wait till the Marchese comes, and then observe if we agree together. One condition must, however, be conceded first of all: that I take Felix with me."

"This is a condition," said the Abbé, "which will scarcely be conceded."

"And I do not see," cried Wilhelm, "why I should let any man prescribe conditions to me: or why, if I choose to view my native country, I must go in company with an Italian."

"Because a young man," said the Abbé, with a certain imposing earnestness, "is always called upon to form connexions."

Wilhelm, feeling that he could not long retain his self-command, as it was Natalia's presence only which in some degree assuaged his indignation, hastily made answer: "Give me a little while to think. I imagine it will not be very hard to settle whether I am called upon to form additional connexions; or ordered irresistibly, by heart and head, to free myself from such a multiplicity of bonds, which seem to threaten me with a perpetual, miserable thraldom."

Thus he spoke, with a deeply-agitated mind. A glance at Natalia somewhat calmed him: her form and dignity, in this impassioned moment, stamped themselves more deeply on his mind than ever.

"Yes," said he, so soon as he was by himself, "confess it, thou lovest her; thou once more feelest what it means to love with thy whole soul. Thus did I love Mariana, and deceive myself so dreadfully; I loved Philina, and could not help despising her. Aurelia I respected, and could not love: Theresa I reverenced, and paternal tenderness assumed the form of an affection for her. And now when all the feelings that can make a mortal happy

meet within my heart, now am I compelled to fly! Ah! why should these feelings and convictions be combined with an insuperable longing? Why, without the hope of its fulfilment, should they utterly subvert all other happiness? Shall the sun and the world, society or any other gift of fortune, ever henceforth yield me pleasure? Shalt thou not forever say: Natalia is not here! And yet, alas, Natalia will be always present to thee! If thou closest thy eyes, she will appear to thee; if thou openest them, her form will flit before all outward things, like the image which a dazzling object leaves behind it in the eye. Did not the swiftly-passing figure of the Amazon dwell continually in thy imagination? And yet thou hadst but seen her, thou didst not know her. Now, when thou knowest her, when thou hast been so long beside her, when she has shown such care about thee; now are her qualities impressed as deeply upon thy soul, as her form was then upon thy fancy. It is painful to be always seeking; but far more painful to have found, and to be forced to leave. What now shall I ask for farther in the world? What now shall I look for farther? Is there a country, a city that contains a treasure such as this? And I must travel on, and ever find inferiority? Is life then like a race-course, where a man must rapidly return, when he has reached the utmost end? Does the good, the excellent stand before us like a firm unmoving goal, from which with fleet horses we are forced away, the instant we appeared to have attained it? Happier are they who strive for earthly wares! They find what they are seeking in its proper climate, or they buy it in the fair.

"Come, my own boy!" cried he to Felix, who now ran frisking towards him: "be thou, and remain thou, all to me! Thou wert given me as a compensation for thy loved mother; thou wert to replace the second mother whom I meant for thee; and now thou hast a loss still greater to make good. Occupy my heart, occupy my spirit with thy beauty, thy loveliness, thy capabilities, and thy desire to use them!"

The boy was busied with a new plaything; his father tried to put it in a better state for him; just as he succeeded, Felix had lost all pleasure in it. "Thou art a true son of Adam!" cried Wilhelm: "Come, my child! Come, my brother! let us wander, playing without object, through the world, as we best may."

His resolution to remove, to take the boy along with him, and recreate his mind by looking at the world, had now assumed a settled form. He wrote to Werner for the necessary cash and letters of credit; sending Friedrich's courier on the message, with *the strictest* charges to return immediately. Much as the con-

duct of his other friends had grieved him, his relation to Natalia remained serene and clear as ever.

He confided to her his intention: she took it as a settled thing that he would go; and if this seeming carelessness in her chagrined him, her kindly manner and her presence made him calm. She counselled him to visit various towns, that he might get acquainted with certain of her friends. The courier returned, and brought the letter which our friend required, though Werner did not seem content with this new whim. "My hope that thou wert growing reasonable," so the letter ran, "is now again deferred. Where are you all gadding? And where lingers the lady, who, thou saidst, was to assist us in arranging these affairs? Thy other friends are also absent: they have thrown the whole concern upon the shoulders of the Lawyer and myself. Happy that he is as expert a jurist, as I am a financier; and that both of us are used to business. Fare thee well! Thy aberrations shall be pardoned thee; since but for them, our situation here could not have been so favourable."

So far as outward matters were concerned, Wilhelm might now have entered on his journey; but there were still, for his heart, two hindrances that held him fast. In the first place, they flatly refused to show him Mignon's body, till the funeral the Abbé meant to celebrate; and for this solemnity, the preparations were not ready. There had also been a curious letter from the country Clergyman, in consequence of which the Doctor had gone off. It related to the Harper; of whose fate Wilhelm wanted to have farther information.

In these circumstances, day or night he found no rest for mind or body. When all were asleep, he wandered up and down the house. The presence of the pictures and statues, which he knew so well of old, alternately attracted and repelled him. Nothing that surrounded him could he lay hold of or let go; all things reminded him of all; the whole ring of his existence lay before him; but it was broken into fragments, and seemed as if it would never unite again. These works of art, which his father had sold, appeared to him an omen that he himself was destined never to obtain a lasting calm possession of anything desirable in life, or always to be robbed of it so soon as gained, by his own or other people's blame. He waded so deep in these strange and dreary meditations, that often he almost thought himself a disembodied spirit; and even when he felt and handled things without him, he could scarcely keep himself from doubting whether he was really there and alive.

Nothing but the piercing grief, which often seized him, but

the tears he shed at being forced, by causes frivolous as they were irresistible, to leave the good which he had found, and found after having lost it,—restored him to the feeling of his earthly life. It was in vain to call before his mind his happy state in other respects. "All is nothing then," exclaimed he, "if the one blessing, which appears to us worth all the rest, is wanting!"

The Abbé told the company that the Marchese was arrived. "You have determined, it appears," said he to Wilhelm, "to set out upon your travels with your boy alone. Get acquainted with this nobleman, however; he will be useful to you, if you meet him by the way." The Marchese entered: he was a person not yet very far advanced in years; a fine, handsome, pleasing Lombard figure. In his youth, while in the army and afterwards in public business, he had known Lothario's uncle; they had subsequently travelled through the greater part of Italy together; and many of the works of art, which the Marchese now again fell in with, had been purchased in his presence, and under various happy circumstances, which he still distinctly recollected.

The Italians have in general a deeper feeling for the high dignity of art than any other nation. In Italy, whoever follows the employment, tries to pass at once for artist, master and professor: by which pretensions, he acknowledges at least that it is not sufficient merely to lay hold of some transmitted excellency, or to acquire by practice some dexterity; but that a man who aims at art, should have the power to think of what he does, to lay down principles, and make apparent to himself and others how and wherefore he proceeds in this way or in that.

The stranger was affected at again beholding these productions, when the owner of them was no more; and cheered to see the spirit of his friend surviving in the gifted persons left behind him. They discussed a series of works; they found a lively satisfaction in the harmony of their ideas. The Marchese and the Abbé were the speakers; Natalia felt herself again transported to the presence of her uncle, and could enter without difficulty into their opinions and criticisms; Wilhelm could not understand them, except as he translated their technology into dramatic language. Friedrich's facetious vein was sometimes rather difficult to keep in check. Jarno was seldom there.

It being observed that excellent works of art were very rare in latter times, it was remarked by the Marchese: "We can hardly think or estimate how many circumstances must combine in favour of the artist: with the greatest genius, with the most decisive talent, the demands which he must make upon himself are infinite, *the diligence* required in cultivating his endowments is unspeak-

able. Now, if circumstances are not in his favour; if he observe that the world is very easy to be satisfied, requiring but a slight, pleasing, transitory show; it were matter of surprise, if indolence and selfishness did not keep him fixed at mediocrity; it were strange if he did not rather think of bartering modish wares for gold and praises, than of entering on the proper path, which could not fail in some degree to lead him to a sort of painful martyrdom. Accordingly, the artists of our time are always offering and never giving. They always aim at charming, and they never satisfy: everything is merely indicated; you can nowhere find foundation or completion. Those for whom they labour, it is true, are little better. If you wait awhile in any gallery of pictures, and observe what works attract the many, what are praised and what neglected, you have little pleasure in the present, little hope in the future."

"Yes," replied the Abbé; "and thus it is that artists and their judges mutually form each other. The latter ask for nothing but a general vague enjoyment, a work of art is to delight them almost as a work of nature; they imagine that the organs for enjoying works of art may be cultivated altogether of themselves, like the tongue and the palate; they try a picture or a poem as they do an article of food. They do not understand how very different a species of culture it requires to raise one to the true enjoyment of art. The hardest part of it, in my opinion, is that sort of separation, which a man that aims at perfect culture must accomplish in himself. It is on this account that we observe so many people partially cultivated; and yet every one of them attempting to pronounce upon the general whole."

"Your last remark is not quite clear to me," said Jarno, who came in just then.

"It would be difficult," replied the Abbé, "to explain it fully without a long detail. Thus much I may say: When any man pretends to mix in manifold activity or manifold enjoyment, he must also be enabled as it were to make his organs manifold and independent of each other. Whoever aims at doing or enjoying all and everything with his entire nature; whoever tries to link together all that is without him by such a species of enjoyment, will only lose his time in efforts that can never be successful. How difficult, though it seems so easy, is it to contemplate a noble disposition, a fine picture simply in and for itself; to watch the music for the music's sake; to admire the actor in the actor; to take pleasure in a building for its own peculiar harmony and durability! Most men are wont to treat a work of art, though fixed and done, as if it were a piece of soft clay. The hard and polished marble is again to mould itself, the firm-walled edifice is

to contract or to expand itself, according as their inclinations, sentiments and whims may dictate; the picture is to be instructive, the play to make us better, everything is to do all. The reason is, that most men are themselves unformed, they cannot give themselves and their being any certain shape: and thus they strive to take from other things their proper shape, that all they have to do with may be loose and wavering like themselves. Everything is, in the long-run, reduced by them to what they call effect; everything is relative, say they; and so indeed it is; everything with them grows relative, except absurdity and platitude, which truly are absolute enough."

"I understand you," answered Jarno; "or rather I perceive how what you have been saying follows from the principles you hold so fast by. Yet with men, poor devils, we should not go to quest so strictly. I know enow of them in truth, who, beside the greatest works of art and nature, forthwith recollect their own most paltry insufficiency; who take their conscience and their morals with them to the opera; who bethink them of their loves and hatreds in contemplating a colonnade. The best and greatest that can be presented to them from without, they must first, as far as possible, diminish in their way of representing it, that they may in any measure be enabled to combine it with their own sorry nature."

CHAPTER VIII.

THE Abbé called them, in the evening, to attend the exequies of Mignon. The company proceeded to the Hall of the Past; they found it magnificently ornamented and illuminated. The walls were hung with azure tapestry almost from ceiling to floor, so that nothing but the friezes and socles, above and below, were visible. On the four candelabras in the corners, large wax-lights were burning; smaller lights were in the four smaller candelabras placed by the sarcophagus in the middle. Near this stood four Boys, dressed in azure with silver; they had broad fans of ostrich feathers, which they waved above a figure that was resting upon the sarcophagus. The company sat down: two invisible Choruses began in a soft musical recitative to ask: "Whom bring ye us to the still dwelling?" The four Boys replied with lovely voices: "'Tis a tired playmate whom we bring you; let her rest in your still dwelling, till the songs of her heavenly sisters once more awaken her."

CHORUS.

Firstling of youth in our circle, we welcome thee! With sadness welcome thee! May no boy, no maiden follow! Let age only, willing and composed, approach the silent Hall, and in the solemn company, repose this one dear child!

BOYS.

Ah, reluctantly we brought her hither! Ah, and she is to remain here! Let us too remain; let us weep, let us weep upon her bier!

CHORUS.

Yet look at the strong wings; look at the light clear robe! How glitters the golden band upon her head! Look at the beautiful, the noble repose!

BOYS.

Ah! the wings do not raise her; in the frolic game, her robe flutters to and fro no more; when we bound her head with roses, her looks on us were kind and friendly.

CHORUS.

Cast forward the eye of the spirit! Awake in your souls the imaginative power, which carries forth, what is fairest, what is highest, Life, away beyond the stars.

BOYS.

But ah! we find her not here; in the garden she wanders not; the flowers of the meadow she plucks no longer. Let us weep, we are leaving her here! Let us weep and remain with her!

CHORUS.

Children, turn back into life! Your tears let the fresh air dry, which plays upon the rushing water. Fly from Night! Day and Pleasure and Continuance are the lot of the living.

BOYS.

Up! Turn back into life! Let the day give us labour and pleasure, till the evening brings us rest, and the nightly sleep refreshes us.

CHORUS.

Children! Hasten into life! In the pure garments of beauty, may Love meet you with heavenly looks and with the wreath of immortality!

The Boys had retired; the Abbé rose from his seat, and went

behind the bier. "It is the appointment," said he, "of the Man who prepared this silent abode, that each new tenant of it shall be introduced with a solemnity. After him, the builder of this mansion, the founder of this establishment, we have next brought a young stranger hither; and thus already does this little space contain two altogether different victims of the rigorous, arbitrary, and inexorable Death-goddess. By appointed laws we enter into life; the days are numbered which make us ripe to see the light; but for the duration of our life there is no law. The weakest thread will spin itself to unexpected length; and the strongest is cut suddenly asunder by the scissors of the Fates, delighting, as it seems, in contradictions. Of the child, whom we have here committed to her final rest, we can say but little. It is still uncertain whence she came; her parents we know not; the years of her life we can only conjecture. Her deep and closely-shrouded soul allowed us scarce to guess at its interior movements: there was nothing clear in her, nothing open but her affection for the man, who had snatched her from the hands of a barbarian. This impassioned tenderness, this vivid gratitude, appeared to be the flame which consumed the oil of her life: the skill of the physician could not save that fair life, the most anxious friendship could not lengthen it. But if art could not stay the departing spirit, it has done its utmost to preserve the body, and withdraw it from decay. A balsamic substance has been forced through all the veins, and now tinges, in place of blood, these cheeks too early faded. Come near, my friends, and view this wonder of art and care!"

He raised the veil: the child was lying in her angel's-dress, as if asleep, in the most soft and graceful posture. They approached, and admired this show of life. Wilhelm alone continued sitting in his place: he was not able to compose himself: what he felt, he durst not think; and every thought seemed ready to destroy his feeling.

For the sake of the Marchese, the speech had been pronounced in French. That nobleman came forward with the rest, and viewed the figure with attention. The Abbé thus proceeded. "With a holy confidence, this kind heart, shut up to men, was continually turned to its God. Humility, nay an inclination to abase herself externally, seemed natural to her. She clave with zeal to the Catholic religion, in which she had been born and educated. Often she expressed a still wish to sleep on consecrated ground: and according to the usage of the church, we have therefore consecrated this marble coffin, and the little earth which is hidden in *the cu*shion that supports her head. With what ardour did she

in her last moments kiss the image of the Crucified, which stood beautifully figured on her tender arm, with many hundred points!" So saying, he stripped up her right sleeve; and a crucifix, with marks and letters round it, showed itself in blue upon the white skin.

The Marchese looked at this with eagerness, stooping down to view it more intensely. "O God!" cried he, as he stood upright, and raised his hands to Heaven: "Poor child! Unhappy niece! Do I meet thee here! What a painful joy to find thee, whom we had long lost hope of; to find this dear frame, which we had long believed the prey of fishes in the ocean, here preserved, though lifeless! I assist at thy funeral, splendid in its external circumstances, still more splendid from the noble persons who attend thee to thy place of rest. And to these," added he with a faltering voice, "so soon as I can speak, I will express my thanks."

Tears hindered him from saying more. By the pressure of a spring, the Abbé sank the body into the cavity of the marble. Four Youths, dressed as the Boys had been, came out from behind the tapestry; and lifting the heavy, beautifully ornamented lid upon the coffin, thus began their song:

THE YOUTHS.

Well is the treasure now laid up; the fair image of the Past! Here sleeps it in the marble, undecaying; in your hearts too it lives, it works. Travel, travel, back into life! Take along with you this holy Earnestness;—for Earnestness alone makes life eternity.

The invisible Chorus joined in with the last words: but no one heard the strengthening sentiment; all were too much busied with themselves, and the emotions which these wonderful disclosures had excited. The Abbé and Natalia conducted the Marchese out; Theresa and Lothario walked by Wilhelm. It was not till the music had altogether died away, that their sorrows, thoughts, meditations, curiosity again fell on them with all their force, and made them long to be transported back into that exalting scene.

CHAPTER IX.

THE Marchese avoided speaking of the matter; but had long secret conversations with the Abbé. When the Company was met, he often asked for music; a request to which they willingly ac-

sented, as each was glad to be delivered from the charge of talking. Thus they lived for some time, till it was observed that he was making preparations for departure. One day he said to Wilhelm: "I wish not to disturb the remains of this beloved child; let her rest in the place where she loved and suffered: but her friends must promise to visit me in her native country; in the scene where she was born and bred; they must see the pillars and statues, of which a dim idea remained with her. I will lead you to the bays, where she liked so well to roam and gather pebbles. You, at least, young friend, shall not escape the gratitude of a family that stands so deeply indebted to you. Tomorrow I set out on my journey. The Abbé is acquainted with the whole history of this matter: he will tell it you again. He could pardon me when grief interrupted my recital; as a third party he will be enabled to narrate the incidents with more connexion. If, as the Abbé had proposed, you like to follow me in travelling over Germany, you shall be heartily welcome. Leave not your boy behind: at every little inconvenience which he causes us, we will again remember your attentive care of my poor niece."

The same evening, our party was surprised by the arrival of the Countess. Wilhelm trembled in every joint as she entered: she herself, though forewarned, kept close by her sister, who speedily reached her a chair. How singularly simple was her attire, how altered was her form! Wilhelm scarcely dared to look at her: she saluted him with a kindly air; a few general words addressed to him did not conceal her sentiments and feelings. The Marchese had retired betimes; and as the company were not disposed to part so early, the Abbé now produced a manuscript. "The singular narrative which was intrusted to me," said he, "I forthwith put on paper. The case where pen and ink should least of all be spared, is in recording the particular circumstances of remarkable events." They informed the Countess of the matter; and the Abbé read as follows, in the name of the Marchese:

"Many men as I have seen, I still regard my father as a very extraordinary person. His character was noble and upright; his ideas were enlarged, I may even say great; to himself he was severe; in all his plans there was a rigid order, in all his operations an unbroken perseverance. In one sense, therefore, it was easy to transact and live with him: yet owing to the very qualities which made it so, he never could accommodate himself to life; for he required from the state, from his neighbours, from his children and his servants, the observance of all the laws which he had laid upon himself. His most moderate demands became exor*bitant* by his rigour: and he never could attain to enjoyment, for

nothing ever was completed as he had forecast it. At the moment when he was erecting a palace, laying out a garden, or acquiring a large estate in the highest cultivation, I have seen him inwardly convinced, with the sternest ire, that Fate had doomed him to do nothing but abstain and suffer. In his exterior, he maintained the greatest dignity; if he jested, it was but displaying the preponderancy of his understanding. Censure was intolerable to him; the only time I ever saw him quite transported with rage, was once when he heard that one of his establishments was spoken of as something ludicrous. In the same spirit, he had settled the disposal of his children and his fortune. My eldest brother was educated as a person that had large estates to look for. I was to embrace the clerical profession; the youngest was to be a soldier. I was of a lively temper; fiery, active, quick, apt for corporeal exercises: the youngest rather seemed inclined to an enthusiastic quietism; devoted to the sciences, to music and poetry. It was not till after the hardest struggle, the maturest conviction of the impossibility of his project, that our father, still reluctantly, agreed to let us change vocations; and although he saw us both contented, he could never suit himself to this arrangement, but declared that nothing good would come of it. The older he grew, the more isolated did he feel himself from all society. At last he came to live almost entirely alone. One old friend, who had served in the German armies, who had lost his wife in the campaign, and brought a daughter of about ten years of age along with him, remained his only visitor. This person bought a fine little property beside us: he used to come and see my father on stated days of the week, and at stated hours; his little daughter often came along with him. He was never heard to contradict my father; who at length grew perfectly habituated to him, and endured him as the only tolerable company he had. After our father's death, we easily observed that this old gentleman had not been visiting for naught, that his compliances had been rewarded by an ample settlement. He enlarged his estates; his daughter might expect a handsome portion. The girl grew up, and was extremely beautiful: my elder brother often joked with me about her, saying I should go and court her.

"Meanwhile brother Augustin, in the seclusion of his cloister, had been spending his years in the strangest state of mind. He abandoned himself wholly to the feeling of a holy enthusiasm, to those half-spiritual, half-physical emotions, which, as they for a time exalted him to the third heaven, ere long sank him down to an abyss of powerlessness and vacant misery. While my father lived, no change could be contemplated: what indeed could we

have asked for or proposed? After the old man's death, our brother visited us frequently: his situation, which at first afflicted us, in time became much more tolerable: for his reason had at length prevailed. But the more confidently reason promised him complete recovery and contentment on the pure path of nature, the more vehemently did he require of us to free him from his vows. His thoughts, he let us know, were turned upon Sperata, our fair neighbour.

"My elder brother had experienced too much suffering from the harshness of our father, to look on the condition of the youngest without sympathy. We spoke with the family confessor, a worthy old man; we signified to him the double purpose of our brother, and requested him to introduce and expedite the business. Contrary to custom, he delayed: and at last, when Augustin pressed us, and we recommended the affair more keenly to the clergyman, he had nothing left but to impart the strange secret to us.

"Sperata was our sister, and that by both her parents. Our mother had declared herself with child at a time when both she and our father were advanced in years: a similar occurrence had shortly before been made the subject of some merriment in our neighbourhood; and our father, to avoid such ridicule, determined to conceal this late lawful fruit of love as carefully as people use to conceal its earlier accidental fruits. Our mother was delivered secretly; the child was carried to the country: and the old friend of the family, who, with the confessor, had alone been trusted with the secret, easily engaged to give her out for his daughter. The confessor had reserved the right of disclosing the secret in case of extremity. The supposed father was now dead; Sperata was living with an old lady; we were aware that a love of song and music had already led our brother to her; and on his again requiring us to undo his former bond, that he might engage himself by a new one, it was necessary that we should, as soon as possible, apprise him of the danger he stood in.

"He viewed us with a wild contemptuous look. 'Spare your idle tales,' cried he, 'for children and credulous fools; from me, from my heart, they shall not tear Sperata; she is mine. Recall, I pray you, instantly, your frightful spectre, which would but harass me in vain. Sperata is not my sister; she is my wife!' He described to us, in rapturous terms, how this heavenly girl had drawn him out of his unnatural state of separation from his fellow-creatures into true life; how their spirits accorded like their voices; how he blessed his sufferings and errors, since they had kept clear of women, till the moment when he wholly and forever gave himself to this most amiable being. We were shocked at the disco-

very, we deplored his situation, but we knew not how to help ourselves, for he declared with violence, that Sperata had a child by him within her bosom. Our confessor did whatever duty could suggest to him, but by this means he only made the evil worse. The relations of nature and religion, moral rights and civil laws, were vehemently attacked and spurned at by our brother. He considered nothing holy but his relation to Sperata; nothing dignified but the names of father and wife. 'These alone,' cried he, 'are suitable to nature; all else is caprice and opinion. Were there not noble nations which admitted marriage with a sister? Name not your gods! You never name them but when you wish to befool us, to lead us from the paths of nature, and, by scandalous constraint, to transform the noblest inclinations into crimes. Unspeakable are the perplexities, abominable the abuses, into which you force the victims whom you bury alive.

"'I may speak, for I have suffered like no other; from the highest, sweetest feeling of enthusiasm, to the frightful deserts of utter powerlessness, vacancy, annihilation and despair; from the loftiest aspirations of preternatural existence, to the most entire unbelief, unbelief in myself. All these horrid grounds of the cup, so flattering at the brim, I have drained; and my whole being was poisoned to its core. And now, when kind nature, by her greatest gift, by love, has healed me; now, when in the arms of a heavenly creature, I again feel that I am, that she is, that out of this living union a third shall arise and smile in our faces; now ye open up the flames of your Hell, of your Purgatory, which can only singe a sick imagination; ye oppose them to the vivid, true, indestructible enjoyment of pure love! Meet us under these cypresses, which turn their solemn tops to heaven; visit us among those espaliers where the citrons and pomegranates bloom beside us, where the graceful myrtle stretches out its tender flowers to us; and then venture to disturb us with your dreary, paltry nets which men have spun!'

"Thus for a long time he persisted in a stubborn disbelief of our story; and when we assured him of its truth, when the confessor himself asseverated it, he did not let it drive him from his point. 'Ask not the echoes of your cloisters, not your mouldering parchments, not your narrow whims and ordinances! Ask nature and your heart; she will teach you what you should recoil from; she will point out to you with the strictest finger, over what she has pronounced her everlasting curse. Look at the lilies: do not husband and wife shoot forth on the same stalk? Does not the flower, which bore them, hold them both? And is not the lily the type of innocence; is not their sisterly union fruitful? When

nature abhors, she speaks it aloud; the creature that shall not be is not produced; the creature that lives with a false life is soon destroyed. Unfruitfulness, painful existence, early destruction, these are her curses, the marks of her displeasure. It is only by immediate consequences that she punishes. Look around you; and what is prohibited, what is accursed, will force itself upon your notice. In the silence of the convent, in the tumult of the world, a thousand practices are consecrated and revered, while her curse rests on them. On stagnant idleness as on overstrained toil, on caprice and superfluity as on constraint and want, she looks down with mournful eyes: her call is to moderation; true are all her commandments, peaceful all her influences. The man who has suffered as I have done has a right to be free. Sperata is mine; death alone shall take her from me. How I shall retain her, how I may be happy, these are your cares! This instant I go to her, and part from her no more.'

"He was for proceeding to the boat, and crossing over to her: we restrained him, entreating that he would not take a step, which might produce the most tremendous consequences. He should recollect, we told him, that he was not living in the free world of his own thoughts and ideas; but in a constitution of affairs, whose ordinances and relations had become inflexible as laws of nature. The confessor made us promise not to let him leave our sight, still less our house: after this he went away, engaging to return ere long. What we had foreseen took place: reason had made our brother strong, but his heart was weak; the earlier impressions of religion rose on him, and dreadful doubts along with them. He passed two fearful nights and days: the confessor came again to his assistance, but in vain! His enfranchised understanding acquitted him: his feelings, religion, all his usual ideas declared him guilty.

"One morning, we found his chamber empty: on the table lay a note, in which he signified that, as we kept him prisoner by force, he felt himself entitled to provide for his freedom; that he meant to go directly to Sperata; he expected to escape with her, and was prepared for the most terrible extremities, should any separation be attempted.

"The news of course affrighted us exceedingly; but the confessor bade us be at rest. Our poor brother had been narrowly enough observed: the boatman, in place of taking him across, proceeded with him to his cloister. Fatigued with watching for the space of four-and-twenty hours, he fell asleep, as the skiff began to rock him in the moonshine; and he did not awake, till he saw himself in the hands of his spiritual brethren; he did not recover

from his amazement, till he heard the doors of the convent bolting behind him.

"Sharply touched at the fate of our brother, we reproached the confessor for his cruelty; but he soon silenced or convinced us by the surgeon's reason, that our pity was destructive to the patient. He let us know that he was not acting on his own authority, but by order of the bishop and his chapter; that by this proceeding, they intended to avoid all public scandal, and to shroud the sad occurrence under the veil of a secret course of discipline prescribed by the Church. Our sister they would spare; she was not to be told that her lover was her brother. The charge of her was given to a priest, to whom she had before disclosed her situation. They contrived to hide her pregnancy and her delivery. As a mother she felt altogether happy in her little one. Like most of our women, she could neither write, nor read writing: she gave the priest many verbal messages to carry to her lover. The latter, thinking that he owed this pious fraud to a suckling mother, often brought pretended tidings from our brother, whom he never saw; recommending her, in his name, to be at peace; begging of her to be careful of herself and of her child; and for the rest to trust in God.

"Sperata was inclined by nature to religious feelings. Her situation, her solitude increased this tendency; the clergyman encouraged it, in order to prepare her by degrees for an eternal separation. Scarcely was her child weaned, scarcely did he think her body strong enough for suffering agony of mind, when he began to paint her fault to her in most terrific colours, to treat the crime of being connected with a priest as a sort of sin against nature, as a sort of incest. For he had taken up the strange thought of making her repentance equal in intensity to what it would have been, had she known the true circumstances of her error. He thereby produced so much anxiety and sorrow in her mind; he so exalted the idea of the Church and of its head before her; showed her the awful consequences, for the weal of all men's souls, should indulgence in a case like this be granted, and the guilty pair rewarded by a lawful union; signifying too how wholesome it was to expiate such sins in time, and thereby gain the crown of immortality,—that at last, like a poor criminal, she willingly held out her neck to the axe, and earnestly entreated that she might forever be divided from our brother. Having gained so much, the clergy left her the liberty (reserving to themselves a certain distant oversight) to live at one time in a convent, at another in her house, according as she afterwards thought good.

"Her little girl meanwhile was growing: from her earliest years, she had displayed an extraordinary disposition. When still very young, she could run, and move with wonderful dexterity; she sang beautifully, and learned to play upon the cithern almost of herself. With words, however, she could not express herself; and the impediment seemed rather to proceed from her mode of thought, than from her organs of speech. The feelings of the poor mother to her, in the mean time, were of the most painful kind: the expostulations of the priest had so perplexed her mind, that though she was not quite deranged, her state was far from being sane. She daily thought her crime more terrible and punishable; the clergyman's comparison of incest, frequently repeated, had impressed itself so deeply, that her horror was not less than if the actual circumstances had been known to her. The priest took no small credit for his ingenuity, with which he had contrived to tear asunder a luckless creature's heart. It was miserable to behold maternal love, ready to expand itself in joy at the existence of her child, contending with the horrid feeling, that this child should not be there. The two emotions strove together in her soul; love was often weaker than aversion.

"The child had long ago been taken from her, and committed to a worthy family residing on the sea-shore. In the greater freedom, which the little creature enjoyed here, she soon displayed her singular delight in climbing. To mount the highest peaks, to run along the edges of the ships, to imitate in all their strangest feats the rope-dancers, whom she often saw in the place, seemed a natural tendency in her.

"To practise these things with the greater ease, she liked to change clothes with boys: and though her foster parents thought this highly blameable and unbecoming, we bade them indulge her as much as possible. Her wild walks and leapings often led her to a distance; she would lose her way, and be long from home, but she always came back. In general, as she returned, she used to set herself beneath the columns in the portal of a country house in the neighbourhood: her people now had ceased to look for her; they waited for her. She would there lie resting on the steps; then run up and down the large hall, looking at the statues; after which, if nothing specially detained her, she used to hasten home.

"But at last our confidence was balked, and our indulgence punished. The child went out, and did not come again: her little hat was found swimming on the water, near the spot where a torrent rushes down into the sea. It was conjectured that, in clambering among the rocks, her foot had slipped; all our searching could not find the body.

"The thoughtless tattle of her house-mates soon communicated the occurrence to Sperata; she seemed calm and cheerful when she heard it; hinting not obscurely at her satisfaction that God had pleased to take her poor child to himself, and thus preserved it from suffering or causing some more dreadful misery.

"On this occasion, all the fables which are told about our waters came to be the common talk. The sea, it was said, required every year an innocent child: yet it would endure no corpse, but sooner or later throw it to the shore; nay the last joint, though sunk to the lowest bottom, must again come forth. They told the story of a mother, inconsolable because her child had perished in the sea, who prayed to God and his saints to grant her at least the bones for burial. The first storm threw ashore the skull, the next the spine; and after all was gathered, she wrapped the bones in a cloth, and took them to the church: but O! miraculous to tell! as she crossed the threshold of the temple, the packet grew heavier and heavier, and at last, when she laid it on the steps of the altar, the child began to cry, and issued living from the cloth. One joint of the right-hand little finger was alone wanting: this too the mother anxiously sought and found; and in memory of the event it was preserved among the other relics of the church.

"On poor Sperata these recitals made a deep impression: her imagination took a new flight, and favoured the emotion of her heart. She supposed that now the child had expiated, by its death, both its own sins, and the sins of its parents: that the curse and penalty, which hitherto had overhung them all, was at length wholly removed; that nothing more was necessary, could she only find the child's bones, that she might carry them to Rome, where upon the steps of the great altar in St. Peter's, her little girl, again covered with its fair fresh skin, would stand up alive before the people. With its own eyes it would once more look on father and mother; and the Pope, convinced that God and his saints commanded it, would, amid the acclamations of the people, remit the parents their sins, acquit them of their oaths, and join their hands in wedlock.

"Her looks and her anxiety were henceforth constantly directed to the sea and the beach. When, at night in the moonshine, the waves were tossing to and fro, she thought every glittering sheet of foam was bringing out her child; and some one about her had to run off, as if to take it up when it should reach the shore.

"By day she walked unweariedly along the places where the

pebbly beach shelved slowly to the water: she gathered, in a little basket, all the bones which she could find. None durst tell her that they were the bones of animals: the larger ones she buried; the little ones she took along with her. In this employment she incessantly persisted. The clergyman, who, by so unremittingly discharging what he thought his duty, had reduced her to this condition, now stood up for her with all his might. By his influence, the people in the neighbourhood were made to look upon her not as a distracted person, but as one entranced: they stood in reverent attitudes as she walked by, and the children ran to kiss her hand.

"To the old woman, her attendant and faithful friend, the secret of Sperata's guilt was at length imparted by the priest, on her solemnly engaging to watch over the unhappy creature with untiring care, through all her life. And she kept this engagement to the last, with admirable conscientiousness and patience.

"Meanwhile we had always had an eye upon our brother. Neither the physicians nor the clergy of his convent would allow us to be seen by him: but, in order to convince us of his being well in some sort, we had leave to look at him as often as we liked, in the garden, the passages, or even through a window in the roof of his apartment.

"After many terrible and singular changes, which I shall omit, he had passed into a strange state of mental rest and bodily unrest. He never sat but when he took his harp and played upon it, and then he usually accompanied it with singing. At other times, he kept continually in motion; and in all things he was grown extremely guidable and pliant, for all his passions seemed to have resolved themselves into the single fear of death. You could persuade him to do anything, by threatening him with dangerous sickness or with death.

"Besides this singularity of walking constantly about the cloister, a practice which he hinted it were better to exchange for wandering over hill and dale, he talked about an Apparition which perpetually tormented him. He declared, that on awakening, at whatever hour of the night, he saw a beautiful boy standing at the foot of his bed, with a bare knife, and threatening to destroy him. They shifted him to various other chambers of the convent; but he still asserted that the boy pursued him. His wandering to and fro became more unrestful: the people afterwards remembered too, that at this time they had often seen him standing at the window looking out upon the sea.

"Our poor sister, on the other hand, seemed gradually wasting under the consuming influence of her single thought, of her

narrow occupation. It was at last proposed by the physician, that among the bones which she had gathered, the fragments of a child's skeleton should by degrees be introduced; and so the hapless mother's hopes kept up. The experiment was dubious; but this at least seemed likely to be gained by it, that when all the parts were got together, she would cease her weary search, and might be entertained with hopes of going to Rome.

"It was accordingly resolved on: her attendant changed, by imperceptible degrees, the small remains committed to her with the bones Sperata found. An inconceivable delight arose in the poor sick woman's heart, when the parts began to fit each other, and the shape of those still wanting could be marked. She had fastened every fragment in its proper place with threads and ribbons; filling up the vacant spaces with embroidery and silk, as is usually done with the relics of saints.

"In this way nearly all the bones had been collected; none but a few of the extremities were wanting. One morning, while she was asleep, the physician having come to ask for her, the old attendant, with a view to show him how his patient occupied herself, took away these dear remains from the little chest where they lay in poor Sperata's bedroom. A few minutes afterwards, they heard her spring upon the floor; she lifted up the cloth and found the chest empty. She threw herself upon her knees; they came and listened to her joyful ardent prayer. 'Yes!' exclaimed she, 'it is true; it was no dream, it is real! Rejoice with me, my friends! I have seen my own beautiful good little girl again alive. She arose and threw the veil from off her; her splendour enlightened all the room; her beauty was transfigured to celestial loveliness; she could not tread the ground, although she wished it. Lightly was she borne aloft; she had not even time to stretch her hand to me. *There!* cried she to me, and pointed to the road where I am soon to go. Yes, I will follow her, soon follow her; my heart is light to think of it. My sorrows are already vanished; the sight of my risen little one has given me a foretaste of the heavenly joys.'

"From that time her soul was wholly occupied with prospects of the brightest kind: she gave no farther heed to any earthly object; she took but little food; her spirit by degrees cast off the fetters of the body. At last this imperceptible gradation reached its head unexpectedly: her attendants found her pale and motionless; she opened not her eyes; she was what we call dead.

"The report of her vision quickly spread abroad among the people; and the reverential feeling, which she had excited in her

lifetime, soon changed, at her death, to the thought that she should be regarded as in bliss, nay as in sanctity.

"When we were bearing her to be interred, a crowd of persons pressed with boundless violence about the bier; they would touch her hand; they would touch her garment. In this impassioned elevation, various sick persons ceased to feel the pains by which at other times they were tormented: they looked upon themselves as healed; they declared it, they praised God and his new saint. The clergy were obliged to lay the body in a neighbouring chapel; the people called for opportunity to offer their devotion. The concourse was incredible; the mountaineers, at all times prone to lively and religious feelings, crowded forward from their valleys; the reverence, the wonder, the adoration daily spread and gathered strength. The ordinances of the bishop, which were meant to limit, and in time abolish this new worship, could not be put in execution: every show of opposition raised the people into tumults; every unbeliever they were ready to assail with personal violence. 'Did not Saint Borromæus,' cried they, 'dwell among our forefathers? Did not his mother live to taste the joy of his canonisation? Was not that great figure on the rocks at Arona meant to represent to us, by a sensible symbol, his spiritual greatness? Do not the descendants of his kindred live among us to this hour? And has not God promised ever to renew his miracles among a people that believe?'

"As the body, after several days, exhibited no marks of putrefaction, but grew whiter, and as it were translucent, the general faith rose higher and higher. Among the multitude were several cures, which even the sceptical observer was unable to account for, or ascribe entirely to fraud. The whole country was in motion; those who did not go to see it, heard at least no other topic talked of.

"The convent, where my brother lived, resounded, like the land at large, with the noise of these wonders; and the people felt the less restraint in speaking of them in his presence, as in general he seemed to pay no heed to anything, and his connexion with the circumstance was known to none of them. But on this occasion, it appeared, he had listened with attention. He conducted his escape with such dexterity and cunning, that the manner of it still remains a mystery. We learned afterwards, that he had crossed the water with a number of travellers; and charged the boatmen, who observed no other singularity about him, above all to have a care lest their vessel overset. Late in the night, he *reached the* chapel, where his hapless loved one was resting from

her woes. Only a few devotees were kneeling in the corners of the place; her old friend was sitting at the head of the corpse; he walked up to her, saluted her, and asked how her mistress was. 'You see it,' answered she with some embarrassment. He looked at the corpse with a sidelong glance. After some delay he took its hand. Frightened by its coldness, he in the instant let it go: he looked unrestfully around him; then turning to the old attendant: 'I cannot stay with her at present,' said he; 'I have a long, long way to travel; but at the proper time I shall be back: tell her so when she awakens.'

"With this he went away. It was a while before we got intelligence of these occurrences: we searched; but all our efforts to discover him were vain. How he worked his way across the mountains, none can say. A long time after he was gone, we came upon a trace of him among the Grisons; but we were too late; it quickly vanished. We supposed that he was gone to Germany; but his weak foot-prints had been speedily obliterated by the war."

CHAPTER X.

THE Abbé ceased to read: no one had listened without tears. The Countess scarcely ever took her handkerchief from her eyes; at last she rose, and, with Natalia, left the room. The rest were silent, till the Abbé thus began: "The question now arises, whether we shall let the good Marchese leave us without telling him our secret. For who can doubt a moment, that our Harper and his brother Augustin are one? Let us consider what is to be done; both for the sake of that unhappy man himself, and of his family. My advice is, not to hurry, but to wait till we have heard what news the Doctor, who is gone to see him, brings us back."

All were of the same opinion; and the Abbé thus proceeded: "Another question, which perhaps may be disposed of sooner, still remains. The Marchese is affected to the bottom of his heart, at the kindness which his poor niece experienced here, particularly from our young friend. He made me tell him, and repeat to him every circumstance connected with her; and he showed the liveliest gratitude on hearing it. 'Her young benefactor,' he said, 'refused to travel with me, while he knew not the connexion that subsists between us. I am not now a stranger, of whose manner of existence, of whose humours he might be uncertain: I am his associate, his relation; and as his unwillingness to leave his boy behind was the impediment which kept him from accompanying

me, let this child now become a fairer bond to join us still more closely. Besides the services which I already owe him, let him be of service to me on my present journey: let him then return along with me; my elder brother will receive him as he ought. And let him not despise the heritage of his unhappy foster-child: for by a secret stipulation of our father with his military friend, the fortune which he gave Sperata has returned to us: and certainly we will not cheat our niece's benefactor of the recompense which he has merited so well.'"

Theresa, taking Wilhelm by the hand, now said to him: "We have here another beautiful example that disinterested well-doing yields the highest and best return. Follow the call, which so strangely comes to you: and while you lay a double load of gratitude on the Marchese, hasten to a fair land, which has already often drawn your heart and your imagination towards it."

"I leave myself entirely to the guidance of my friends and you," said Wilhelm: "it is vain to think, in this world, of adhering to our individual will. What I purposed to hold fast, I must let go; and benefits which I have not deserved, descend upon me of their own accord."

With a gentle pressure of Theresa's hand, Wilhelm took his own away. "I give you full permission," said he to the Abbé, "to decide about me as you please. Since I shall not need to leave my Felix, I am ready to go anywhither, and to undertake whatever you think good."

Thus authorised, the Abbé forthwith sketched out his plan. The Marchese, he proposed, should be allowed to depart; Wilhelm was to wait for tidings from the Doctor; he might then, when they had settled what was to be done, set off with Felix. Accordingly, under the pretence that Wilhelm's preparations for his journey would detain him, he advised the stranger to employ the mean while in examining the curiosities of the city, which he meant to visit. The Marchese did in consequence depart; and not without renewed and strong expressions of his gratitude; of which indeed the presents left by him, including jewels, precious stones, embroidered stuffs, afforded a sufficient proof.

Wilhelm too was at length in readiness for travelling; and his friends began to be distressed that the Doctor sent them no news. They feared some mischief had befallen the poor old Harper, at the very moment when they were in hopes of radically improving his condition. They sent the courier off; but he was scarcely gone, when the Doctor in the evening entered with a stranger, whose form and aspect were expressive, earnest, striking, and *whom* no one knew. Both stood silent for a space; the stranger

at length went up to Wilhelm, and holding out his hand said: "Do you not know your old friend then?" It was the Harper's voice; but of his form there seemed to remain no vestige. He was in the common garb of a traveller, cleanly and genteelly equipt; his beard had vanished; his hair was dressed with some attention to the mode; and what particularly made him quite irrecognisable was, that in his countenance the look of age was no longer visible. Wilhelm embraced him with the liveliest joy: he was presented to the rest; and behaved himself with great propriety, not knowing that the party had a little while before become so well acquainted with him. "You will have patience with a man," continued he with great composure, "who, grown up as he appears, is entering on the world, after long sorrows, inexperienced as a child. To this skilful gentleman I stand indebted for the privilege of again appearing in the company of my fellow-men."

They bade him welcome: the Doctor motioned for a walk, to interrupt the conversation, and lead it to indifferent topics.

In private, the Doctor gave the following explanation: "It was by the strangest chance that we succeeded in the cure of this man. We had long treated him, morally and physically, as our best consideration dictated: in some degree the plan was efficacious; but the fear of death continued powerful in him, and he would not lay aside his beard and cloak. For the rest, however, he appeared to take more interest in external things than formerly; and both his songs and his conceptions seemed to be approaching nearer life. A strange letter from the clergyman, as you already know, called me from you. I arrived: I found our patient altogether changed; he had voluntarily given up his beard; he had let his locks be cut into a customary form; he asked for common clothes; he seemed to have at once become another man. Though curious to penetrate the reason of this sudden alteration, we did not risk inquiring of himself: at last we accidentally discovered it. A glass of laudanum was missing from the Parson's private laboratory: we thought it right to institute a strict inquiry on the subject; every one endeavoured to ward off suspicion; and the sharpest quarrels rose among the inmates of the house. At last, this man appeared before us, and admitted that he had the laudanum: we asked if he had swallowed any of it. 'No!' said he: 'but it is to this that I owe the recovery of my reason. It is at your choice to take the vial from me; and to drive me back inevitably to my former state. The feeling that it was desirable to see the pains of life terminated by death, first put me on the way of cure; before long the thought of terminating them by voluntary death arose in me; and with this intention, I took the glass of poison. The possibility

me, let this child now becom[illegible] [illegible]rength to bear closely. Besides the service[illegible] [illegible]ame into my of service to me on my present [illegible] [illegible]ntiguity with with me; my elder brother [illegible] [illegible]solve, as men let him not despise the heri[illegible] [illegible]ndependence by a secret stipulation of our [illegible] [illegible]endent on it.' fortune which he gave Sperm[illegible] [illegible]mined not to we will not cheat our nice's [illegible] [illegible]um, in a firm he has merited so well.'"

Theresa, taking Wilhelm [illegible] [illegible] so strangely have here another beautiful c[illegible] [illegible]spired since his yields the highest and best [illegible] [illegible] that they should strangely comes to you: and [illegible] [illegible]he Abbe undertook tude on the Marchese, hast[illegible] [illegible] the healthful path often drawn your heart and [illegible]

"I leave myself entirely [illegible] [illegible] over Germany said Wilhelm: "it is vain [illegible] [illegible] Augustin could be our individual will. Wh[illegible] [illegible] the circumstances and benefits which I have [illegible] [illegible] Wilhelm might con- own accord."

With a gentle press[illegible] [illegible] for his journey. own away. "I give you [illegible] [illegible] Augustin rejoiced in decide about me as you [illegible] [illegible] to depart; but he my Felix, I am ready to [illegible] [illegible]ous movement. Au- you think good."

Thus authorised, th[illegible] [illegible] and he longed as soon The Marchese, he prop[illegible] [illegible]hled, that the Castle and was to wait for tiding[illegible] [illegible]modate them all; and they had settled what [illegible] [illegible] had not originally been ingly, under the pro[illegible] [illegible] together; each endea- journey would detain [illegible] [illegible] living in a comfortable mean while in examin[illegible] [illegible] degree to be away. meant to visit. The [illegible] [illegible] Lothario, and oftener not without renewed [illegible] [illegible] all the landladies and which indeed the p[illegible] [illegible] as a principle of her stones, embroidered [illegible] [illegible] far mistaken, that it is

Wilhelm too was [illegible] [illegible] one's neighbours male friends began to be di[illegible] [illegible] constant interchange of They feared some m[illegible] [illegible] Lothario she appeared to the very moment wh[illegible] [illegible] often talked with one his condition. They [illegible] [illegible] of Augustin; Jarno gone, when the D[illegible] [illegible] Friedrich held by whose form and [illegible] [illegible] could meet with most whom no one knew [illegible] [illegible] they paired them-

selves in walking, when the company broke up: when it was obliged to be together, recourse was quickly had to music, to unite them all by giving each back to himself.

Unexpectedly the Count increased the party; intending to remove his lady, and, as it appeared, to take a solemn farewell of his worldly friends. Jarno hastened to the coach to meet him: the Count inquired what guests they had; to which the other answered, in a fit of wild humour that would often seize him: "We have all the nobility in Nature; Marcheses, Marquises, Milords and Barons: we wanted nothing but a Count." They came upstairs. Wilhelm was the first who met them in the antechamber. "Milord," said the Count to him in French, after looking at him for a moment, "I rejoice very much in the unexpected pleasure of renewing my acquaintance with your Lordship: I am very much mistaken if I did not see you at my Castle in the Prince's suite." "I had the happiness of waiting on your Excellence at that time," answered Wilhelm; "but you do me too much honour when you take me for an Englishman, and that of the first quality. I am a German, and"——"A very brave young fellow," interrupted Jarno. The Count looked at Wilhelm with a smile, and was about to make some reply, when the rest of the party entered, and saluted him with many a friendly welcome. They excused themselves for being unable at the moment to show him to a proper chamber; promising without delay to make the necessary room for him.

"Ay, ay!" said he, smiling: "we have left Chance, I see, to act as our purveyor. Yet with prudence and arrangement, how much is possible! For the present, I entreat you not to stir a slipper from its place; the disorder, I perceive, would otherwise be great. Every one would be uncomfortably lodged; and this no one shall be on my account, if possible, not even for an hour. You can testify," said he to Jarno, "and you too, Meister," turning to Wilhelm, "how many people I commodiously stowed, that time, in my Castle. Let me have the list of persons and servants; let me see how they are lodged at present: I will make a plan of dislocation, such that, with the very smallest inconvenience, every one shall find a suitable apartment, and there shall be room enough to hold another guest if one should accidentally arrive."

Jarno volunteered to be the Count's assistant; procured him all the necessary information; taking great delight, as usual, if he could now and then contrive to lead him astray, and leave him in awkward difficulties. The old gentleman at last, however, gained a signal triumph. The arrangement was completed; he caused the names to be written on their several doors, himself attending; and it could not be denied that, by a very few changes and substi-

tutions, the object had been fully gained. Jarno, among other things, had also managed that the persons, who at present took an interest in each other, should be lodged together.

"Will you help me," said the Count to Jarno, after everything was settled, "to clear up my recollections of the young man there, whom you call Meister, and who, you tell me, is a German?" Jarno was silent; for he knew very well that the Count was one of those people who, in asking questions, merely wish to show their knowledge. The Count accordingly continued, without waiting for an answer: "You, I recollect, presented him to me; and warmly recommended him in the Prince's name. If his mother was a German woman, I'll be bound for it his father is an Englishman, and one of rank too: who can calculate the English blood that has been flowing, these last thirty years, in German veins! I do not wish to pump you: I know you have always family secrets of that kind; but in such cases it is in vain to think of cheating me." He then proceeded to detail a great variety of things as having taken place with Wilhelm at the Castle; to the whole of which Jarno, as before, kept silence; though the Count was altogether in the wrong, confounding Wilhelm more than once with a young Englishman of the Prince's suite. The truth was, the good old gentleman had in former years possessed a very excellent memory; and was still proud of being able to remember the minutest circumstances of his youth: but in regard to late occurrences, he used to settle in his mind as true, and utter with the greatest certainty, whatever fables and fantastic combinations in the growing weakness of his powers, imagination might present to him. For the rest, he was become extremely mild and courteous; his presence had a very favourable influence upon the company. He would call on them to read some useful book together; nay he often gave them little games, which, without participating in them, he directed with the greatest care. If they wondered at his condescension, he would reply, that it became a man, who differed from the world in weighty matters, to conform to it the more anxiously in matters of indifference.

In these games, our friend had, more than once, an angry and unquiet feeling to endure. Friedrich, with his usual levity, took frequent opportunity of giving hints that Wilhelm entertained a secret passion for Natalia. How could he have found it out? What entitled him to say so? And would not his friends think that, as they two were often together, Wilhelm must have made a disclosure to him, so thoughtless and unlucky a disclosure?

One day, while they were merrier than common at some such *joke, Augustin,* dashing up the door, rushed in with a frightful

look; his countenance was pale, his eyes were wild; he seemed about to speak, but his tongue refused its office. The party were astounded; Lothario and Jarno, supposing that his madness had returned, sprang up and seized him. With a choked and faltering voice, then loudly and violently, he spoke and cried: "Not me! Haste! Help! Save the child! Felix is poisoned!"

They let him go; he hastened through the door; all followed him in consternation. They called the Doctor: Augustin made for the Abbé's chamber; they found the child; who seemed amazed and frightened, when they called to him from a distance: "What hast thou been doing?"

"Dear papa!" cried Felix, "I did not drink from the bottle, I drank from the glass: I was very thirsty."

Augustin struck his hands together: "He is lost!" cried he; then pressed through the bystanders, and hastened away.

They found a glass of almond-milk upon the table, with a bottle near it more than half empty. The Doctor came; was told what they had seen and heard: with horror he observed the well-known laudanum-vial lying empty on the table. He called for vinegar, he summoned all his art to his assistance.

Natalia had the little patient taken to a room, she busied herself with painful care about him. The Abbé had run out to seek Augustin, and draw some explanation from him. The unhappy father had been out upon the same endeavour, but in vain: he returned, to find anxiety and fear on every face. The Doctor, in the mean time, had been examining the almond-milk in the glass; he found it to contain a powerful mixture of opium: the child was lying on the sofa, seeming very sick; he begged his father 'not to let them pour more stuff into him, not to let them plague him any more.' Lothario had sent his people, and had ridden off himself, endeavouring to find some trace of Augustin. Natalia sat beside the child; he took refuge in her bosom, and entreated earnestly for her protection; earnestly for a little piece of sugar: the vinegar, he said, was biting sour. The Doctor granted his request; the child was in a frightful agitation; they were obliged to let him have a moment's rest. The Doctor said that every means had been adopted; he would continue to do his utmost. The Count came near, with an air of displeasure; his look was earnest, even solemn: he laid his hands upon the child; turned his eyes to Heaven, and remained some moments in that attitude. Wilhelm, who was lying inconsolable on a seat, sprang up, and casting a despairing look at Natalia, left the room. Shortly afterwards the Count too left it.

"I cannot understand," said the Doctor, having paused a little,

"how it comes that there is not the smallest trace of danger visible about the child. At a single gulp, he must have swallowed an immense dose of opium; yet I find no movement in his pulse but what may be ascribed to our remedies, and to the terror we have put him into."

In a few minutes Jarno entered, with intelligence that Augustin had been discovered in the upper story, lying in his blood; a razor had been found beside him; to all appearance he had cut his throat. The Doctor hastened out: he met the people carrying down the body. The unhappy man was laid upon a bed, and accurately examined: the cut had gone across the windpipe; a copious loss of blood had been succeeded by a swoon; yet it was easy to observe that life, that hope was still there. The Doctor put the body in a proper posture; joined the edges of the wound, and bandaged it. The night passed sleepless and full of care to all. Felix would not quit Natalia: Wilhelm sat before her on a stool; he had the boy's feet upon his lap; the head and breast were lying upon hers. Thus did they divide the pleasing burden and the painful anxiety; and continue, till the day broke, in their uncomfortable sad position. Natalia had given her hand to Wilhelm; they did not speak a word; they looked at the child and then at one another. Lothario and Jarno were sitting at the other end of the room, and carrying on a most important conversation; which, did not the pressure of events forbid us, we would gladly lay before our readers. The boy slept softly; he awoke quite cheerful, early in the morning, and demanded a piece of bread and butter.

So soon as Augustin had in some degree recovered, they endeavoured to obtain some explanation from him. They learned with difficulty, and by slow degrees, that having, by the Count's unlucky shifting, been appointed to the same chamber with the Abbé, he had found the manuscript in which his story was recorded. Struck with horror on perusing it, he felt that it was now impossible for him to live; on which he had recourse as usual to the laudanum: this he poured into a glass of almond-milk, and raised it to his mouth; but he shuddered when it reached his lips; he set it down untasted; went out to walk once more across the garden, and behold the face of nature; and on his return, he found the child employed in filling up the glass out of which it had been drinking.

They entreated the unhappy creature to be calm; he seized Wilhelm by the hand with a spasmodic grasp, and cried: "Ah! why did I not leave thee long ago? I knew well that I should kill the boy, and he me." "The boy lives!" said Wilhelm. The

Doctor, who had listened with attention, now inquired of Augustin if all the drink was poisoned. "No," replied he, "nothing but the glass." "By the luckiest chance, then," cried the Doctor, "the boy has drunk from the bottle! A benignant Genius has guided his hand, that he did not catch at death, which stood so near and ready for him." "No! no!" cried Wilhelm with a groan, and clapping both his hands upon his eyes: "How dreadful are the words! Felix said expressly that he drank not from the bottle but the glass. His health is but a show; he will die among our hands." Wilhelm hastened out; the Doctor went below, and taking Felix up, with much caressing, asked: "Now did not you, my pretty boy? You drank from the bottle, not the glass?" The child began to cry. The Doctor secretly informed Natalia how the matter stood: she also strove in vain to get the truth from Felix, who but cried the more; cried till he fell asleep.

Wilhelm watched by him; the night went peacefully away. Next morning Augustin was found lying dead in bed; he had cheated his attendants by a seeming rest; had silently loosened the bandages, and bled to death. Natalia went to walk with Felix; he was sportful as in his happiest days. "You are always good to me," said Felix; "you never scold, you never beat me; I will tell you the truth, I did drink from the bottle. Mamma Aurelia used to rap me over the fingers every time I touched the bottle: father looked so sour, I thought he would beat me."

With winged steps Natalia hastened to the Castle; Wilhelm came, still overwhelmed with care, to meet her. "Happy father!" cried she, lifting up the child, and throwing it into his arms: "there is thy son again! He drank from the bottle: his naughtiness has saved him."

They told the Count the happy issue; but he listened with a smiling, silent, modest air of knowingness, like one tolerating the error of worthy men. Jarno, attentive to all, could not explain this lofty self-complacency; till after many windings, he at last discovered it to be his Lordship's firm belief that the child had really taken poison, and that he himself, by prayer and the laying on of hands, had miraculously counteracted the effects of it. After such a feat, his Lordship now determined on departing. Everything, as usual with him, was made ready in a moment; the fair Countess, when about to go, took Wilhelm's hand before parting with her sister's; she then pressed both their hands between her own, turned quickly round, and stept into the carriage.

So many terrible and strange events, crowding one upon the back of another, inducing an unusual mode of life, and putting everything into disorder and perplexity, had brought a sort of

feverish movement into all departments of the house. The hours of sleep and waking, of eating, drinking and social conversation were inverted. Except Theresa, none of them had kept in their accustomed course. The men endeavoured, by increased potations, to recover their good humour; and thus communicating to themselves an artificial vivacity, they drove away that natural vivacity, which alone imparts to us true cheerfulness and strength for action.

Wilhelm, in particular, was moved and agitated by the keenest feelings. Those unexpected, frightful incidents had thrown him out of all condition to resist a passion which had so forcibly seized his heart. Felix was restored to him; yet still it seemed that he had nothing: Werner's letters, the directions for his journey were in readiness; there was nothing wanting but the resolution to remove. Everything conspired to hasten him. He could not but conjecture that Lothario and Theresa were awaiting his departure, that they might be wedded. Jarno was unusually silent; you would have said that he had lost a portion of his customary cheerfulness. Happily the Doctor helped our friend, in some degree, from this embarrassment: he declared him sick, and set about administering medicine to him.

The company assembled always in the evening: Friedrich, the wild madcap, who had often drunk more wine than suited him, in general took possession of the talk; and by a thousand frolicsome citations, fantasies and waggish allusions, often kept the party laughing; often also threw them into awkward difficulties, by the liberty he took to think aloud.

In the sickness of his friend he seemed to have little faith. Once when they were all together, "Pray, Doctor," cried he, "how is it you call the malady our friend is labouring under? Will none of the three thousand names, with which you decorate your ignorance, apply to it? The disease at least is not without examples. There is one such case," continued he with an emphatic tone, "in the Egyptian or Babylonian history."

The company looked at one another, and smiled.

"What call you the king—?" cried he, and stopped short a moment. "Well, if you will not help me, I must help myself." He threw the door-leaves up, and pointed to the large picture in the antechamber. "What call you the goat-beard there, with the crown on, who is standing at the foot of the bed, making such a rueful face about his sick son? How call you the beauty, who enters, and in her modest roguish eyes at once brings poison and antidote? How call you the quack of a doctor, who at this moment catches a glimpse of the reality, and for the first time in

his life takes occasion to prescribe a reasonable recipe, to give a drug which cures to the very heart, and is at once salutiferous and savoury?"

In this manner he continued babbling. The company took it with as good a face as might be; hiding their embarrassment behind a forced laugh. A slight blush overspread Natalia's cheeks, and betrayed the movements of her heart. By good fortune, she was walking up and down with Jarno: on coming to the door, with a cunning motion she slipped out, walked once or twice across the antechamber, and retired to her room.

The company were silent: Friedrich began to dance and sing:

"O ye shall wonders see!
What has been is not to be;
What is said is not to say,
Before the break of day
Ye shall wonders see!"

Theresa had gone out to find Natalia; Friedrich pulled the Doctor forward to the picture; pronounced a ridiculous eulogium on medicine, and glided from the room.

Lothario had been standing all the while in the recess of a window; he was looking, without motion, down into the garden. Wilhelm was in the most dreadful state. Left alone with his friends, he still kept silence for a time: he ran with a hurried glance over all his history, and at last, with shuddering, surveyed his present situation: he started up and cried: "If I am to blame for what is happening, for what you and I are suffering, punish me. In addition to my other miseries, deprive me of your friendship, and let me wander, without comfort, forth into the wide world, in which I should have mingled, and withdrawn myself from notice long ago. But if you see in me the victim of a cruel entanglement of chance, out of which I could not thread my way, then give me the assurance of your love, of your friendship, on a journey which I dare not now postpone. A time will come, when I may tell you what has passed of late within me. Perhaps this is but a punishment, which I am suffering, because I did not soon enough disclose myself to you, because I hesitated to display myself entirely as I was: you would have assisted me, you would have helped me out in proper season. Again and again have my eyes been opened to my conduct; but it was ever too late, it was ever in vain! How richly do I merit Jarno's censure! I imagined I had seized it; how firmly did I purpose to employ it, to commence another life! Could I, might I have done so? It avails

feverish movement into all depar[illegible] Fate or of themselves! We are of sleep and waking, of eating, [illegible] watchfulness; and what does it were inverted. Except Theresa, [illegible] higher influence or chance, virtue accustomed course. The men c[illegible] us into ruin? Farewell! I will tions, to recover their good humo[illegible] house, where I have so fearfully themselves an artificial vivacity. [illegible] Your brother's indiscretion is vivacity, which alone imparts to [illegible] suffering to the highest pitch, it for action.

Wilhelm, in particular, was [illegible] Wilhelm by the hand, feelings. Those unexpected, [illegible] were the secret article on out of all condition to resist [illegible] Theresa? This amends that seized his heart. Felix was [illegible] you; she has vowed that these that he had nothing: Werne[illegible] at the altar. 'His reason has journey were in readiness; th[illegible] heart demands Natalia: my resolution to remove. Everyb[illegible] agreed to keep our eyes upon could not but conjecture that [illegible] Abbé of our plan, who made us his departure, that they migh[illegible] this union, or attempt to forward silent; you would have said [illegible] its course. We have done so, customary cheerfulness. Hap[illegible] our mad brother only shook the in some degree, from this an[illegible] since we have come together and set about administering [illegible] life; let us work together in

The company assembled [illegible] It is inconceivable how wild madcap, who had often [illegible] plish for himself and others, general took possession of th[illegible] be the guardian over many; citations, fantasies and wag[illegible], which they are at any rate laughing; often also threw [illegible] them to their objects, which in liberty he took to think alou[illegible], though they miss the road

In the sickness of his [illegible] this: it is no enthusiasm; but Once when they were all [illegible], which indeed is often exe- "how is it you call the [illegible] sness, by people of benevo- Will none of the three tho[illegible] ing instance of it. No other your ignorance, apply to it? [illegible] conduct which has been pre- examples. There is one [illegible] noble soul."

tic tone, "in the Egyptian [illegible] ch with a shout came jumping

The company looked at [illegible] cond!" cried he: "how will you

"What call you the [illegible] ves of oak, the freshest you moment. "Well, if you [illegible] merits far beyond them all. He threw the door-leaves [illegible] who raised this treasure for the antechamber. "What [illegible] crown on, who is standing [illegible] I must go." rueful face about his [illegible] inquired Lothario, holding enters, and in her modest [illegible] antidote? How call you [illegible] Friedrich, "and the grace of moment catches a glimp[illegible]

God. It was thus I was the wooer; thus I am the messenger: I listened at the door; she told the Abbé everything."

"Barefaced rogue! who bade thee listen?" said Lothario.

"Who bade her bolt the door?" cried Friedrich. "I heard it all: she was in a wondrous pucker. In the night when Felix seemed so ill, and was lying half upon her knees, and thou wert sitting comfortless before her, sharing the beloved load, she made a vow, that if the child died, she would confess her love to thee, and offer thee her hand. And now when the child lives, why should she change her mind? What we promise under such conditions, we keep under any. Nothing wanting but the parson! He will come, and marvel what strange news he brings."

The Abbé entered. "We know it all," cried Friedrich: "be as brief as possible; it is mere formality you come for; they never send for you or me on any other score."

"He has listened," said the Baron.—"Scandalous!" exclaimed the Abbé.

"Now, quick!" said Friedrich. "How stands it with the ceremonies? These we can reckon on our fingers. You must travel; the Marchese's invitation answers to a hairsbreadth. If we had you once beyond the Alps, it will all be right: the people are obliged to you for undertaking anything surprising; you procure them an amusement which they are not called to pay for. It is as if you gave a free ball; all ranks partake in it."

"In such popular festivities," replied the Abbé, "you have done the public much service in your time; but today, it seems, you will not let me speak at all."

"If it is not just as I have told it," answered Friedrich, "let us have it better. Come round, come round; we must see them both together."

Lothario embraced his friend, and led him to Natalia, who with Theresa came to meet them. All were silent.

"No loitering!" cried Friedrich. "In two days you may be ready for your travels. Now, think you, friend," continued he, addressing Wilhelm, "when we first scraped acquaintance, and I asked you for the pretty nosegay, who could have supposed you were ever to receive a flower like this from me?"

"Do not, at the moment of my highest happiness, remind me of those times!"

"Of which you need not be ashamed, any more than one need be ashamed of his descent. The times were very good times: only I cannot but laugh to look at thee; to my mind, thou resemblest

Saul the son of Kish, who went out to seek his father's asses, and found a kingdom."

"I know not the worth of a kingdom," answered Wilhelm; "but I know I have attained a happiness which I have not deserved, and which I would not change with anything in life."

WILHELM MEISTER'S TRAVELS:

OR

THE RENUNCIANTS.

A NOVEL.

To travel now th' Apprentice does essay,
And every step is girt with doubt and danger:
In truth he uses not to sing or pray;
But is his path perplex'd, this toilsome ranger
Does turn an earnest eye, when mist 's above him,
To his own heart, and to the hearts that love him.

tutions, the object had been fully gained. Jarno, among other things, had also managed that the persons, who at present took an interest in each other, should be lodged together.

"Will you help me," said the Count to Jarno, after everything was settled, "to clear up my recollections of the young man there, whom you call Meister, and who, you tell me, is a German?" Jarno was silent; for he knew very well that the Count was one of those people who, in asking questions, merely wish to show their knowledge. The Count accordingly continued, without waiting for an answer: "You, I recollect, presented him to me; and warmly recommended him in the Prince's name. If his mother was a German woman, I'll be bound for it his father is an Englishman, and one of rank too: who can calculate the English blood that has been flowing, these last thirty years, in German veins! I do not wish to pump you: I know you have always family secrets of that kind; but in such cases it is in vain to think of cheating me." He then proceeded to detail a great variety of things as having taken place with Wilhelm at the Castle; to the whole of which Jarno, as before, kept silence; though the Count was altogether in the wrong, confounding Wilhelm more than once with a young Englishman of the Prince's suite. The truth was, the good old gentleman had in former years possessed a very excellent memory; and was still proud of being able to remember the minutest circumstances of his youth: but in regard to late occurrences, he used to settle in his mind as true, and utter with the greatest certainty, whatever fables and fantastic combinations in the growing weakness of his powers, imagination might present to him. For the rest, he was become extremely mild and courteous; his presence had a very favourable influence upon the company. He would call on them to read some useful book together; nay he often gave them little games, which, without participating in them, he directed with the greatest care. If they wondered at his condescension, he would reply, that it became a man, who differed from the world in weighty matters, to conform to it the more anxiously in matters of indifference.

In these games, our friend had, more than once, an angry and unquiet feeling to endure. Friedrich, with his usual levity, took frequent opportunity of giving hints that Wilhelm entertained a secret passion for Natalia. How could he have found it out? What entitled him to say so? And would not his friends think that, as they two were often together, Wilhelm must have made a disclosure to him, so thoughtless and unlucky a disclosure?

One day, while they were merrier than common at some such *joke, Augustin,* dashing up the door, rushed in with a frightful

look; his countenance was pale, his eyes were wild; he seemed about to speak, but his tongue refused its office. The party were astounded; Lothario and Jarno, supposing that his madness had returned, sprang up and seized him. With a choked and faltering voice, then loudly and violently, he spoke and cried: "Not me! Haste! Help! Save the child! Felix is poisoned!"

They let him go; he hastened through the door; all followed him in consternation. They called the Doctor: Augustin made for the Abbé's chamber; they found the child; who seemed amazed and frightened, when they called to him from a distance: "What hast thou been doing?"

"Dear papa!" cried Felix, "I did not drink from the bottle, I drank from the glass: I was very thirsty."

Augustin struck his hands together: "He is lost!" cried he; then pressed through the bystanders, and hastened away.

They found a glass of almond-milk upon the table, with a bottle near it more than half empty. The Doctor came; was told what they had seen and heard: with horror he observed the well-known laudanum-vial lying empty on the table. He called for vinegar, he summoned all his art to his assistance.

Natalia had the little patient taken to a room, she busied herself with painful care about him. The Abbé had run out to seek Augustin, and draw some explanation from him. The unhappy father had been out upon the same endeavour, but in vain: he returned, to find anxiety and fear on every face. The Doctor, in the mean time, had been examining the almond-milk in the glass; he found it to contain a powerful mixture of opium: the child was lying on the sofa, seeming very sick; he begged his father 'not to let them pour more stuff into him, not to let them plague him any more.' Lothario had sent his people, and had ridden off himself, endeavouring to find some trace of Augustin. Natalia sat beside the child; he took refuge in her bosom, and entreated earnestly for her protection; earnestly for a little piece of sugar: the vinegar, he said, was biting sour. The Doctor granted his request; the child was in a frightful agitation; they were obliged to let him have a moment's rest. The Doctor said that every means had been adopted; he would continue to do his utmost. The Count came near, with an air of displeasure; his look was earnest, even solemn: he laid his hands upon the child; turned his eyes to Heaven, and remained some moments in that attitude. Wilhelm, who was lying inconsolable on a seat, sprang up, and casting a despairing look at Natalia, left the room. Shortly afterwards the Count too left it.

"I cannot understand," said the Doctor, having paused a little,

how it comes that there is not the smallest trace of danger visible about the child. At a single gulp, he must have swallowed an immense dose of opium; yet I find no movement in his pulse but what may be ascribed to our remedies, and to the terror we have put him into."

In a few minutes Jarno entered, with intelligence that Augustin had been discovered in the upper story, lying in his blood; a razor had been found beside him; to all appearance he had cut his throat. The Doctor hastened out: he met the people carrying down the body. The unhappy man was laid upon a bed, and accurately examined: the cut had gone across the windpipe; a copious loss of blood had been succeeded by a swoon; yet it was easy to observe that life, that hope was still there. The Doctor put the body in a proper posture; joined the edges of the wound, and bandaged it. The night passed sleepless and full of care to all. Felix would not quit Natalia: Wilhelm sat before her on a stool; he had the boy's feet upon his lap; the head and breast were lying upon hers. Thus did they divide the pleasing burden and the painful anxiety; and continue, till the day broke, in their uncomfortable sad position. Natalia had given her hand to Wilhelm; they did not speak a word; they looked at the child and then at one another. Lothario and Jarno were sitting at the other end of the room, and carrying on a most important conversation; which, did not the pressure of events forbid us, we would gladly lay before our readers. The boy slept softly; he awoke quite cheerful, early in the morning, and demanded a piece of bread and butter.

So soon as Augustin had in some degree recovered, they endeavoured to obtain some explanation from him. They learned with difficulty, and by slow degrees, that having, by the Count's unlucky shifting, been appointed to the same chamber with the Abbé, he had found the manuscript in which his story was recorded. Struck with horror on perusing it, he felt that it was now impossible for him to live; on which he had recourse as usual to the laudanum: this he poured into a glass of almond-milk, and raised it to his mouth; but he shuddered when it reached his lips; he set it down untasted; went out to walk once more across the garden, and behold the face of nature; and on his return, he found the child employed in filling up the glass out of which it had been drinking.

They entreated the unhappy creature to be calm; he seized Wilhelm by the hand with a spasmodic grasp, and cried: "Ah! why did I not leave thee long ago? I knew well that I should kill the boy, and he me." "The boy lives!" said Wilhelm. The

Doctor, who had listened with attention, now inquired of Augustin if all the drink was poisoned. "No," replied he, "nothing but the glass." "By the luckiest chance, then," cried the Doctor, "the boy has drunk from the bottle! A benignant Genius has guided his hand, that he did not catch at death, which stood so near and ready for him." "No! no!" cried Wilhelm with a groan, and clapping both his hands upon his eyes: "How dreadful are the words! Felix said expressly that he drank not from the bottle but the glass. His health is but a show; he will die among our hands." Wilhelm hastened out; the Doctor went below, and taking Felix up, with much caressing, asked: "Now did not you, my pretty boy? You drank from the bottle, not the glass?" The child began to cry. The Doctor secretly informed Natalia how the matter stood: she also strove in vain to get the truth from Felix, who but cried the more; cried till he fell asleep.

Wilhelm watched by him; the night went peacefully away. Next morning Augustin was found lying dead in bed; he had cheated his attendants by a seeming rest; had silently loosened the bandages, and bled to death. Natalia went to walk with Felix; he was sportful as in his happiest days. "You are always good to me," said Felix; "you never scold, you never beat me; I will tell you the truth, I did drink from the bottle. Mamma Aurelia used to rap me over the fingers every time I touched the bottle: father looked so sour, I thought he would beat me."

With winged steps Natalia hastened to the Castle; Wilhelm came, still overwhelmed with care, to meet her. "Happy father!" cried she, lifting up the child, and throwing it into his arms: "there is thy son again! He drank from the bottle: his naughtiness has saved him."

They told the Count the happy issue; but he listened with a smiling, silent, modest air of knowingness, like one tolerating the error of worthy men. Jarno, attentive to all, could not explain this lofty self-complacency; till after many windings, he at last discovered it to be his Lordship's firm belief that the child had really taken poison, and that he himself, by prayer and the laying on of hands, had miraculously counteracted the effects of it. After such a feat, his Lordship now determined on departing. Everything, as usual with him, was made ready in a moment; the fair Countess, when about to go, took Wilhelm's hand before parting with her sister's; she then pressed both their hands between her own, turned quickly round, and stept into the carriage.

So many terrible and strange events, crowding one upon the back of another, inducing an unusual mode of life, and putting everything into disorder and perplexity, had brought a sort of

...

...e younger,
... with brown sleek
... the reflection of

...e unexpected beings,
..., for he heard a man's
...e cry, in a serious but

...he way!"
... children had surprised
... astonishment. A stout,
... for walking, of brown
... firmly and carefully
... behind him, which first
... and then the fair burden
... on a large and well-
... mantle which hung
... pressing to her breast, and
... The man did as the
... at sight of Wilhelm.
... descent was too precipitous;
... Wilhelm with astonishment
... wall of rocks.
... this singular procession
... rose in no small curiosity,
... the chasm, to see whether
... appearance somewhere below.
... these strange travellers,
... said: "Father, may I not go
... ? They want to take me
... said to me. Come! They

...ered Wilhelm.
... path was more level; and
... singular figures which had
... Not till now had it been in
... the group. The young stout
... his shoulder, and a long thin
... their hands large sedge-tufts,
... assembled angels, they like-
... snares in them, thereby re-
... they pass to and fro over the
... observed, on looking more lei-
... reddish mild-coloured lower

garment; so that *The Flight into Egypt*, which our friend had so often seen painted, he now with amazement saw bodied forth before his eyes.

The strangers exchanged salutations; and as Wilhelm, from surprise and attention, could not speak, the young man said: "Our children have formed a friendship in these few moments. Will you go with us, to see whether some kind relation will not spring up between the elder parties also?"

Wilhelm bethought himself an instant, and then answered: "The aspect of your little family procession awakens trust and good-will; and to confess it frankly, curiosity no less, and a lively desire to be better acquainted with you. For at the first glance, one might ask himself the question: Whether you are real travellers, or only Spirits that take pleasure in enlivening these uninhabitable Mountains by pleasant visions?"

"Then come home with us to our dwelling," said the other. "Come with us!" cried the children, already drawing Felix along with them. "Come with us!" said the woman, turning her soft kindliness from the suckling to the stranger.

Without reflecting, Wilhelm answered: "I am sorry that for the present moment I cannot follow you. This night, at least, I must spend up at the Border-house. My portmanteau, my papers, all is lying up there, unpacked, intrusted to no one. But that I may prove my wish and purpose to satisfy your friendly invitation, take my Felix with you as a pledge. Tomorrow I shall see you. How far is it?"

"We shall be home before sunset," said the carpenter: "and from the Border-house you are but a league and a half. Your boy increases our household for this night, and to-morrow we expect you."

The man and the animal set forth. Wilhelm smiled thoughtfully to see his Felix so soon received among the Angels. The boy had already seized a sedge-tuft, and taken the basket from the younger of his companions. The procession was again on the point of vanishing behind a ledge of rock, when Wilhelm recollected himself, and cried: "But how shall I inquire you out?"

"Ask for St. Joseph!" sounded from the hollow; and the whole vision had sunk behind the blue shady wall of cliffs. A pious hymn, uplifted on a chorus of several voices, rose echoing from the distance; and Wilhelm thought he could distinguish the voice of his Felix among the rest.

He ascended the path, and thus protracted the period of sunset. The heavenly star, which he had more than once lost sight of, illuminated him afresh as he mounted higher, and it was still

not for mortals to complain of Fate or of themselves! We are wretched, and appointed for wretchedness; and what does it matter whether blame of ours, higher influence or chance, virtue or vice, wisdom or folly plunge us into ruin? Farewell! I will not stay another moment in a house, where I have so fearfully violated the rights of hospitality. Your brother's indiscretion is unpardonable; it aggravates my suffering to the highest pitch, it drives me to despair."

"And what," replied Lothario, taking Wilhelm by the hand, "what if your alliance with my sister were the secret article on which depended my alliance with Theresa? This amends that noble maiden has appointed for you: she has vowed that these two pairs should appear together at the altar. 'His reason has made choice of me,' said she; 'his heart demands Natalia: my reason shall assist his heart.' We agreed to keep our eyes upon Natalia and yourself; we told the Abbé of our plan, who made us promise not to intermeddle with this union, or attempt to forward it, but to suffer everything to take its course. We have done so, Nature has performed her part; our mad brother only shook the ripe fruit from the branch. And now, since we have come together so unusually, let us lead no common life; let us work together in a noble manner, and for noble purposes! It is inconceivable how much a man of true culture can accomplish for himself and others, if, without attempting to rule, he can be the guardian over many; can induce them to do that in season, which they are at any rate disposed enough to do; can guide them to their objects, which in general they see with due distinctness, though they miss the road to them. Let us make a league for this: it is no enthusiasm; but an idea which may be fully executed, which indeed is often executed, only with imperfect consciousness, by people of benevolence and worth. Natalia is a living instance of it. No other need attempt to rival the plan of conduct which has been prescribed by nature for that pure and noble soul."

He had more to say, but Friedrich with a shout came jumping in. "What a garland have I earned!" cried he: "how will you reward me? Myrtle, laurel, ivy, leaves of oak, the freshest you can find, come twist them: I have merits far beyond them all. Natalia is thine! I am the conjuror who raised this treasure for thee."

"He raves," said Wilhelm; "I must go."

"Art thou empowered to speak?" inquired Lothario, holding Wilhelm from retiring.

"By my own authority," said Friedrich, "and the grace of

God. It was thus I was the wooer; thus I am the messenger: I listened at the door; she told the Abbé everything."

"Barefaced rogue! who bade thee listen?" said Lothario.

"Who bade her bolt the door?" cried Friedrich. "I heard it all: she was in a wondrous pucker. In the night when Felix seemed so ill, and was lying half upon her knees, and thou wert sitting comfortless before her, sharing the beloved load, she made a vow, that if the child died, she would confess her love to thee, and offer thee her hand. And now when the child lives, why should she change her mind? What we promise under such conditions, we keep under any. Nothing wanting but the parson! He will come, and marvel what strange news he brings."

The Abbé entered. "We know it all," cried Friedrich: "be as brief as possible; it is mere formality you come for; they never send for you or me on any other score."

"He has listened," said the Baron.—"Scandalous!" exclaimed the Abbé.

"Now, quick!" said Friedrich. "How stands it with the ceremonies? These we can reckon on our fingers. You must travel; the Marchese's invitation answers to a hairsbreadth. If we had you once beyond the Alps, it will all be right: the people are obliged to you for undertaking anything surprising; you procure them an amusement which they are not called to pay for. It is as if you gave a free ball; all ranks partake in it."

"In such popular festivities," replied the Abbé, "you have done the public much service in your time; but today, it seems, you will not let me speak at all."

"If it is not just as I have told it," answered Friedrich, "let us have it better. Come round, come round; we must see them both together."

Lothario embraced his friend, and led him to Natalia, who with Theresa came to meet them. All were silent.

"No loitering!" cried Friedrich. "In two days you may be ready for your travels. Now, think you, friend," continued he, addressing Wilhelm, "when we first scraped acquaintance, and I asked you for the pretty nosegay, who could have supposed you were ever to receive a flower like this from me?"

"Do not, at the moment of my highest happiness, remind me of those times!"

"Of which you need not be ashamed, any more than one need be ashamed of his descent. The times were very good times: only I cannot but laugh to look at thee; to my mind, thou resemblest

Saul the son of Kish, who went out to seek his father's asses, and found a kingdom."

"I know not the worth of a kingdom," answered Wilhelm; "but I know I have attained a happiness which I have not deserved, and which I would not change with anything in life."

WILHELM MEISTER'S TRAVELS:

OR

THE RENUNCIANTS.

A NOVEL.

To travel now th' Apprentice does essay,
And every step is girt with doubt and danger:
In truth he uses not to sing or pray;
But is his path perplex'd, this toilsome ranger
Does turn an earnest eye, when mist 's above him,
To his own heart, and to the hearts that love him.

Scarce could tell you rightly
  Whether I'm the same or not;
If you task me very tightly:
  Yes, this is my sense you've got;
Sense that vexes, then assuages,
  Now too light, and now too dark,
But in some few hundred pages
  May again come to the mark.

Does Fortune try thee? She had cause to do't;
She wish'd thee abstinent: obey, be mute!

What, shap'st thou here at the world! 'tis shapen long ago;
The Maker shap'd it, *he* thought it best even *so:*
Thy lot is appointed, go follow its hest;
Thy course is begun, thou must walk, and not rest;
For sorrow and care cannot alter thy case;
And running, not raging, will win thee the race.

Enweri tells us, a most royal man,
The deepest heart and highest head to scan:
"In every place, at every time, thy surest chance
Lies in Decision, Justice, Tolerance."

My inheritance, how wide and fair!
Time is my estate; to Time I'm heir.

Now it is Day; be doing every one!
For the Night cometh, wherein work can none.

feverish movement into all departments of the house. The hours of sleep and waking, of eating, drinking and social conversation were inverted. Except Theresa, none of them had kept in their accustomed course. The men endeavoured, by increased potations, to recover their good humour; and thus communicating to themselves an artificial vivacity, they drove away that natural vivacity, which alone imparts to us true cheerfulness and strength for action.

Wilhelm, in particular, was moved and agitated by the keenest feelings. Those unexpected, frightful incidents had thrown him out of all condition to resist a passion which had so forcibly seized his heart. Felix was restored to him; yet still it seemed that he had nothing: Werner's letters, the directions for his journey were in readiness; there was nothing wanting but the resolution to remove. Everything conspired to hasten him. He could not but conjecture that Lothario and Theresa were awaiting his departure, that they might be wedded. Jarno was unusually silent; you would have said that he had lost a portion of his customary cheerfulness. Happily the Doctor helped our friend, in some degree, from this embarrassment: he declared him sick, and set about administering medicine to him.

The company assembled always in the evening: Friedrich, the wild madcap, who had often drunk more wine than suited him, in general took possession of the talk; and by a thousand frolicsome citations, fantasies and waggish allusions, often kept the party laughing; often also threw them into awkward difficulties, by the liberty he took to think aloud.

In the sickness of his friend he seemed to have little faith. Once when they were all together, "Pray, Doctor," cried he, "how is it you call the malady our friend is labouring under? Will none of the three thousand names, with which you decorate your ignorance, apply to it? The disease at least is not without examples. There is one such case," continued he with an emphatic tone, "in the Egyptian or Babylonian history."

The company looked at one another, and smiled.

"What call you the king—?" cried he, and stopped short a moment. "Well, if you will not help me, I must help myself." He threw the door-leaves up, and pointed to the large picture in the antechamber. "What call you the goat-beard there, with the crown on, who is standing at the foot of the bed, making such a rueful face about his sick son? How call you the beauty, who enters, and in her modest roguish eyes at once brings poison and antidote? How call you the quack of a doctor, who at this moment catches a glimpse of the reality, and for the first time in

his life takes occasion to prescribe a reasonable recipe, to give a drug which cures to the very heart, and is at once salutiferous and savoury?"

In this manner he continued babbling. The company took it with as good a face as might be; hiding their embarrassment behind a forced laugh. A slight blush overspread Natalia's cheeks, and betrayed the movements of her heart. By good fortune, she was walking up and down with Jarno: on coming to the door, with a cunning motion she slipped out, walked once or twice across the antechamber, and retired to her room.

The company were silent: Friedrich began to dance and sing:

"O ye shall wonders see!
What has been is not to be;
What is said is not to say,
Before the break of day
Ye shall wonders see!"

Theresa had gone out to find Natalia; Friedrich pulled the Doctor forward to the picture; pronounced a ridiculous eulogium on medicine, and glided from the room.

Lothario had been standing all the while in the recess of a window; he was looking, without motion, down into the garden. Wilhelm was in the most dreadful state. Left alone with his friends, he still kept silence for a time: he ran with a hurried glance over all his history, and at last, with shuddering, surveyed his present situation: he started up and cried: "If I am to blame for what is happening, for what you and I are suffering, punish me. In addition to my other miseries, deprive me of your friendship, and let me wander, without comfort, forth into the wide world, in which I should have mingled, and withdrawn myself from notice long ago. But if you see in me the victim of a cruel entanglement of chance, out of which I could not thread my way, then give me the assurance of your love, of your friendship, on a journey which I dare not now postpone. A time will come, when I may tell you what has passed of late within me. Perhaps this is but a punishment, which I am suffering, because I did not soon enough disclose myself to you, because I hesitated to display myself entirely as I was: you would have assisted me, you would have helped me out in proper season. Again and again have my eyes been opened to my conduct; but it was ever too late, it was ever in vain! How richly do I merit Jarno's censure! I imagined I had seized it; how firmly did I purpose to employ it, to commence another life! Could I, might I have done so? It avails

feverish movement into all departments of the house. The hours of sleep and waking, of eating, drinking and social conversation were inverted. Except Theresa, none of them had kept in their accustomed course. The men endeavoured, by increased potations, to recover their good humour; and thus communicating to themselves an artificial vivacity, they drove away that natural vivacity, which alone imparts to us true cheerfulness and strength for action.

Wilhelm, in particular, was moved and agitated by the keenest feelings. Those unexpected, frightful incidents had thrown him out of all condition to resist a passion which had so forcibly seized his heart. Felix was restored to him; yet still it seemed that he had nothing: Werner's letters, the directions for his journey were in readiness; there was nothing wanting but the resolution to remove. Everything conspired to hasten him. He could not but conjecture that Lothario and Theresa were awaiting his departure, that they might be wedded. Jarno was unusually silent; you would have said that he had lost a portion of his customary cheerfulness. Happily the Doctor helped our friend, in some degree, from this embarrassment: he declared him sick, and set about administering medicine to him.

The company assembled always in the evening: Friedrich, the wild madcap, who had often drunk more wine than suited him, in general took possession of the talk; and by a thousand frolicsome citations, fantasies and waggish allusions, often kept the party laughing; often also threw them into awkward difficulties, by the liberty he took to think aloud.

In the sickness of his friend he seemed to have little faith. Once when they were all together, "Pray, Doctor," cried he, "how is it you call the malady our friend is labouring under? Will none of the three thousand names, with which you decorate your ignorance, apply to it? The disease at least is not without examples. There is one such case," continued he with an emphatic tone, "in the Egyptian or Babylonian history."

The company looked at one another, and smiled.

"What call you the king—?" cried he, and stopped short a moment. "Well, if you will not help me, I must help myself." He threw the door-leaves up, and pointed to the large picture in the antechamber. "What call you the goat-beard there, with the crown on, who is standing at the foot of the bed, making such a rueful face about his sick son? How call you the beauty, who enters, and in her modest roguish eyes at once brings poison and antidote? How call you the quack of a doctor, who at this moment catches a glimpse of the reality, and for the first time in

garment; so that *The Flight into Egypt*, which our friend had so often seen painted, he now with amazement saw bodied forth before his eyes.

The strangers exchanged salutations; and as Wilhelm, from surprise and attention, could not speak, the young man said: "Our children have formed a friendship in these few moments. Will you go with us, to see whether some kind relation will not spring up between the elder parties also?"

Wilhelm bethought himself an instant, and then answered: "The aspect of your little family procession awakens trust and good-will; and to confess it frankly, curiosity no less, and a lively desire to be better acquainted with you. For at the first glance, one might ask himself the question: Whether you are real travellers, or only Spirits that take pleasure in enlivening these uninhabitable Mountains by pleasant visions?"

"Then come home with us to our dwelling," said the other. "Come with us!" cried the children, already drawing Felix along with them. "Come with us!" said the woman, turning her soft kindliness from the suckling to the stranger.

Without reflecting, Wilhelm answered: "I am sorry that for the present moment I cannot follow you. This night, at least, I must spend up at the Border-house. My portmanteau, my papers, all is lying up there, unpacked, intrusted to no one. But that I may prove my wish and purpose to satisfy your friendly invitation, take my Felix with you as a pledge. Tomorrow I shall see you. How far is it?"

"We shall be home before sunset," said the carpenter: "and from the Border-house you are but a league and a half. Your boy increases our household for this night, and to-morrow we expect you."

The man and the animal set forth. Wilhelm smiled thoughtfully to see his Felix so soon received among the Angels. The boy had already seized a sedge-tuft, and taken the basket from the younger of his companions. The procession was again on the point of vanishing behind a ledge of rock, when Wilhelm recollected himself, and cried: "But how shall I inquire you out?"

"Ask for St. Joseph!" sounded from the hollow; and the whole vision had sunk behind the blue shady wall of cliffs. A pious hymn, uplifted on a chorus of several voices, rose echoing from the distance; and Wilhelm thought he could distinguish the voice of his Felix among the rest.

He ascended the path, and thus protracted the period of sunset. The heavenly star, which he had more than once lost sight of, illuminated him afresh as he mounted higher, and it was still

feverish movement into ... We are
of sleep and waking, of ... does it
were inverted. Except ... virtue
accustomed course. ... I will
tions, to recover their g... so fearfully
themselves an artificia... indiscretion is
vivacity, which alone in... highest pitch, it
for action.

Wilhelm, in particul... them by the hand,
feelings. Those unex... secret article on
out of all condition ... This amends that
seized his heart. Fel... owed that these
that he had nothin... His reason has
journey were in rea... is Natalia: my
resolution to remove. ... our eyes upon
could not but conject... who made us
his departure, that t... pt to forward
silent; you would ha... e have done so,
customary cheerfulne... only shook the
in some degree, fro... come together
and set about admini... work together in

The company ass... conceivable how
wild madcap, who ha... self and others,
general took possess... over many;
citations, fantasies ... are at any rate
laughing; often als... jects, which in
liberty he took to t... ey miss the road

In the sickness ... nthusiasm; but
Once when they ... ed is often exe-
"how is it you ca... eople of benevo-
Will none of the t... of it. No other
your ignorance, ap... has been pre-
examples. There ...
tic tone, "in the L... ame jumping
The company ... "how will you
"What call y... the freshest you
moment. "Well, ... yond them all.
He threw the d... this treasure for
the antechamber.
crown on, who is ... Lothario, holding
rueful face abou...
enters, and in h... and the grace of
antidote? How ...
moment catches ...

God. It was thus I was the wooer; thus I am the messenger: I listened at the door; she told the Abbé everything."

"Barefaced rogue! who bade thee listen?" said Lothario.

"Who bade her bolt the door?" cried Friedrich. "I heard it all: she was in a wondrous pucker. In the night when Felix seemed so ill, and was lying half upon her knees, and thou wert sitting comfortless before her, sharing the beloved load, she made a vow, that if the child died, she would confess her love to thee, and offer thee her hand. And now when the child lives, why should she change her mind? What we promise under such conditions, we keep under any. Nothing wanting but the parson! He will come, and marvel what strange news he brings."

The Abbé entered. "We know it all," cried Friedrich: "be as brief as possible; it is mere formality you come for; they never send for you or me on any other score."

"He has listened," said the Baron.—"Scandalous!" exclaimed the Abbé.

"Now, quick!" said Friedrich. "How stands it with the ceremonies? These we can reckon on our fingers. You must travel; the Marchese's invitation answers to a hairsbreadth. If we had you once beyond the Alps, it will all be right: the people are obliged to you for undertaking anything surprising; you procure them an amusement which they are not called to pay for. It is as if you gave a free ball; all ranks partake in it."

"In such popular festivities," replied the Abbé, "you have done the public much service in your time; but today, it seems, you will not let me speak at all."

"If it is not just as I have told it," answered Friedrich, "let us have it better. Come round, come round; we must see them both together."

Lothario embraced his friend, and led him to Natalia, who with Theresa came to meet them. All were silent.

"No loitering!" cried Friedrich. "In two days you may be ready for your travels. Now, think you, friend," continued he, addressing Wilhelm, "when we first scraped acquaintance, and I asked you for the pretty nosegay, who could have supposed you were ever to receive a flower like this from me?"

"Do not, at the moment of my highest happiness, remind me of those times!"

"Of which you need not be ashamed, any more than one need be ashamed of his descent. The times were very good times: only I cannot but laugh to look at thee; to my mind, thou resemblest

into a beautifully cultivated valley, begirt on all sides with hills. A large monastic edifice, half in ruins, half in repair, immediately attracted their attention. "This is St. Joseph," said the porter: "Pity for the fine Church! Do but look how fresh and firm it still holds up its pillars through bush and tree, though it has lain many hundred years in decay."

"The Cloister, on the contrary," said Wilhelm, "I observe, is kept in good state."

"Yes," said the other; "there is a Schaffner lives here; he manages the husbandry, collects the dues and tithes, which the people far and wide have to pay him."

So speaking, they had entered through the open gate into a spacious court, surrounded with earnest-looking, well-kept buildings, and announcing itself as the residence of some peaceful community. Among the children playing in the area, Wilhelm noticed Felix; the other two were the Angels of last night. The friendly trefoil came running towards him, with salutations and assurances that papa would soon be back. He, in the mean while, they said, must go into the hall, and rest himself.

How surprised was Wilhelm when the children led him into this apartment which they named the hall. Passing directly from the court, through a large door, our wanderer found himself in a very cleanly undecayed Chapel, which, however, as he saw well enough, had been fitted up for the domestic uses of daily life. On the one side stood a table, a settle, some chairs and benches; on the other side a neatly-carved dresser, with variegated pottery, jugs and glasses. Some chests and trunks were standing in suitable niches; and, simple as the whole appeared, there was not wanting an air of comfort; and daily household life looked forth from it with an aspect of invitation. The light fell in from high windows on the side. But what most roused the attention of the wanderer, was a series of coloured figures painted on the wall, stretching under the windows, at a considerable height, round three quarters of the Chapel; and hanging down to the wainscot, which covered the remainder of the wall to the ground. The pictures represented the history of St. Joseph. Here you might see him first employed with his carpentry work; here he meets Mary, and a lily is sprouting from the ground between them, while Angels hover round observing them. Here his betrothing takes place; next comes the salutation of the Angel. Here he is sitting disconsolate among his neglected work; he has laid by the axe, and is thinking to put away his wife. But now appears the Angel to him in a dream, and his situation changes. With reverence he looks on the new-born Child in the Stable at

Bethlehem, and prays to it. Soon after this, comes a wonderfully beautiful picture. You observe a quantity of timber lying dressed; it is just to be put together, and by chance two of the pieces form a cross. The Child has fallen asleep on the cross; his mother sits by, and looks at him with heartfelt love; and the foster-father pauses with his labour, that he may not awaken him. Next follows the Flight into Egypt: it called forth a smile from the gazing traveller; for he saw here on the walls a repetition of the living figures he had met last night.

He had not long pursued his contemplations, when the landlord entered; whom he directly recognised as the leader of the Holy Caravan. They saluted each other cordially; much conversation followed; yet Wilhelm's chief attention continued fixed on the pictures. The host observed the feeling of his guest, and began with a smile: "No doubt you are wondering at the strange accordance of this building with its inhabitants, whom you got acquainted with last night. Yet it is perhaps still more singular than you suppose: the building has in truth formed the inhabit ants. For when the inanimate has life, it can also produce what has life."

"Yes, indeed!" answered Wilhelm; "I should be surprised if the spirit, which worked so powerfully in this mountain-solitude long centuries ago, and drew round it such a mighty body of edifices, possessions and rights, diffusing in return the blessings of manifold culture over the region, could not still, out of these ruins, manifest the force of its life on some living being. But let us not linger on general reflections; make me acquainted with your history; let me know how it can possibly have happened, that without affectation and presumption, the past again represents itself in you, and what was, again is."

Just as Wilhelm was expecting responsive information from the lips of his host, a friendly voice in the court cried: "Joseph!" The man obeyed it, and went out.

"So he too is Joseph!" said Wilhelm to himself. "This is strange enough; and yet not so strange as that, in his life, he should personate his Saint." At the same time looking through the door, he saw the Virgin Mother of last night, speaking with her husband. They parted at last; the woman walked towards the opposite building. "Mary," cried he after her, "a word more."

"So she too is Mary!" said Wilhelm inwardly. "Little would make me feel as if I were transported eighteen hundred years into the past!" He thought of the solemn and secluded valley in which he was, of the wrecks and silence all round; and a strange

antiquarian mood came over him. It was time for the landlord and children to come in. The latter called for Wilhelm to go and walk, as the landlord had still some business to do. And now came in view the ruins of the Church, with its many shafts and columns, with its high peaks and walls; which looked as if gathering strength in the influence of wind and weather; for strong trees from of old had taken root in the broad backs of the walls, and now in company with grass, flowers and moss in great quantities, exhibited bold hanging gardens vegetating in the air. Soft sward-paths led you up the banks of a lively brook; and from a little elevation our wanderer could now overlook the edifice and its site with more interest, as its occupants had become still more singular in his eyes, and by their harmony with their abode had awakened his liveliest curiosity.

The promenaders returned; and found in the religious hall a table standing covered. At the upper end was an arm-chair, in which the mistress of the house took her seat. Beside her she had placed a high wicker cradle, in which lay the little infant; the father sat next this on her left hand, Wilhelm on her right. The three children occupied the under space of the table. An old serving-maid brought in a well-readied meal. Eating and drinking implements alike pointed to the past. The children afforded matter for talk, while Wilhelm could not satisfy himself with looking at the form and the bearing of his saintly hostess.

Their repast over, the company separated. The landlord took his guest to a shady spot in the Ruin, where, from an elevated station, the pleasant prospect down the valley lay entire before them; and farther off, the heights of the lower country, with their fruitful declivities and woody backs, were seen protruding one behind the other. "It is fair," said the landlord, "that I satisfy your curiosity; and the rather, as I feel that you can view the strange with seriousness, when you find it resting on a serious ground. This religious foundation, the remains of which are lying round us, was dedicated to the Holy Family, and in old times noted as a place of pilgrimage for many wonders done in it. The Church was consecrated to the Mother and the Son. It has lain for several centuries in ruins. The Chapel, dedicated to the Holy Foster-father, still remains, as does likewise the serviceable part of the Cloister. The revenues have for many years belonged to a temporal Prince, who keeps a Steward or Schaffner here; this Schaffner am I, son of the last Schaffner, who also succeeded his father in the office.

"St. Joseph, though any regular worship of him has long ceased here, had been so helpful to our family, that it is not to be

wondered at, if they felt particularly well inclined towards him: hence came it that they had me baptised by the name of Joseph, and thereby, I may say, in some sense determined my whole future way of life. I grew up: and if I used to help my father in managing the dues, I attached myself as gladly, nay still more gladly, to my mother, who cheerfully distributed her bounty according to her fortune, and for her kindness and good deeds was known and loved over all the Mountains. Ere long she would send me out, now this way, now that; now to fetch, now to carry, now direct; and I very speedily began to be at home in this sort of pious occupation.

"In general, our Mountain life has something more humane in it than the life of lowlanders. The inhabitants here are nearer, and, if you will, more remote also. Our wants are smaller, but more pressing. Each man is placed more on his own footing; he must learn to depend on his own hands, on his own limbs. The labourer, the post, the porter, all unite in one person; each of us is more connected with the other, meets him oftener, and lives with him in joint activity.

"As I was still young, and my shoulders could not bear heavy burdens, I fell upon a thought of furnishing a little ass with panniers, which I might drive before me up and down the steep footpaths. In the Mountains the ass is no such despicable animal as in the plain country, where the labourer that ploughs with horses reckons himself better than he that turns his furrow with oxen. And I walked behind my beast with the less hesitation, as I had before observed in the Chapel that an animal of this same sort had been promoted to such honour as to carry God and his Mother. This Chapel was not then, however, in the state you now see it in. It had been treated as a carthouse, nay almost as a stable. Firewood, stakes, implements, barrels and ladders, everything that came to hand, lay huddled together in it. Lucky that the pictures were so high, and the wainscot could stand some hardships. But even in my childhood, I used many a time to clamber over the wood, and delight myself with looking at the pictures, which no one could properly explain to me. However, I knew at least that the Saint whose life stood depicted on these walls was my patron; and I rejoiced in him as much as if he had been my uncle. I waxed in stature; and it being an express condition, that whoever meant to aspire after this post of Schaffner must practise some handicraft, our family, desiring that I might inherit so good a benefice, determined on putting me to learn some trade; and such a one, at the same time, as might be useful here in our upland way of life.

"My father was a cooper, and had been accustomed to supply

of himself whatever was required in that sort; from which there arose no little profit, both to himself and the country. But I could not prevail on myself to follow him in this business. My inclination drew me irresistibly to the joiner trade; the tools and materials of which I had seen, from infancy upwards, so accurately and circumstantially painted beside my Patron Saint. I signified my wish: nothing could be objected to it; the less, as in our frequent buildings, the carpenter is often wanted here; nay, if he have any sleight in his trade and fondness for it, especially in forest districts, the arts of the cabinet-maker, and even of the carver, lie close beside his province. And what still farther confirmed me in my higher purposes was a picture, which now, alas, is almost effaced. If once you know what it is meant to represent, you may still be able to decipher the figures, when I take you to look at it. St. Joseph had got no lower a commission than to make a throne for King Herod. The royal seat was to be erected between two given pillars. Joseph carefully measures the breadth and height, and fashions a costly throne. But how astonished is he, how alarmed, on carrying his finished work to the place: the throne is too high, and not broad enough. King Herod, as we know, was a man that did not understand jesting: the pious wright is in the greatest perplexity. The divine Child, accustomed to follow him everywhere, and in childlike humble sport to carry his tools after him, observes his strait, and is immediately at hand with advice and assistance. He requires of his Foster-father to take hold of the throne by the one side, he himself grasps it by the other, and both begin to pull. Easily and pliantly, as if it had been made of leather, the carved throne extends in breadth, contracts proportionably in length, and fits itself to the place with the nicest accuracy, to the great comfort of the reassured Master, and the perfect satisfaction of the King.

"This throne was, in my youth, quite distinctly visible; and by the remains of the one side you will still be able to discern, that there was no want of carving on it; which indeed must have been easier for the painter, than it would have been for the carpenter, had such a thing been required of him.

"That circumstance, however, raised no scruples in me; but I looked on the handicraft, to which I had devoted myself, in so honourable a light, that I was all impatience to be apprenticed to it; a longing which was the easier to fulfil, as a master of the trade lived in our neighbourhood, who worked for the whole district, and kept several apprentices and journeymen about him. Thus I continued in the neighbourhood of my parents, and to a certain extent pursued my former way of life also; seeing I em-

ployed my leisure hours and holydays in doing those charitable messages which my mother still intrusted to me.

CHAPTER III.

THE VISIT.

"So passed several years," continued the narrator. "I very soon comprehended the principles of my trade; and my frame, expanded by labour, was equal to the undertaking of everything connected with the business. At the same time, I kept managing my ancient service, which my good mother, or rather the sick and destitute, required at my hands. I moved with my beast through the Mountains; punctually distributed my lading, and brought back from shopkeepers and merchants what we needed here at home.

"My master was contented with me, my parents also. Already I enjoyed the satisfaction, in my wanderings, of seeing many a house which I had helped to raise, or had myself decorated. For, in particular, that last notching of the beam-ends, that carving of certain simple forms, that branding in of pretty figures, that red-painting of certain recesses, by which a wooden house in the Mountains acquires so pleasant an aspect; these arts were specially intrusted to me, as I always made the best hand of such tasks, having Herod's Throne and its ornaments constantly in my head.

"Among the help-needing persons, whom my mother took peculiar charge of, were particularly young wives near the time of their confinement; as by degrees I could well enough remark, though in such cases the commissions given me were veiled in a certain mystery. My messages, on these occasions, never reached directly to the party concerned: but everything passed through the hands of a good old woman, who lived down the dale, and was called Frau Elizabeth. My mother, herself skilful in the art which saves life to so many at their very entrance into life, constantly maintained a good understanding with Frau Elizabeth; and I often heard, in all quarters, that many a one of our stout mountaineers stood indebted for his existence to these two women. The secrecy with which Elizabeth received me at all times; her pointed replies to my enigmatical questions, which I myself did not understand, awoke in me a singular reverence for her; and her house, which was extremely clean, appeared to me to represent a sort of sanctuary.

"Meanwhile, by my acquirements and adroitness in my craft,

I had gained considerable influence in the family. As my father, in the character of cooper, had taken charge of the cellar and its contents, I now took charge of roof and room, and repaired many a damaged part in the old building. In particular, I contrived to make some fallen barns and out-houses once more serviceable for domestic use; and scarcely was this done, when I set about cleaning and clearing out my beloved Chapel. In a few days, it was put in order, almost as you see it at present: and such pieces of the wainscot as were damaged, or altogether wanting, I had endeavoured, as I went along, to restore in the same fashion as the rest. These door-leaves of the entrance too, you might think were old enough; yet they are of my workmanship. I passed several years in carving them at leisure hours, having first mortised the body of them firmly together out of strong oaken planks. Whatever of the pictures had not been effaced or injured at that time, has since continued unimpaired; and I assisted our glazier in a new house he was erecting, under the condition of his putting in coloured windows here.

"If these figures and thoughts on the Saint's life had hitherto occupied my imagination, the whole impressed itself on me with much more liveliness, now that I could again regard the place as a sanctuary; could linger in it, and muse at leisure on what I saw or conjectured. There lay in me an irresistible desire to follow in the footsteps of this Saint; and as a similar history was not to be looked for in these times, I determined on commencing my resemblance from the lowest point upwards; as indeed, by the use of my beast of burden, I had already commenced it long ago. The small creature, which I had hitherto employed, would no longer content me: I chose for myself a far more stately carrier, and got a large stout saddle, which was equally adapted for riding and packing. A pair of new baskets were also procured; and a net of many-coloured knots, flakes and tufts, intermixed with jingling tags of metal, decorated the neck of my long-eared beast, which might now show itself beside its model on the wall. No one thought of mocking me, when I passed over the Mountains in this equipment: people do not quarrel with Benevolence for putting on a strange outside.

"Meanwhile, war, or rather its consequences, had approached our district; for dangerous bands of vagabond deserters had more than once collected, and here and there practised much violence and wanton mischief. By the good order of our Provincial Militia, by patrolling and prompt watchfulness, the evil was very soon remedied: but we too quickly relapsed into our former carelessness, and, before we thought of it, new disorders broke forth.

"For a long time all had been quiet in our neighbourhood, and I had travelled peacefully with my ass along the accustomed paths; till one day passing over a newly sown glade of the forest, I observed a female form sitting, or rather lying, at the edge of the fence-ditch. She seemed to be asleep or in a swoon. I endeavoured to recall her; and as she opened her eyes and sat upright, she cried with eagerness: 'Where is he? Did you see him?' I asked: 'Whom?' She replied: 'My husband!' Considering her extremely youthful appearance, I had not been expecting this reply: yet I continued, so much the more kindly, to assist her, and assure her of my sympathy. I learned that the two travellers had left their carriage, the road being so heavy, and struck into a footpath to make a shorter cut. Hard by, they had been overtaken by armed marauders; her husband had gone off fighting with them; she, not able to follow him far, had sunk on this spot, and lain there she knew not how long. She pressingly begged of me to leave her, and hasten after her husband. She rose to her feet; and the fairest, loveliest form stood before me; yet I could easily observe, that she was in a situation, in which she might soon require the help of my mother and Frau Elizabeth. We disputed a while: for I wished, before all, to bring her to some place of safety; she wished, in the first place, to have tidings of her husband. She would not leave the trace of him; and all my arguments would, perhaps, have been unavailing, had not a party of our Militia, which the tidings of fresh misdeeds had again called out into service, chanced to pass that way through the forest. These I informed of the matter; with them the necessary arrangements were made, the place of meeting appointed, and so the business settled for the time. With great expedition I hid my panniers in a neighbouring cave, which had often served me before as a repository: I adjusted my saddle for easy riding: and not without a strange emotion, lifted the fair burden on my willing beast, which knowing of itself what path to choose, left me at liberty to walk by her side.

"You can figure to yourself, without my describing it at large, in what a strange mood I was. What I had long been seeking, I had now found. I felt as if I were dreaming, and then again as if I were awakening from a dream. That heavenly form, which I saw as it were hovering in the air, and bending aside from the green branches, now seemed to me like a dream which had risen in my soul through those figures in the Chapel. Soon those figures themselves seemed to me to have been only dreams, which were here issuing in a fair reality. I asked her many things; she answered me softly and kindly, as beseemed a dignified distress. She often desired me, when we reached any open height, to stop,

to look round, to listen. She desired me with such grace, with such a deep wistful look from under her long black eye-lashes, that I could not but do whatever lay in my power; nay at last I climbed to the top of a high solitary branchless pine. Never had this feat of my handicraft been more welcome to me; never had I with greater joy brought down ribbons and silks from such elevations at festivals and fairs. But for this time, alas, I came back without booty; above, as below, I could hear or see nothing. In the end, she herself called me down, and beckoned to me earnestly with her hand; nay at last, as in gliding down, I quitted my hold a considerable way up, and dropt on the ground, she gave a scream, and a sweet kindliness spread over her face as she saw me before her unhurt.

"Why should I tell you in detail of the hundred attentions, with which I strove the whole way to be pleasing, to divert her thoughts from her grief. Indeed, how could I! For it is the very quality of true attention, that at the moment it makes a nothing all. To my feeling, the flowers which I broke for her, the distant scenes which I showed her, the hills, the woods which I named to her, were so many precious treasures which I was giving her to obtain for myself a place among her interests, as one tries to do by presents.

"Already she had gained me for my whole life, when we reached our destination, at that good old woman's door, and I saw a painful separation close at hand. Once more I ran over all her form, and as my eyes came on her feet, I stooped as if to adjust something in my girdle, and kissed the daintiest shoe that I had ever seen, yet without her noticing me. I helped her down, sprang up the steps, and called in at the door: 'Frau Elizabeth, here is a visitor!' The good old woman came down: and I looked over her shoulders towards the house, as the fair being mounted the steps, with graceful sorrow, and inward painful self-consciousness; till she gratefully embraced my worthy old woman, and accompanied her into the better chamber. They shut the door, and I was left standing outside by my ass, like a man that has delivered a loading of precious wares, and is again as poor a carrier as before.

CHAPTER IV.

THE LILY-STALK.

"I was still lingering in my departure, for I knew not what to do if I were gone, when Frau Elizabeth came to the door, and desired me to send my mother down to her; and then to go about, and, if

possible, get tidings of the husband. 'Mary begs you very much to do this,' said she. 'Can I not speak with her again myself?' replied I. 'That will not do,' said Elizabeth; and we parted. In a short time I reached our dwelling; my mother was ready that same night to go over, and be helpful to the young stranger. I hastened down the country, thinking I should get the surest intelligence at the Amtmann's. But the Amtmann himself was still in uncertainty; and as I was known to him, he invited me to pass the night there. It seemed interminably long, and still I had the fair form before my eyes, as she sat gently swaying in the saddle, and looking down to me so sorrowful and friendly. Every moment I hoped for news. To the worthy husband I honestly wished life and safety, and yet I liked so well to fancy her a widow! The ranging troops by little and little collected; and after many variable rumours, the certainty at last came to light, that the carriage was saved, but the hapless traveller dead of his wounds in a neighbouring village. I learned also, that according to our first arrangement, some of the party had gone to communicate the melancholy tidings to Frau Elizabeth; consequently I had nothing more to do there. Yet a boundless impatience, an immeasurable longing, drove me over wood and mountain once more to her threshold. It was dark; the door was shut; I saw light in the room, I saw shadows moving on the curtains; and thus I sat watching on a bench opposite the house; still on the point of knocking, and still withheld by many considerations.

"But why should I go on describing to you what is in itself of no interest? In short, next morning too the house was shut against me. They knew the heavy tidings, they needed me no farther; they sent me to my father, to my work; they would not answer my inquiries; they wanted to be rid of me.

"For eight days this sort of treatment had continued, when at last Frau Elizabeth called me in: 'Step softly, my friend,' said she; 'but enter without scruple.' She led me into a trim apartment; where, in the corner, through the half-opened curtains, I saw my fair one dressed, and sitting upright in the bed. Frau Elizabeth went towards her as if to announce me; lifted something from the bed, and brought it me: wrapt in the whitest swathings, the prettiest boy! Frau Elizabeth held it straight betwixt the mother and me; and just then the Lily-stalk occurred to me, which in the picture springs from the ground between Joseph and Mary, as witness of their pure relation. From that moment, I was certain of my cause, certain of my happiness. I could approach her with freedom, speak with her, bear her heavenly eye, take the boy on my arm, and imprint a warm kiss on his brow.

"'How I thank you for your love to that orphan child!' said the mother. Unthinkingly, and briskly, I cried: 'It is no orphan any longer, if you like!'

"Frau Elizabeth, more prudent than I, took the child from my hands, and got me put away.

"To this hour, when I chance to be wandering over our mountains and forests, the remembrance of that time forms my happiest entertainment. I can still recall the slightest particulars; which, however, as is fit, I spare you at present. Weeks passed on; Mary was recovered; I could see her oftener, my intercourse with her was a train of services and attentions. Her family circumstances allowed her to choose a residence according to her pleasure. She first stayed with Frau Elizabeth; then she paid us a visit, to thank my mother and me for so many and such friendly helps. She liked to live with us; and I flattered myself that it was partly on my account. What I wished to tell her, however, and durst not utter, came to words in a singular and pretty wise, when I took her into the Chapel, which I had then fitted up as a habitual apartment. I showed her the pictures, and explained them to her one after the other; and so doing, unfolded the duties of a Foster-father in so vivid and cordial a manner, that the tears came into her eyes, and I could not get to the end of my picture-exhibition. I thought myself certain of her affection, though I was not proud enough to wish so soon to efface the memory of her husband. The law imposes on widows a year of mourning; and, in truth, such an epoch, which includes in it the change of all earthly things, is necessary for a feeling heart, to alleviate the painful impressions of a great loss. We see the flowers fade and the leaves fall; but we likewise see fruits ripen, and new buds shoot forth. Life belongs to the living; and he who lives, must be prepared for vicissitudes.

"I now spoke with my mother on the concern which lay so near my heart. She thereupon disclosed to me how grievous to Mary the death of her husband had been, and how she had borne up and gathered courage again, solely from the thought that she must live for her child. My inclination was not unknown to the women; and already Mary had accustomed herself to the idea of living with us. She stayed a while longer in the neighbourhood; then she came up to us, and we lived for a time in the gentlest and happiest state of betrothment. At last we wedded. That feeling, which had first drawn us together, did not fade away. The duties and joys of the Father and the Foster-father were united: and so our little family, as it increased, did certainly surpass its prototype in number of persons; but the virtues of that pattern, in

respect to faithfulness and purity of sentiments, were sacredly maintained and practised by us. And so also in friendly habitude we keep up the external appearance which we, by accident, arrived at, and which fits our internal state so well: for though all of us are good walkers, and stout bearers of weight, the beast of burden still remains in our company, when any business or visit takes us through these mountains and valleys. As you met us last night, so does the whole country know us; and we feel proud that our walk and conversation are of such a sort as not to throw disgrace on the saintly name and figure, whose imitators we profess to be."

Wilhelm to Natalia.

I now conclude a pleasant half-marvellous history, which I have just written down for thee, from the mouth of a very worthy man. If I have not always given his very words; if here and there, in describing his sentiments, I have expressed my own, this, considering the relationship of mind I feel with him, was natural enough. His reverence for his wife, does it not resemble that which I entertain for thee? And is there not, even in the first meeting of these lovers, something similar to ours? But that he is fortunate enough to walk beside his animal, as it bears the doubly beautiful burden; that he can enter at evenings with his family possession through the old Cloister-gate; that he is inseparable from his own loved ones; in all this I may well secretly envy him. Yet I must not complain of my destiny, seeing I have promised thee that I will suffer and be silent, as thou also hast undertaken.

Many a fair feature in the domestic union of these devout and cheerful persons, I have been obliged to omit; for how could it be depicted in writing? Two days have passed over me agreeably; but the third warns me to be mindful of my farther wayfaring.

With Felix I had a little quarrel today. He was almost for compelling me to break through one wholesome regulation, for which I stand engaged to thee. It has been an error, a misfortune, in short an arrangement of Fate with me hitherto, that before I am aware, my company increases; that I take a new burden on my shoulders, which thenceforth I have to bear, and drag along with me. So in my present wanderings no third party is to become a permanent associate with us. We are, we will and must continue Two; and just now a new, and not very pleasing connexion, seemed about to be established.

To the children of the house with whom Felix has gaily passed these days in sporting, there had joined himself a little

merry beggar-boy, who, submitting to be used or misused as the play required, had very soon got into favour with Felix. By various hints and expressions, I now gathered that the latter had found himself a playmate for the next stage of our journey. The boy is known in this quarter, and everywhere tolerated for his lively humour; and now and then obtains an alms. Me, however, he did not please, and I desired our host to get him sent away. This likewise took place; but Felix was angry at it, and we had a little flaw of discord.

In the course of this affair, I discovered something which was pleasant to me. In the corner of the Chapel, or hall, stood a box of stones; which Felix, who, since our wandering through the Mountains, has acquired an excessive fondness for minerals, eagerly drew forth and examined. Many pretty eye-catching things were among them. Our landlord said, the child might choose out what he liked: these were the remains of a large collection which a friend had despatched thence a short while ago. He called this person Montan; and thou wilt easily suppose how glad I was to hear this name, under which one of our best friends is travelling, one to whom we owe so much. Having inquired into date and circumstances, I can now hope to meet him ere long on my pilgrimage.

CHAPTER V.

THE news that Montan was in the neighbourhood had made Wilhelm reflect. He considered that it ought not to be left to chance alone whether he should meet with so estimable a friend; therefore he inquired of his landlord if they did not know towards what quarter this traveller had turned his course. No one had any information on this point: and Wilhelm had determined to pursue his pilgrimage on the former plan, when Felix cried: "If Father were not so strange, we might soon find Montan."

"What way?" said Wilhelm.

Felix answered: "Little Fitz told us last night that he could trace out the stranger gentleman, who had many fine stones with him, and understood them well."

After some talking, Wilhelm at last resolved on making the experiment; purposing, in the course of it, to keep so much the sharper watch on the suspicious boy. Fitz was soon found; and, hearing what was to be done, he soon produced mallet and chisel, and a stout hammer, with a little bag; and set forth, running merrily before the party, in his mining accoutrements.

The way went to a side, and up the Mountains. The children skipped on together, from crag to crag, over stock and stone, over brook and bourn; and without having any path before him, Fitz pressed rapidly upwards, now looking to the right hand, now to the left. As Wilhelm, and especially the laden porter, could not follow so fast, the boys often ran back and forward, singing and whistling. The aspect of some new trees arrested the attention of Felix; who now for the first time formed acquaintance with larches and fir-cones, and curiously surveyed the strange gentian-shrubs. And thus, in their toilsome wandering, there lacked not from time to time a little entertainment. But all at once they were fronted by a barricado of trees, which a storm had hurled together in a confused mass. "This was not in my reckoning," said Fitz. "Wait here till I find my way again; only have a care of the cave up there; no one goes into it or near it, without getting harm, or having tricks played on him."

The boy went off in an ascending direction: the porter, on the other hand, grumbling at the excessive difficulty of the way, set down his luggage, and searched sidewards and downwards for some beaten path.

No sooner did Felix see himself alone with his father, than his curiosity awoke, and he glided softly towards the cave. Wilhelm, who gave him leave, observed after some time that the child was no longer in sight. He himself mounted to the cave, at the mouth of which he had last seen the boy; and, on entering, he found the place empty. It was spacious, but could be taken in at a glance. He searched for some other outlet, and found none. The matter began to be serious. He took the whistle, which he wore at his button-hole; an answer to his call came sounding out of the depth, so that he was uncertain whether he should take it for an echo; when, shortly afterwards, Felix peeped out of the ground; for the chink through which he looked was scarcely wide enough to let through his head.

"What art thou about there?" cried his father.

"Hush!" said Felix: "art thou alone?"

"Quite alone," answered Wilhelm.

"Then go quick," cried the boy, "and fetch me a couple of strong clubs."

Wilhelm went to the fallen timber, and with his hanger cut off a pair of thick staves; Felix took them, and vanished, having first called to his father: "Let no one into the cave!"

After some time, Felix cried: "Another pair of staves, and larger ones!" With these also his father provided him, and waited anxiously for the solution of his riddle. At length the

boy issued rapidly from the cleft, and brought a little box with him, not larger than an octavo volume; of rich, antique appearance; it seemed to be of gold, decorated with enamel. "Put it up, father," said the boy, "and let none see it!" Wilhelm had not time to ask many questions; for they already heard the call of the returning porter; and scarcely had they joined him, when the little squire also began to shout and wave from above.

On their approach, he cried out: "Montan is not far off: I bet we shall soon meet him."

"How canst thou know this," said Wilhelm, "in so wild a forest, where no human being leaves any trace behind him?"

"That is my knack," said Fitz; and, like a will-o'-wisp, he hopped off hither and thither, in a side direction, to lead his masters the strangest road.

Felix, in the mean while, highly satisfied in the treasure he had found, highly delighted at possessing a secret, kept close by his father, without, as formerly, skipping up and down beside his comrade. He nodded to Wilhelm with sparkling eyes; glancing towards his companion, and making significant faces, to indicate how much he was above Fitz now, in possessing a secret entirely wanting to the other. He carried it so far at length, that Fitz, who often stopped and looked about, must very soon have noticed it. Wilhelm therefore said to Felix: "My son, whoever wishes to keep a secret, must hide from us that he possesses one. Self-complaisance over the concealed destroys its concealment." Felix restrained himself; but his former gay free manner to his comrade he could not now attain.

All at once little Fitz stood still. He beckoned the rest to him: "Do you hear a beating?" said he. "It is the sound of a hammer striking on the rock."

"We hear it," answered they.

"That is Montan," said he, "or some one who will tell us of him."

Following the sound, which was repeated from time to time, they reached an opening in the wood; and perceived a steep high naked rock, towering over all the rest, leaving even the lofty forest deep beneath it. On the top of it they descried a man: he was too far off to be recognised. Immediately the boys set about ascending the precipitous path. Wilhelm followed with some difficulty, nay danger: for the person that climbs a rock foremost always proceeds with more safety, because he can look out for his conveniences; he who comes after sees only whither the other has arrived, but not how. The boys soon reached the top; and Wilhelm heard a shout of joy. "It is Jarno," cried Felix to his

father: and Jarno immediately came forward to a rugged spot; stretched out his hand to his friend, and drew him up. They embraced, and welcomed each other into the free skyey air, with the rapture of old friends.

But scarcely had they stept asunder, when a giddiness came over Wilhelm; not so much on his own account, as at seeing the boys hanging over the frightful abyss. Jarno observed it, and immediately bade all sit down. "Nothing is more natural," said he, "than that we should grow giddy at a great sight, which comes unexpectedly before us, to make us feel at once our littleness and our greatness. But there is not in the world any truer enjoyment, than at the moment when we are so made giddy for the first time."

"Are these, then, down there, the great Mountains we climbed over?" inquired Felix. "How little they look! And here," continued he, loosening a crumb of stone from the rock, "is the old cat-gold again: this is found everywhere, I suppose?"

"It is found far and wide," answered Jarno; "and as thou art asking after such things, I may bid thee notice, that thou art now sitting on the oldest mountain, on the earliest rock of this world."

"Was the world not made at once, then?" said Felix.

"Hardly," answered Jarno; "good bread needs baking."

"Down there," said Felix, "is another sort of rock; and there again another, and still again another," cried he, pointing from the nearest mountains to the more remote, and so downward to the plain.

It was a beautiful day, and Jarno let them survey the lordly prospect in detail. Here and there stood several other peaks, similar to the one our travellers were on. A secondary moderate range of mountains seemed as if struggling up, but did not by far attain that height. Farther off, the surface flattened still more; yet again some strangely protruding forms rose to view. At last, in the remote distance, lakes were visible, and rivers; and a fruitful country spread itself out like a sea. And when the eye came back, it pierced into frightful depths, sounding with cataracts, and connected with each other in labyrinthic combination.

Felix could not satisfy himself with questions, and Jarno was kind enough to answer all of them: in which, however, Wilhelm thought he noticed that the teacher did not always speak quite truly and sincerely. So, after the unstaid boys had again clambered off, Wilhelm said to his friend: "Thou hast not spoken with the child, about these matters, as thou speakest to thyself."

"That indeed were a heavy requisition," answered Jarno. "We do not always speak, even to ourselves, as we think; and it is not

fit to tell others anything but what they can take up. A man understands nothing but what is commensurate with him. To fix a child's attention on what is present; to give him a description, a name, is the best thing we can do for him. He will soon enough begin to inquire after causes."

"One cannot blame this latter tendency," observed Wilhelm. "The multiplicity of objects perplexes every one; and it is easier, instead of investigating them, to ask directly, Whence, and Whither?"

"And yet," said Jarno, "as children look at what is present only superficially, we cannot speak with them of Origin and Object otherwise than superficially also."

"Most men," answered Wilhelm, "continue all their days in this predicament; and never reach that glorious epoch, in which the Comprehensible appears to us common and insipid."

"It may well be called glorious," answered Jarno; "for it is a middle stage between despair and deification."

"Let us abide by the boy," said Wilhelm, "who is at present my first care. He has somehow got a fondness for minerals, since we began this journey. Canst thou not impart so much to me as would put it in my power to satisfy him, at least for a time?"

"That will not do," said Jarno. "In every new department, one must, in the first place, begin again as a child; throw a passionate interest over the subject; take pleasure in the shell, till one has the happiness to arrive at the kernel."

"Tell me, then," said Wilhelm, "how hast thou attained this knowledge? For it is not so very long, after all, since we parted."

"My friend," said Jarno, "we were forced to resign ourselves, if not forever, at least for a long season. The first thing that occurs to a stout-hearted man, under such circumstances, is to begin a new life. New objects will not suffice him; these serve only for diversion of thought; he requires a new whole, and plants himself in the middle of it."

"But why, then," interrupted Wilhelm, "choose this strangest and loneliest of all pursuits?"

"Even because of its loneliness," cried Jarno. "Men I wished to avoid. To them we can give no help, and they hinder us from helping ourselves. Are they happy, we must let them persevere in their stolidities; are they unhappy, we must save them without disturbing these stolidities; and no one ever asks whether Thou art happy or unhappy."

"It is not quite so bad with them, surely," answered Wilhelm smiling.

"I will not talk thee out of thy happiness," said Jarno. "Go

on thy way, thou second Diogenes! Let not thy Lamp in daylight go out! Down on that side lies a new world before thee: but I dare wager, things stand there as in the old one. If thou canst not pimp, and pay debts, thou availest nothing."

"Yet they seem to me more entertaining than thy dead rocks," said Wilhelm.

"Not they!" answered Jarno: "for my rocks are at least incomprehensible."

CHAPTER VI.

THE two friends had descended, not without care and labour, to reach the children, who were now lying in a shady spot down below. With almost greater eagerness than their picnic repast, the collected rock-specimens were unpacked by Montan and Felix. The latter had much to ask, the former much to nominate. Felix was delighted that his new teacher could give him names for all, and he speedily committed them to memory. At length he produced another specimen, and asked: "What do you call this, then?"

Montan viewed it with surprise, and said: "Where did you get it?"

Fitz answered promptly: "I found it myself; it is of this country."

"Not of this quarter," said Montan. Felix rejoiced to see his master somewhat puzzled. "Thou shalt have a ducat," said Montan, "if thou bring me to the spot where it lies."

"That is easy to earn," answered Fitz; "but not immediately."

"Then describe the place to me accurately, that I may not fail to find it: but the thing is impossible; for this is a cross-stone, which comes from Santiago in Compostella, and which some stranger has lost; if indeed thou hast not stolen it from him, for its curious look."

"Give your ducat into my master's hands," said Fitz, "and I will honestly confess where I got the stone. In the ruined church at St. Joseph, there is likewise a ruined altar. Under the top-stones, which are all broken and heaped together, I discovered a layer of this rock, which has been the foundation of the other; and broke off from it as much as I could come at. If the upper stones were cleared away, one might find much more of it there."

"Take thy ducat," said Montan; "thou deservest it for this discovery. It is pretty enough. Men naturally rejoice when inanimate nature produces any likeness of what they love and reverence. Nature then appears to us in the form of a Sibyl, who has

beforehand laid down a testimony of what had been determined from Eternity, and was not to be realised till late in Time. On this rock, as on a sacred mysterious primeval basis, the priests had built their altar."

Wilhelm, who had listened for a while, and observed that many names, many designations, were repeatedly mentioned, again signified his former wish, that Montan would impart to him so much as was required for the primary instruction of the boy. "Give that up," replied Montan. "There is nothing more frightful than a teacher who knows only what his scholars are intended to know. He who means to teach others, may indeed often suppress the best of what he knows; but he must not be half-instructed."

"But where are such perfect teachers to be had?"

"These thou wilt find very easily," replied Montan.

"Where, then?" said Wilhelm, with some unbelief.

"Where the thing thou art wishing to learn is in practice," said Montan. "Our best instruction we obtain from complete conversance. Dost thou not learn foreign languages best in the countries where they are at home?—where only these and no other strike thy ear?"

"And so it was among the Mountains," inquired Wilhelm, "that thy knowledge of Mountains was acquired?"

"Of course."

"Without help from men?"

"At least only from men who were miners. There, where the Pygmies, allured by the metallic veins, bore through the rock, making the interior of the earth accessible, and in a thousand ways endeavouring to solve the hardest problems; there is the place where an inquiring thinker ought to take his stand. He looks on action and effort; watches the progress of enterprises; and rejoices in the successful and the unsuccessful. What is Useful forms but a part of the Important. Fully to possess, to command, and rule an object, we must first study it for its own sake."

"Is there such a place in the neighbourhood?" said Wilhelm. "I should like to take Felix thither."

"The question I can answer in the affirmative," replied Montan; "the project not exactly assent to. At least, I must first tell thee, that thou hast the power of choosing among many other branches of activity, of knowledge, of art, for thy Felix; some of which might perhaps suit him better, than this sudden fancy which he has taken up at the moment, most probably from mere imitation."

"Explain thyself more clearly," interrupted Wilhelm.

"Thou must know, then," said Montan, "that we are here on

the borders of a Province, which I might justly call a Pedagogic Utopia. In the conviction that only one thing can be carried on, taught and communicated with full advantages, several such points of active instruction have been, as it were, sown over a large tract of country. At each of these places thou wilt find a little world, but so complete within its limitation, that it may represent and model any other of these worlds, nay the great busy world itself."

"I do not altogether comprehend what thou canst mean by this," interrupted Wilhelm.

"Thou shalt soon comprehend it," said the other. "As down, not far from this, among the Mountains, thou wilt, in the first place, find collected round a mass of metalliferous rocks, whatever is of use for enabling man to appropriate these treasures of Nature, and, at the same time, to acquire general conceptions of moulding the ruggedness of inanimate things more dextrously to his own purposes; so, down in the lowest level, far out on the plain, where the soil spreads into large meadows and pastures, thou wilt find establishments for managing another important treasure which Nature has given to men."

"And this?" inquired Wilhelm.

"Is the horse," replied the other. "In that last quarter, thou art in the midst of everything which can instruct one on the training, diet, growth and likewise employment of this noble animal. As in these hills all are busy digging, boring, climbing; so there nothing is more anxiously attended to than the young brood, springing, as it were, out of the ground; and every one is occupied foddering, grazing, driving, leading, curbing them, mounting their backs, and in all sorts of movements, natural and artificial, coursing with them over the plain."

Felix, who had approached in the deepest attention, exclaimed, interrupting him: "O, thither will we! That is the prettiest, the best of all."

"It is far thither," answered Jarno; "and thou wilt find something more agreeable and suitable, perhaps, by the way.—Any species of activity," continued he, "attracts the fondness of a child; for everything looks easy that is practised to perfection. All beginnings are hard, says the proverb. This, in a certain sense, may be true; but we might say, with a more universal application: All beginnings are easy; and it is the last steps that are climbed most rarely and with greatest difficulty."

Wilhelm, who had been reflecting in the mean while, now said to Montan: "Is it actually so, as thou sayest, that these people have separated the various sorts of activity, both in the practice and teaching of them?"

"They have done it," said Montan; "and with reason. Whatever any man has to effect must emanate from him like a second self: and how could this be possible, were not his first self entirely pervaded by it?"

"Yet has not a general culture been reckoned very advantageous?"

"It may really be so," replied the other: "everything in its time. Now is the time of specialties. Happy he, who understands this, and works for himself and others in that spirit."

"In my spirit it cannot be," replied Wilhelm: "but tell me, if I thought of sending Felix for a while into one of these circles, which wouldst thou recommend to me?"

"It is all one," said Jarno. "You cannot readily tell which way a child's capacity particularly points. For me, I should still advise the merriest trade. Take him to those horse-subduers. Beginning as a groom is in truth little easier than beginning as an ore-beater; but the prospect is always gayer, you can hope at least to get through the world riding."

It is easy to conceive, that Wilhelm had many other doubts to state, and many farther explanations to require: these Jarno settled in his usual laconic way; but at last he broke out as follows: "In all things, to serve from the lowest station upwards is necessary. To restrict yourself to a trade is best. For the narrow mind, whatever he attempts is still a trade; for the higher an art; and the highest, in doing one thing, does all; or, to speak less paradoxically, in the one thing which he does rightly, he sees the likeness of all that is done rightly. Take thy Felix," continued he, "through the Province; let the Directors see him; they will soon judge him, and dispose of him to the best advantage. The boy should be placed among his equals, otherwise he seeks them for himself, and then, in his associates, finds only flatterers or tyrants."

CHAPTER VII.

THE third day being over, the friends, in conformity to the engagement of our Renunciants, had to part; and Jarno declared, he would now fly so far into the waste Mountains, that no one should be able to discover him. "There is nothing more frightful," said he, "in a state like ours, than to meet an old true friend, to whom we can communicate our thoughts without reserve. So long as one is by himself, one fancies there is no end to the novelties and wonders he is studying; but let the two talk awhile

together, right from the heart; one sees how soon all this is exhausted. Nothing is endless but Inanity. Clever people soon explain themselves to one another, and then they have done. But now I will dive into the chasms of the rocks, and with them begin a mute unfathomable conversation."

"Have a care," said Wilhelm, smiling, "lest Fitz come upon thy track. This time, at least, he succeeded in finding thee."

"How didst thou manage that?" said Montan. "After all, it was only chance."

"Not in the least," answered Fitz: "I will tell you my secret, for a fair consideration. You mineralogists, wherever you go, keep striking to the right and left; from every stone, from every rock, breaking off a piece, as if gold and silver were hid in them. One has but to follow this trace; and where any corner shows a fresh breakage, there some of you has been. One notes and notes, forward and forward, and at last comes upon the man."

Fitz was praised and rewarded. The friends parted; Montan alone, the little caravan in company. Wilhelm had settled the place they should make for. The porter proposed a road to it; but the children had taken a fancy for looking, by the way, at the Giant's Castle, of which Fitz had talked so much. Felix was curious about the large black pillars, the great door, the cellar, the caves and vaults; and hoped he might perhaps find something there, something of even greater value than the box.

How he came by this, he had, in the interim, informed his father. Creeping through the cleft, it appeared, he had got down into an open space pretty well lighted; and noticed, in the corner of it, a large iron chest, the lid of which, though it was not locked, he could not lift, but only raise a very little. To get into this, he had called to his father for the staves, which he had employed partly as props under the lid, partly as levers to heave it up; and so at length, forcing his way into the chest, had found it wholly empty, except for the little box which was lying in one of the nooks. This toy they had shown Montan, who agreed with them in opinion, that it should be kept unopened, and no violence done to it; for it could not be unlocked except by a very complicated key.

The porter declined going with the rest to the Giant's Castle, and proceeded down the smooth footpath by himself. The others toiled after Fitz, through moss and tangle; and at length reached the natural Colonnade, which, towering over a huge mass of fragments, rose black and wondrous into the air. Yet, without much regarding what he saw before his eyes, Felix instantly began inquiring for the other promised marvels; and as none of them

was to be seen, Fitz could excuse himself no otherwise than by declaring that these things were never visible except on Sundays and particular festivals, and then only for a few hours. The boys remained convinced that the Pillared Palace was a work of men's hands: Wilhelm saw well that it was a work of nature; but he could have wished for Montan to speak with on the subject.

They now proceeded rapidly down hill, through a wood of high taper larches; which becoming more and more transparent, ere long exposed to view the fairest spot you can imagine, lying in the clearest sunshine.

A large garden, seemingly appropriated to use, not ornament, lay richly furnished with fruit-trees, yet open before their eyes; for the ground, sloping on the whole, had been regularly cut into a number of divisions, now raised, now hollowed in manifold variety, and thus exhibited a complex waving surface. Several dwelling-houses stood scattered up and down, so that it seemed as if the space belonged to several proprietors: yet Fitz assured them, that one individual owned and directed the whole. Beyond the garden stretched a boundless landscape, beautifully cultivated and planted, in which lakes and rivers might be distinguished in the distance.

Still descending, they had approached nearer and nearer, and were now expecting in a few moments to be in the garden, when Wilhelm all at once stopped short, and Fitz could not hide his roguish satisfaction; for a yawning chasm at the foot of the mountain opened before them, and showed on the other side a wall which had hitherto been concealed, steep enough without, though within it was quite filled up with soil. A deep trench, therefore, separated them from the garden, into which they were directly looking. "We have still a good circuit to make," said Fitz, "before we get the road that leads in. However, I know an entrance on this side, which is much shorter. The vaults where the hill-water in time of rain is let through, in regular quantities, into the garden, open here: they are high and broad enough for one to walk along without difficulty." The instant Felix heard of vaults, he insisted on taking this passage and no other. Wilhelm followed the children; and the party descended the large steps of this covered aqueduct, which was now lying quite dry. Down below, they found themselves sometimes in light, sometimes in darkness, according as the side openings admitted day, or the walls and pillars excluded it. At last they reached a pretty even space, and were slowly proceeding, when all at once a shot went off beside them, and at the same time two secret iron-grated doors started out, and enclosed them on both sides. Not indeed the

whole of them: Wilhelm and Felix only were caught. For Fitz, the instant he heard the shot, sprang back, and the closing grate caught nothing but his wide sleeve: he himself nimbly throwing off his jacket, had darted away without loss of a moment.

The two prisoners had scarcely time to recover from their astonishment, till they heard voices which appeared to be slowly approaching. In a little while, some armed men with torches came forward to the grate, looking with eager eyes what sort of capture they had made. At the same time, they asked, if the prisoners would surrender peaceably? "Surrender is not the word here," said Wilhelm; "we are already in your power. It is rather our part to ask, whether you will spare us? The only weapon we have, I give up to you." And with these words he handed his hanger through the grate: this opened directly, and the two strangers were led forward by the party, with great composure. After a short while, they found themselves in a singular place: it was a spacious cleanly apartment, with many little windows at the very top of the walls; and these, notwithstanding the thick iron gratings, admitted light enough. Seats, sleeping-places, and whatever else is expected in a middling inn, had been provided; and it seemed as if any one placed here could want nothing but freedom.

Wilhelm, directly after entering, had sat down to consider his situation: Felix, on the other hand, on recovering from his astonishment, broke out into an incredible fury. These large walls, these high windows, these strong doors, this seclusion, this restriction, were entirely new to him. He looked round and round, he ran hither and thither; stamped with his feet, wept, rattled the doors, struck against them with his fists, nay was even on the point of running at them with his head, had not Wilhelm seized him, and held him fast between his knees: "Do but look at the thing calmly, my son," began he: "for impatience and violence cannot help us. The mystery will clear up, and I must be widely mistaken, or we are fallen into no wicked hands. Read these inscriptions: 'To the innocent, deliverance and reparation; to the misled, compassion; and to the guilty, avenging justice.' All this bespeaks to us that these establishments are works not of cruelty, but of necessity. Men have but too much cause to secure themselves from men. Of ill-wishers there are many, of ill-doers not few; and to live fitly, well-doing will not always suffice." Felix still sobbed; but he had pacified himself in some degree, more by the caresses than the words of his father. "Let this experience," continued Wilhelm, "which thou gainest so early, and so innocently, remain a lively testimony to thy mind, in how complete

and accomplished a century thou livest. What a journey had human nature to travel, before it reached the point of being mild even to the guilty, merciful to the injurious, humane to the inhuman! Doubtless they were men of godlike souls who first taught this, who spent their lives in rendering the practice of it possible, and recommending it to others. Of the Beautiful men are seldom capable, oftener of the Good: and how highly should we value those who endeavour, with great sacrifices, to forward that Good among their fellows!"

Felix, in the course of this consolatory speech, had fallen quietly asleep on his father's bosom; and scarcely had the latter laid him down on one of the ready-made beds, when the door opened, and a man of prepossessing appearance stept in. After looking kindly at Wilhelm for some time, he began to inquire about the circumstances, which had led him by the private passage, and into this predicament. Wilhelm related the affair as it stood; produced some papers, which served to explain who he was, and referred to the porter, who, he said, must soon arrive on the other side by the usual road. This being so far explained, the official person invited his guest to follow him. Felix could not be awakened, and his father carried him asleep from the place which had incited him to such violent passion.

Wilhelm followed his conductor into a fair garden-apartment, where refreshments were set down, which he was invited to partake of, while the other went to report the state of matters to his superior. When Felix, on awakening, perceived a little covered table, fruit, wine, biscuit, and at the same time the cheerful aspect of a wide-open door, he knew not what to make of it. He ran out, he ran back, he thought he had been dreaming; and in a little while, with such dainty fare and such pleasant sights, the preceding terror and all his obstruction had vanished, like an oppressive vision in the brightness of morning.

The porter had arrived; the officer, with another man of a still friendlier aspect, brought him in; and the business now came to light, as follows: The owner of this property, charitable in this higher sense, that he studied to awaken all round him to activity and effort, had for several years been accustomed, from his boundless young plantations, to give out the small wood to diligent and careful cultivators, gratis; to the negligent, for a certain price; and to such as wished to trade in it, likewise at a moderate valuation. But these two latter classes also had required their supplies gratis, as the meritorious were treated; and this being refused them, they had attempted stealing trees. Their attempt succeeded in many *ways. This* vexed the owner the more, as not only were the plan-

tations plundered, but, by too early thinning, often ruined. It had been discovered that the thieves entered by this aqueduct; so the trap-grate had been erected in the place, with a spring gun, which, however, was only meant for a signal. The little boy had, under various pretexts, often made his appearance in the garden; and nothing was more natural, than that out of mischief and audacity he should lead the stranger by a road which he had formerly discovered for other purposes. The people could have wished to get hold of him: meanwhile his little jacket was brought in, and put by among other judicial seizures.

Wilhelm was now made acquainted with the owner and his people, and by them received with the friendliest welcome. Of this family we shall say nothing more here, as some farther light on them and their concerns is offered us by the subsequent history.

CHAPTER VIII.

Wilhelm to Natalia.

MAN is of a companionable, conversing nature: his delight is great when he exercises faculties that have been given him, even though nothing farther came of it. How often in society do we hear the complaint, that one will not let the other speak: and in the same manner also we might say, that one would not let the other write, were not writing an employment commonly transacted in private and alone.

How much people write one could scarcely ever conjecture. I speak not of what is printed, though that in itself is abundant enough; but of all that, in the shape of letters and memorials and narratives, anecdotes, descriptions of present circumstances in the life of individuals, sketches and larger essays, circulates in secret; of this you can form no idea till you have lived for some time in a community of cultivated families, as I am now doing. In the sphere where I am moving at present, there is almost as much time employed in informing friends and relatives of what is transacted, as was employed in transacting it. This observation, which for several weeks has been constantly forced on me, I now make with the more pleasure, as the writing tendency of my new friends enables me at once and perfectly to get acquainted with their characters and circumstances. I am trusted; a sheaf of Letters is given to me, some quires of a Travelling Journal, the Confessions of some mind not yet in unity with itself; and thus every-

where, in a little while, I am at home. I know the neighbouring circle, I know the persons whose acquaintance I am to obtain; I understand them better almost than they do themselves, seeing they are still implicated in their situation, while I hover lightly past them, ever with thy hand in mine, ever speaking with thee about all I see. Indeed it is the first condition I make, before accepting any confidence offered me, that I may impart it to thee. Here, accordingly, are some letters, which will introduce thee into the circle, in which, without breaking or evading my vow, I for the present revolve.

THE NUT-BROWN MAID.

Lenardo to his Aunt.

At last, dear Aunt, after three years, you receive my first letter, conformably to our engagement, which, in truth, was singular enough. I wished to see the world and mingle in it; and wished, during that period, to forget the home whence I had departed, whither I hoped to return. The whole impression of this home I purposed to retain, and the partial and individual was not to confuse me at a distance. Meanwhile the necessary tokens of life and welfare have, from time to time, passed to and fro between us. I have regularly received money; and little presents for my kindred have been delivered you for distribution. By the wares I sent, you would see how and where I was. By the wines, I doubt not my uncle has tasted out my several places of abode; then the laces, nicknacks, steel-wares, would indicate to my fair cousins my progress through Brabant, by Paris, to London; and so on their writing-desks, work-boxes, tea-tables, I shall find many a symbol wherewith to connect the history of my journeyings. You have accompanied me without hearing of me; and perhaps may care little about knowing more. For me, on the other hand, it is highly desirable to learn, through your kindness, how it stands with the circle into which I am once more entering. I would, in truth, return from strange countries as a stranger; who, that he may not be unpleasant, first informs himself about the way and manner of the household; not fancying that, for his fine eyes or hair, he shall be received there quite in his own fashion. Write to me, therefore, of my worthy uncle, of your fair nieces, of yourself, of our relations near and distant, of servants also, old and new. In short, let your practised pen, which for so long a time you have not dipped into ink for your nephew, now again tint paper in his favour. Your letter of news shall forthwith be my credential, with which I introduce myself so soon as I obtain it.

On you, therefore, it depends whether you will see me or not. We alter far less than we imagine; and circumstances, too, continue much as they were. Not only what has altered, but what has continued, what has by degrees waxed and waned, do I now wish instantly to recognise at my return, and so once more to see myself in a well-known mirror. Present my heartiest salutations to all our people; and believe, that in the singular manner of my absence and my return, there may lie more true affection than is often found in constant participation and lively intercourse. A thousand compliments to one and all!

Postscript.—Neglect not also, my dear Aunt, to say a word or two about our dependents; how it stands with our stewards and farmers. What is become of Valerina, the daughter of that farmer, whom my uncle, with justice certainly, but also, as I thought, with some severity, ejected from his lands when I went away? You see, I still remember many a particular; I still know all. On the past you shall examine me, when you have told me of the present.

The Aunt to Julietta.

At last, dear children, a letter from our three-years speechless traveller. What strange beings these strange men are! He will have it that his wares and tokens were as good as so many kind words, which friend may speak or write to friend. He actually fancies himself our creditor, requires from *us*, in the first place, the performance of that service, which *he* so unkindly refused. What is to be done? For me, I should have met his wishes forthwith in a long letter, did not this headache signify too clearly that the present sheet can scarcely be filled. We all long to see him. Do you, my dears, undertake the business. Should I be recovered before you have done, I will contribute my share. Choose the persons and circumstances, as you like best to describe them. Divide the task. You will do it all far better than I. The messenger will bring me back a note from you.

Julietta to her Aunt.

We have read and considered; and now send you by the messenger our view of the matter, each in particular; having first jointly signified that we are not so charitable as our dear Aunt to her ever-perverse nephew. Now, when he has kept his cards hid from us for three years, and still keeps them hid, we forsooth are to spread ours on the table, and play an open against a secret game. This is not fair; and yet let it pass; for the craftiest is

often caught, simply by his own over-anxious precautions. But as to the way and manner of transacting this commission, we are not agreed. To write of our familiars as we think of them, is for us at least a very strange problem. Commonly we do not think of them at all, except in this or that particular case, when they give us some peculiar satisfaction or vexation. At other times, each lets his neighbour go his way. You alone could manage it, dear Aunt, for you have both the penetration and the tolerance. Hersilia, who you know is not difficult to kindle, has just, on the spur of the moment, given me a bird's-eye view of the whole family in all the graces of caricature. I wish it stood on paper, to entice a smile from yourself in your illness; but not that I would have it sent. My own project is, to lay before him our correspondence for these three years; then let him read, if he have the heart; or let him come and see with his eyes, if he have not. Your Letters to me, dear Aunt, are in the best order, and all at your service. Hersilia dissents from this opinion; excuses herself with the disorder of her papers, and so forth, as she will tell you herself.

Hersilia to her Aunt.

I will and must be very brief, dear Aunt, for the messenger is clownishly impatient. I reckon it an excess of generosity, and not at all in season, to submit our correspondence to Lenardo. What has he to do with knowing all the good we have said of him, with knowing all the ill we have said of him, and finding out from the latter still more than from the former that we like him? Hold him tight, I entreat you. There is something so precise and presumptuous in this demand, in this conduct of his; just the fashion of your young gentlemen when they return from foreign parts. They can never look on those who have stayed at home as full-grown persons, like themselves. Make your headache an excuse. He will come, doubtless: and if he do not come, we can wait a little. Perhaps his next idea may be to introduce himself in some strange secret way, to become acquainted with us in disguise; and who knows what more may be included in the plan of so deep a gentleman? How pretty and curious this would be! It could not fail to bring about all manner of embroilments and developments; far grander than any that could be produced by such a diplomatic entrance into his family as he now purposes.

The messenger! The messenger! Bring up your old people better, or send young ones. This man is neither to be pacified with flattery nor wine. A thousand farewells!

Postscript for Postscript.—What does our cousin want, will you tell me, with his postscript of Valerina? This question of his has struck me doubly. She is the only person whom he mentions by name. The rest of us are nieces, aunts, stewards; not persons, but titles. Valerina, our Lawyer's daughter! In truth, a pretty fair-haired girl, that may have glanced in our gallant cousin's eyes before he went away. She is married well and happily; this to you is no news; but to him it is, of course, as unknown as everything that has occurred here. Forget not to inform him, in a postscript, that Valerina grew daily more and more beautiful, and so at last made a very good match. That she is the wife of a rich proprietor. That the lovely fair-haired maid is married. Make it perfectly distinct to him. But neither is this all, dear Aunt. How the man can so accurately remember his flaxen-headed beauty, and yet confound her with the daughter of that worthless farmer, with a wild humble-bee of a brunette, whose name was Nachodina, and who went away Heaven knows whither, this, I declare to you, remains entirely incomprehensible, and puzzles me quite excessively. For it seems as if our pretty cousin, who prides himself on his good memory, could change names and persons to a very strange degree. Perhaps he feels this obscurely himself, and would have the faded image refreshed by your delineation. Hold him tight, I beg of you: but try to learn, for our own behoof, how it does stand with these Valerinas and Nachodinas; and how many more Inas and Trinas have retained their place in his imagination, while the poor Ettas and Ilias have vanished. The messenger! The cursed messenger!

The Aunt to her Nieces.

(Dictated.)

Why should we dissemble towards those we have to spend our life with? Lenardo, with all his peculiarities, deserves confidence. I send him both your letters: from these he will get a view of you; and the rest of us, I hope, will ere long unconsciously find occasion to depict ourselves before him likewise. Farewell! My head is very painful.

Hersilia to her Aunt.

Why should we dissemble towards those we have to spend our life with? Lenardo is a spoiled nephew. It is horrible in you to send him our letters. From these he will get no real view of us; and I wish with all my heart for opportunity to let him view me in some other light. You give pain to others, while you are in

pain yourself, and blind to boot. Quick recovery to your head! Your heart is irrecoverable.

The Aunt to Hersilia.

Thy last note I should likewise have packed in for Lenardo, had I happened to continue by the purpose, which my irrecoverable heart, my sick head, and my love of ease, suggested to me. Your letters are not gone. I am just parting with the young man, who has been for some time living in our circle, who, by the strangest chance, has come to know us pretty well, and is withal of an intelligent and kindly nature. Him I am despatching. He undertakes the task with great readiness. He will prepare our nephew, and send or bring him. Thus can your Aunt recollect herself in the course of a rash enterprise, and bend into another path. Hersilia also will take thought; and a friendly revocation will not long be wanting from her hand.

Wilhelm having accurately and circumstantially fulfilled this task, Lenardo answered with a smile: "Much as I am obliged to you for what you tell me, I must still put another question. Did not my Aunt, in conclusion, request you also to inform me of another and seemingly an unimportant matter?"

Wilhelm thought a moment. "Yes," said he, then; "I remember. She mentioned a lady, named Valerina. Of her I was to tell you that she is happily wedded, and every way well."

"You roll a stone from my heart," replied Lenardo. "I now gladly return home, since I need not fear that my recollection of this girl can reproach me there."

"It beseems not me to inquire what relation you have had to her," said Wilhelm: "only you may be at ease, if in any way you feel concerned for her fortunes."

"It is the strangest relation in the world," returned Lenardo: "nowise a love matter, as you might perhaps conjecture. I may confide in you, and tell it, as indeed there is next to nothing to be told. But what must you think, when I assure you, that this faltering in my return, this fear of revisiting our family, these strange preparatives, and inquiries how things looked at home, had no other object but to learn, by the way, how it stood with this young woman?

"For you will believe," continued he, "I am very well aware that we may leave people whom we know, without finding them, even after a considerable time, much altered: and so I likewise expect very soon to be quite at home with my relatives. This

single being only gave me pause: her fortune, I knew, must have changed; and, thank Heaven, it has changed for the better."

"You excite my curiosity," said Wilhelm. "There must be something singular in this."

"I at least think it so," replied Lenardo, and began his narrative as follows:

"To accomplish, in my youth, the grand adventure of a tour through cultivated Europe, was a fixed purpose, which I had entertained from boyhood, but the execution of which was, as usually happens in these things, from time to time postponed. What was at hand attracted me, retained me; and the distant lost more and more of its charms, the more I read of it, or heard it talked of. However, at last, incited by my uncle, allured by friends who had gone forth into the world before me, I did form the resolution, and that more rapidly than any one had been expecting.

"My uncle, who had to afford the main requisite for my enterprise, directly made this his chief concern. You know him, and the way he has; how he still rushes with his whole force on one single object, and everything else in the mean while must rest and be silent; by which means, indeed, he has effected much that seemed to lie beyond the influence of any private man. This journey came upon him, in some degree, unawares; yet he very soon took his measures. Some buildings, which he had planned, nay even begun, were abandoned; and as he never on any account meddles with his accumulated stock, he looked about him, as a prudent financier, for other ways and means. The most obvious plan was to call in outstanding debts, especially remainders of rent: for this also was one of his habits, that he was indulgent to debtors, so long as he himself had, to a certain degree, no need of money. He gave his Steward the list, with orders to manage the business. Of individual cases we learned nothing: only I heard transiently, that the farmer of one of our estates, with whom my uncle had long exercised patience, was at last actually to be ejected; his cautionary pledge, a scanty supplement to the produce of this prosecution, to be retained, and the land to be let to some other person. This man was of a religious turn; but not, like others of his sect among us, shrewd and active withal: for his piety and goodness he was loved by his neighbours, but at the same time censured for his weakness as the master of a house. After the death of his wife, a daughter, whom we usually named the Nut-brown Maid, though already giving promise of activity and resolution, was still too young for taking a decisive management: in short, the man went back in his affairs, and my uncle's indulgence had not stayed the sinking of his fortune.

"I had my journey in my head, and could not quarrel with the means for accomplishing it. All was ready; packing and sorting went forward; every moment was becoming full of business. One evening I was strolling through the park, for the last time, to take leave of my familiar trees and bushes, when all at once Valerina stept into my way: for such was the girl's name, the other was but a byname, occasioned by her brown complexion. She stept into my way."

Lenardo paused for a moment, as if considering. "How is this, then?" said he: "Was her name really Valerina? Yes, surely," he continued; "but the byname was more common. In short, the brown maid came into my path, and pressingly entreated me to speak a good word for her father, for herself, to my uncle. Knowing how the matter stood, and seeing clearly that it would be difficult, nay impossible, to do her any service at this moment, I candidly told her so, and set before her the blame-worthiness of her father in an unfavourable light.

"She answered this with so much clearness, and at the same time with so much filial mitigation and love, that she quite gained me; and, had it been my own money, I should instantly have made her happy, by granting her request. But it was my uncle's income: these were his arrangements, his orders: with such a temper as his, to attempt altering aught that had been done was hopeless. From of old, I had looked on a promise as in the highest degree sacred. Whoever asked anything of me embarrassed me. I had so accustomed myself to refuse, that I did not even promise what I purposed to perform. This habit came in good stead in the present instance. Her arguments turned on individuality and affection, mine on duty and reason: and I will not deny that at last they seemed too harsh even to myself. Already we had more than once repeated our topics without convincing one another, when necessity made her more eloquent; the inevitable ruin which she saw before her pressed tears from her eyes. Her collected manner she entirely lost; she spoke with vivacity, with emotion; and as I still kept up a show of coldness and composure, her whole soul turned itself outwards. I wished to end the scene: but all at once she was lying at my feet, had seized my hand, kissed it, and was looking up to me, so good, so gentle, with such supplicating loveliness, that in the haste of the moment I forgot myself. Hurriedly I said, while raising her from her kneeling posture: 'I will do what is possible; compose thyself, my child!' and so turned into a side-path. 'Do what is impossible!' cried she after me. I now knew not what I was saying, but answered: 'I will,' and hesitated. 'Do it!' cried she, at once

enlivened, and with a heavenly expression of hope. I waved a salutation to her, and hastened away.

"To my uncle I did not mean to apply directly: for I knew too well that with him it was vain to speak about the partial, when his purpose was the whole. I inquired for the Steward; he had ridden off to a distance; visitors came in the evening, friends wishing to take leave of me. They supped and played till far in the night. They continued next day; and their presence effaced the image of my importunate petitioner. The Steward returned; he was busier and more overloaded than ever. All were asking for him: he had no time to hear me. However, I did make an effort to detain him; but scarcely had I named that pious farmer, when he eagerly repelled the proposal: 'For Heaven's sake, not a word of this to your uncle, if you would not have a quarrel with him!' The day of my departure was fixed; I had letters to write, guests to receive, visits in the neighbourhood to pay. My servants had been hitherto sufficient for my wants, but were nowise adequate to forward the arrangements of a distant journey. All lay on my own hands; and yet when the Steward appointed me an hour in the night before my departure, to settle our money concerns, I neglected not again to solicit him for Valerina's father.

"'Dear Baron,' said the unstable man, 'how can such a thing ever come into your head? Today already I have had a hard piece of work with your uncle; for the sum you need is turning out to be far higher than we reckoned on. This is natural enough, but not the less perplexing. To the old gentleman it is especially unwelcome, when a business seems concluded, and yet many odds and ends are found straggling after it. This is often the case; and I and the rest have to take the brunt of it. As to the rigour with which the outstanding debts were to be gathered in, he himself laid down the law to me: he is at one with himself on this point, and it would be no easy task to move him to indulgence. Do not try it, I beg of you! It is quite in vain.'

"I let him deter me from my attempt, but not entirely. I pressed him, since the execution of the business depended on himself, to act with mildness and mercy. He promised everything, according to the fashion of such persons, for the sake of momentary peace. He got quit of me: the bustle, the hurry of business increased! I was in my carriage; and had turned my back on all home concerns.

"A keen impression is like any other wound; we do not feel it in receiving it. Not till afterwards does it begin to smart and gangrene. So was it with me in regard to this occurrence in the

park. Whenever I was solitary, whenever I was unemployed, that image of the entreating maiden, with the whole accompaniment, with every tree and bush, the place where she knelt, the side-path I took to get rid of her, the whole scene rose like a fresh picture before my soul. It was an indestructible impression, which, by other images and interests, might indeed be shaded or overhung, but never obliterated. Still, in every quiet hour, she came before me; and the longer it lasted, the more painful did I feel the blame which I had incurred against my principles, against my custom, though not expressly, only while hesitating, and for the first time caught in such a perplexity.

"I failed not in my earliest letters to inquire of our Steward how the business had turned. He answered evasively. Then he engaged to explain this point; then he wrote ambiguously; at last he became silent altogether. Distance increased; more objects came between me and my home; I was called to many new observations, many new sympathies; the image faded away, the maiden herself, almost to the name. The remembrance of her came more rarely before me; and, my whim of keeping up my intercourse with home, not by letters, but by tokens, tended gradually to make my previous situation, with all its circumstances, nearly vanish from my mind. Now, however, when I am again returning home, when I am purposing to repay my family with interest what I have so long owed it, now at last this strange repentance, strange I myself must call it, falls on me with its whole weight. The form of the maiden brightens up with the forms of my relatives; and I dread nothing more deeply than to learn that, in the misery into which I drove her, she has sunk to ruin; for my negligence appears in my own mind an abetting of her destruction, a furtherance of her mournful destiny. A thousand times I have told myself that this feeling was at bottom but a weakness; that my early adoption of the principle, never to promise, had originated in my fear of repentance, not in any noble sentiment. And now it seems as if Repentance, which I had fled from, meant to avenge herself, by seizing this incident, instead of hundreds, to pain me. Yet is the picture, the imagination which torments me, so agreeable withal, so lovely, that I like to linger over it. And when I think of the scene, that kiss which she imprinted on my hand, still seems to burn there."

Lenardo was silent, and Wilhelm answered quickly and gaily: "It appears, then, I could have done you no greater service than by that appendix to my narrative; as we often find in the postscript the most interesting part of the letter. In truth, I know little of Valerina, for I heard of her only in passing: but, for cer-

tain, she is the wife of a prosperous landowner, and lives happily, as your aunt assured me, on taking leave."

"Good, and well," said Lenardo: "now there is nothing to detain me. You have given me absolution; let us now to my friends, who have already waited for me too long." To this Wilhelm answered: "Unhappily I cannot attend you; for a strange obligation lies on me to continue nowhere longer than three days, and not to revisit any place in less than a year. Pardon me, if I am not at liberty to mention the cause of this singularity."

"I am very sorry," said Lenardo, "that we are to lose you so soon: that I cannot, in my turn, do anything for you. But since you are already in the way of showing me kindness, you might make me very happy if you pleased to visit Valerina; to inform yourself accurately of her situation; and then to let me have, in writing or in speech (a place of meeting might easily be found), express intelligence for my complete composure."

This proposal was farther discussed; Valerina's place of residence had been named to Wilhelm. He engaged to visit her; a place of meeting was appointed, to which the Baron should come, bringing Felix with him, who, in the mean while, had remained with the ladies.

Lenardo and Wilhelm had proceeded on their way for some time, riding together through pleasant fields, with abundance of conversation, when at last they approached the highway, and found the Baron's coach in waiting, now ready to revisit with its owner the spot it had left three years before. Here the friends were to part; and Wilhelm, with a few kindly words, took his leave, again promising the Baron speedy news of Valerina.

"Now when I bethink me," said Lenardo, "that it were but a small circuit if I accompanied you, why should I not visit Valerina myself? Why not witness with my own eyes her happy situation? You were so friendly as engage to be my messenger; why should you not be my companion? For some companion I must have, some moral counsel, as we take legal counsel to assist us, when we think ourselves inadequate to the perplexities of a process."

Wilhelm's objections, that the friends at home would be anxiously expecting the long-absent traveller, that it would produce a strange impression if the carriage came alone, and other reasons of the like sort, had no weight with Lenardo; and Wilhelm was obliged at last to resolve on acting the companion to the Baron; a task on which, considering the consequences that might be apprehended, he entered with no great alacrity.

Accordingly the servants were instructed what to say on their arrival; and the two friends now took the road for Valerina's

house. The neighbourhood appeared rich and fertile, the true seat of Agriculture. Especially the grounds of Valerina's husband seemed to be managed with great skill and care. Wilhelm had leisure to survey the landscape accurately, while Lenardo rode in silence beside him. At last the latter said: "Another in my place would perhaps try to meet Valerina undiscovered; for it is always a painful feeling to appear before those whom we have injured; but I had rather front this, and bear the reproach which I have to dread from her first look, than secure myself from it by disguise and untruth. Untruth may bring us into embarrassment quite as well as truth; and when we reckon up how often the former or the latter profits us, it really seems most prudent, once for all, to devote ourselves to what is true. Let us go forward, therefore, with cheerful minds: I will give my name, and introduce you as my friend and fellow-traveller."

They had now reached the house, and dismounted in the court. A well-looking man, whom you might have taken for a farmer, came out to them, and announced himself as master of the family. Lenardo named himself, and the landlord seemed highly delighted to see him, and obtain his acquaintance. "What will my wife say," cried he, "when she again meets the nephew of her benefactor! She never tires of recounting and reckoning up what her father owes your uncle."

What strange thoughts rushed in rapid disorder through Lenardo's mind! "Does this man, who looks so honest-minded, hide his bitterness under a friendly countenance and smooth words? Can he give his reproaches so courteous an outside? For did not my uncle reduce that family to misery! And can the man be ignorant of this? Or," so thought he to himself, with quick hope, "has the business not been so bad as thou supposest? For no decisive intelligence has ever yet reached thee." Such conjectures alternated this way and that, while the landlord was ordering out his carriage to bring home his wife; who, it appeared, was paying a visit in the neighbourhood.

"If, in the mean while, till my wife return," said the latter, "I might entertain you in my own way, and at the same time carry on my duties, say you walk a few steps with me into the fields, and look about you how I manage my husbandry; for, no doubt, to you, as a great proprietor of land, there is nothing of more near concernment than the noble science, the noble art of Agriculture."

Lenardo made no objection; Wilhelm liked to gather information. The landlord had his ground, which he possessed and ruled without restriction, under the most perfect treatment; what he undertook was adapted to his purpose; what he sowed and planted

was always in the right place; and he could so clearly explain his mode of procedure, and the reasons of it, that every one comprehended him, and thought it possible for himself to do the same; a mistake one is apt to fall into, on looking at a master, in whose hand all moves as it should do.

The strangers expressed their satisfaction, and had nothing but praise and approval to pronounce on everything they saw. He received it gratefully and kindly, and at last added: "Now, however, I must show you my weak side, a quality discernible in every one that yields himself exclusively to one pursuit." He led them to his court-yard, showed them his implements, his store of these; and besides this, a store of all imaginable sorts of farm-gear, with its appurtenances, kept by way of specimen: "I am often blamed," said he, "for going too far in this matter; but I cannot quite blame myself. Happy is he to whom his business itself becomes a puppet, who at length can play with it, and amuse himself with what his situation makes his duty."

The two friends were not behindhand with their questions and examinations. Wilhelm, in particular, delighted in the general observations which this man appeared to have a turn for making; and failed not to answer them: while the Baron, more immersed in his own thoughts, took silent pleasure in the happiness of Valerina, which, in this situation, he reckoned sure; yet felt underhand a certain faint shadow of dissatisfaction, of which he could give himself no account.

The party had returned within doors, when the lady's carriage drove up. They hastened out to meet her: but what was Lenardo's amazement, his fright, when she stept forth! This was not the person; this was no Nut-brown Maid, but directly the reverse; a fair slim form, in truth; but light-haired, and possessing all the charms which belong to that complexion.

This beauty, this grace affrighted Lenardo. His eyes had sought the brown maiden; now quite a different figure glanced before them. These features, too, he recollected; her words, her manner, soon banished all uncertainty: it was the daughter of the Lawyer, a man who stood in high favour with the uncle; for which reason also the dowry had been so handsome, and the new pair so generously dealt with. All this, and much more, was gaily recounted by the young wife as an introductory salutation, and with such a joy as the surprise of an unexpected meeting naturally gives rise to. The question, whether they could recognise each other, was mutually put and answered; the changes in look were talked of, which in persons of that age are found notable enough. Valerina was at all times agreeable; but lovely in a high

degree, when any joyful feeling raised her above her usual level of indifference. The company grew talkative: the conversation became so lively, that Lenardo was enabled to compose himself and hide his confusion. Wilhelm, to whom he had very soon given a sign of this strange incident, did his best to help him; and Valerina's little touch of vanity in thinking that the Baron, even before visiting his own friends, had remembered her, and come to see her, excluded any shadow of suspicion that another purpose or a misconception could be concerned in the affair.

The party kept together till a late hour, though the two friends were longing for a confidential dialogue; which accordingly commenced, the moment they were left alone in their allotted chambers.

"It appears," said Lenardo, "I am not to get rid of this secret pain. A luckless confusion of names, I now observe, redoubles it. This fair-haired beauty I have often seen playing with the brunette, who could not be called a beauty; nay I myself have often run about with them over the fields and gardens, though so much older than they. Neither of them made the slightest impression on me; I have but retained the name of the one, and applied it to the other. And now her who does not concern me, I find happy above measure in her own way; while the other is cast forth, who knows whither, into the wide world."

Next morning the friends were up almost sooner than their active entertainers. The happiness of seeing her guests had also awakened Valerina early. She little fancied with what feelings they came to breakfast. Wilhelm, seeing clearly that without some tidings of the Nut-brown Maid, Lenardo must continue in a painful state, led the conversation to old times, to playmates, to scenes which he himself knew, and other such recollections: so that Valerina soon quite naturally came to speak of the Nut-brown Maid, and to mention her name.

No sooner did Lenardo hear the name Nachodina, than he perfectly remembered it: but with the name, the figure also, of that supplicant returned to him, with such violence, that Valerina's farther narrative became quite agonising to him, as with warm sympathy she proceeded to describe the distrainment of the pious farmer, his submissive resignation and departure, and how he went away leaning on his daughter, who carried a little bundle in her hand. Lenardo was like to sink under the earth. Unhappily, and happily, she went into a certain circumstantiality in her details; which, while it tortured Lenardo's heart, enabled him with help of his associate to put on some appearance of composure.

The travellers departed, amid warm sincere invitations on the

part of the married pair to return soon, and a faint hollow assent on their own part. And as a person, who stands in any favour with himself, takes everything in a favourable light, so Valerina explained Lenardo's silence, his visible confusion in taking leave, his hasty departure, entirely to her own advantage; and could not, although the faithful and loving wife of a worthy gentleman, help feeling some small satisfaction at this re-awakening or incipient inclination, as she reckoned it, of her former landlord.

After this strange incident, while the friends were proceeding on their way, Lenardo thus addressed Wilhelm: "For our shipwreck with such fair hopes at the very entrance of the haven, I can still console myself in some degree for the moment, and go calmly to meet my people, when I think that Heaven has brought me you,—you to whom, under your peculiar mission, it is indifferent whither or how you direct your path. Engage to find out Nachodina, and to give me tidings of her. If she be happy, then am I content; if unhappy, then help her at my charges. Act without reserve; spare, calculate nothing! I shall return home, shall endeavour to get intelligence, and send your Felix to you by some trusty person. Place the boy, as your intention was, where many of his equals are placed: it is almost indifferent under what superintendence; but I am much mistaken, if, in the neighbourhood, in the place where I wish you to wait for your son and his attendant, you do not find a man that can give you the best counsel on this point. It is he to whom I owe the training of my youth, whom I should have liked so much to take along with me in my travels, whom at least I should many a time have wished to meet in the course of them, had he not already devoted himself to a quiet domestic life."

The friends had now reached the spot where they were actually to part. While the horses were feeding, the Baron wrote a letter, which Wilhelm took charge of; yet, for the rest, could not help communicating his scruples to Lenardo.

"In my present situation," said he, "I reckon it a desirable commission to deliver a generous man from distress of mind, and, at the same time, to free a human creature from misery, if she happen to be miserable. Such an object one may look upon as a star, towards which one sails, not knowing what awaits him, what he is to meet, by the way. Yet, with all this, I must not be blind to the danger which, in every case, still hovers over you. Were you not a man who regularly avoid engagements, I should require a promise from you not again to see this female, who has come to be so precious in your eyes; but to content yourself, when I announce to you that all is well with her; be it that I actually

find her happy, or am enabled to make her so. But having neither power nor wish to extort a promise from you, I conjure you by all you reckon dear and sacred, for your own sake, for that of your kindred, and of me your new-acquired friend, to allow yourself no approximation to that lost maiden, under what pretext soever; not to require of me that I mention or describe the place where I find her, or the neighbourhood where I leave her; but to believe my word that she is well, and be enfranchised and at peace."

Lenardo gave a smile, and answered: "Perform this service for me, and I shall be grateful. What you are willing and able to do I commit to your own hands; and for myself, leave me to time, to common sense, and, if possible, to reason."

"Pardon me," answered Wilhelm: "but whoever knows under what strange forms love glides into our hearts, cannot but be apprehensive, on foreseeing that a friend may come to entertain wishes, which, in his circumstances, his station, would of necessity produce unhappiness and perplexity."

"I hope," said Lenardo, "when I know the maiden happy, I have done with her."

The friends parted, each in his own direction.

CHAPTER IX.

By a short and pleasant road Wilhelm had reached the town to which his letter was directed. He found it gay and well built; but its new aspect showed too clearly that, not long before, it must have suffered by a conflagration. The address of his letter led him into the last small uninjured portion of the place, to a house of ancient, earnest architecture, yet well kept, and of a tidy look. Dim windows, strangely fashioned, indicated an exhilarating pomp of colours from within. Nor, in fact, did the interior fail to correspond with the exterior. In clean apartments, everywhere stood furniture which must have served several generations, intermixed with very little that was new. The master of the house received our traveller kindly, in a little chamber similarly fitted up. These clocks had already struck the hour of many a birth and many a death; everything which met the eye reminded one that the past might, as it were, be protracted into the present.

The stranger delivered his letter; but the landlord, without opening it, laid it aside, and endeavoured, in a cheerful conversation, immediately to get acquainted with his guest. They soon *grew confidential*; and as Wilhelm, contrary to his usual habit, let

his eye wander inquisitively over the room, the good old man said to him: "My domestic equipment excites your attention. You here see how long a thing may last; and one should make such observations now and then, by way of counterbalance to so much in the world that rapidly changes and passes away. This same tea-kettle served my parents, and was a witness of our evening family assemblages; this copper fire-screen still guards me from the fire, which these stout old tongs still help me to mend; and so it is with all throughout. I had it in my power to bestow my care and industry on many other things, as I did not occupy myself with changing these external necessaries, a task which consumes so many people's time and resources. An affectionate attention to what we possess makes us rich, for thereby we accumulate a treasure of remembrances connected with indifferent things. I knew a young man who got a common pin from his love, while taking leave of her; daily fastened his breast-frill with it, and brought back this guarded and not unemployed treasure from a long journeying of several years. In us little men, such little things are to be reckoned virtue."

"Many a one too," answered Wilhelm, "brings back, from such long and far travellings, a sharp pricker in his heart, which he would fain be quit of."

The old man seemed to know nothing of Lenardo's situation, though in the mean while he had opened the letter and read it; for he returned to his former topics.

"Tenacity of our possessions," continued he, "in many cases gives us the greatest energy. To this obstinacy in myself I owe the saving of my house. When the town was on fire, some people wished to begin snatching and saving here too. I forbade this; bolted my doors and windows; and turned out, with several neighbours, to oppose the flames. Our efforts succeeded in preserving this summit of the town. Next morning all was standing here as you now see it, and as it has stood for almost a hundred years."

"Yet you will confess," said Wilhelm, "that no man withstands the change which Time produces."

"That, in truth!" said the other: "but he who holds out longest has still done something.

"Yes! even beyond the limits of our being we are able to maintain and secure; we transmit discoveries, we hand down sentiments, as well as property: and as the latter was my chief province, I have for a long time exercised the strictest foresight, invented the most peculiar precautions; yet not till lately have I succeeded in seeing my wish fulfilled.

"Commonly the son disperses what the father has collec[redacted]

collects something different, or in a different way. Yet if we can wait for the grandson, for the new generation, we find the same tendencies, the same tastes, again making their appearance. And so at last, by the care of our Pedagogic friends, I have found an active youth, who, if possible, pays more regard to old possession than even I, and has withal a vehement attachment to every sort of curiosities. My decided confidence he gained by the violent exertions, with which he struggled to keep off the fire from our dwelling. Doubly and trebly has he merited the treasure which I mean to leave him: nay it is already given into his hands; and ever since that time, our store is increasing in a wonderful way.

"Not all, however, that you see here is ours. On the contrary, as in the hands of pawnbrokers you find many a foreign jewel, so with us I can show you precious articles, which people, under the most various circumstances, have deposited with us for the sake of better keeping."

Wilhelm recollected the beautiful Box, which, at any rate, he did not like to carry with him in his wanderings; and showed it to his landlord. The old man viewed it with attention; gave the date when it was probably made; and showed some similar things. Wilhelm asked him if he thought it should be opened. The old man thought not. "I believe, indeed," said he, "it could be done, without special harm to the casket; but as you found it in so singular a way, you must try your luck on it. For if you are born lucky, and this little box is of any consequence, the key will doubtless by and by be found, and in the very place where you are least expecting it."

"There have been such occurrences," said Wilhelm.

"I have myself experienced such," replied the old man; "and here you behold the strangest of them. Of this ivory crucifix I have had, for thirty years, the body with the head and feet, in one place. For its own nature, as well as for the glorious art displayed in it, I kept the figure laid up in my most private drawer: nearly ten years ago I got the cross belonging to it, with the inscription; and was then induced to have the arms supplied by the best carver of our day. Far, indeed, was this expert artist from equalling his predecessor; yet I let his work pass, more for devout purposes, than for any admiration of its excellence.

"Now, conceive my delight! A little while ago the original genuine arms were sent me, as you see them here united in the loveliest harmony; and I, charmed at so happy a coincidence, cannot help recognising in this crucifix the fortunes of the Christian religion, which, often enough dismembered and scattered abroad,

will ever in the end again gather itself together at the foot of the Cross."

Wilhelm admired the figure, and its strange combination. "I will follow your counsel," added he; "let the casket continue locked till the key of it be found, though it should lie till the end of my life."

"One who lives long," said the old man, "sees much collected and much cast asunder."

The young partner in the house now chanced to enter, and Wilhelm signified his purpose of intrusting the Box to their keeping. A large book was thereupon produced, the deposit inscribed in it, with many ceremonies and stipulations; a receipt granted, which applied in words to any bearer, but was only to be honoured on the giving of a certain token agreed upon with the owner.

So passed their hours in instructive and entertaining conversation, till at last Felix, mounted on a gay pony, arrived in safety. A groom had accompanied him, and was now for some time to attend and serve Wilhelm. A letter from Lenardo, delivered at the same time, complained that he could find no vestige of the Nut-brown Maid; and Wilhelm was anew conjured to do his utmost in searching her out. Wilhelm imparted the matter to his landlord. The latter smiled, and said: "We must certainly make every exertion, for our friend's sake; perhaps I may succeed in learning something of her. As I keep these old primitive household goods, so likewise have I kept some old primitive friends. You tell me that this maiden's father was distinguished by his piety. The pious have a more intimate connexion with each other than the wicked; though externally it may not always prosper so well. By this means I hope to obtain some traces of what you are sent to seek. But, as a preparative, do you now pursue the resolution of placing your Felix among his equals and turning him to some fixed department of activity. Hasten with him to the great Institution. I will point out the way you must follow in order to find the Chief, who resides now in one, now in another division of his Province. You shall have a letter, with my best advice and direction."

CHAPTER X.

THE pilgrims, pursuing the way pointed out to them, had, without difficulty, reached the limits of the Province, where they were to see so many singularities. At the very entrance, they

selves in a district of extreme fertility; in its soft knolls, favourable to crops; in its higher hills, to sheep-husbandry; in its wide bottoms, to grazing. Harvest was near at hand, and all was in the richest luxuriance; yet what most surprised our travellers was, that they observed neither men nor women; but in all quarters boys and youths engaged in preparing for a happy harvest, nay already making arrangements for a merry harvest-home. Our travellers saluted several of them, and inquired for the Chief, of whose abode, however, they could gain no intelligence. The address of their letter was: *To the Chief, or the Three.* Of this also the boys could make nothing; however, they referred the strangers to an Overseer, who was just about mounting his horse to ride off. Our friends disclosed their object to this man: the frank liveliness of Felix seemed to please him, and so they all rode along together.

Wilhelm had already noticed, that in the cut and colour of the young people's clothes a variety prevailed, which gave the whole tiny population a peculiar aspect; he was just about to question his attendant on this point, when a still stranger observation forced itself upon him; all the children, how employed soever, laid down their work, and turned with singular, yet diverse gestures, towards the party riding past them; or rather, as it was easy to infer, towards the Overseer, who was in it. The youngest laid their arms crosswise over their breasts, and looked cheerfully up to the sky; those of middle size held their hands on their backs, and looked smiling on the ground; the eldest stood with a frank and spirited air; their arms stretched down, they turned their heads to the right, and formed themselves into a line; whereas the others kept separate, each where he chanced to be.

The riders having stopped and dismounted here, as several children, in their various modes, were standing forth to be inspected by the Overseer, Wilhelm asked the meaning of these gestures; but Felix struck in, and cried gaily: "What posture am I to take, then?"

"Without doubt," said the Overseer, "as the first posture: The arms over the breast, the face earnest and cheerful towards the sky."

Felix obeyed, but soon cried: "This is not much to my taste; I see nothing up there: does it last long? But yes!" exclaimed he joyfully, "yonder are a pair of falcons flying from the west to the east; that is a good sign too?"

"As thou takest it, as thou behavest," said the other; "now mingle among them, as they mingle." He gave a signal, and the children left their postures, and again betook them to work, or sport, as before.

"Are you at liberty," said Wilhelm then, "to explain this sight which surprises me? I easily perceive that these positions, these gestures, are salutations directed to you."

"Just so," replied the Overseer; "salutations which at once indicate in what degree of culture each of these boys is standing."

"But can you explain to me the meaning of this gradation?" inquired Wilhelm; "for that there is one is clear enough."

"This belongs to a higher quarter," said the other: "so much, however, I may tell you, that these ceremonies are not mere grimaces; that, on the contrary, the import of them, not the highest, but still a directing, intelligible import, is communicated to the children; while, at the same time, each is enjoined to retain and consider for himself whatever explanation it has been thought meet to give him; they are not allowed to talk of these things, either to strangers or among themselves; and thus their instruction is modified in many ways. Besides, secrecy itself has many advantages; for when you tell a man at once and straightforward the purpose of any object, he fancies there is nothing in it. Certain secrets, even if known to every one, men find that they must still reverence by concealment and silence, for this works on modesty and good morals."

"I understand you," answered Wilhelm: "why should not the principle which is so necessary in material things, be applied to spiritual also? But perhaps, in another point, you can satisfy my curiosity. The great variety of shape and colour in these children's clothes attracts my notice: and yet I do not see all sorts of colours, but a few in all their shades, from the lightest to the deepest. At the same time, I observe that by this no designation of degrees in age or merit can be intended; for the oldest and the youngest boys may be alike both in cut and colour, while those of similar gestures are not similar in dress."

"On this matter also," said the other, "silence is prescribed to me: but I am much mistaken, or you will not leave us without receiving all the information you desire."

Our party continued following the trace of the Chief, which they believed themselves to be upon. But now the strangers could not fail to notice, with new surprise, that the farther they advanced into the district, a vocal melody more and more frequently sounded towards them from the fields. Whatever the boys might be engaged with, whatever labour they were carrying on, they accompanied it with singing; and it seemed as if the songs were specially adapted to their various sorts of occupation, and in similar cases everywhere the same. If there chanced to be several children in company, they sang together in alternating parts. Towards

evening, appeared dancers likewise, whose steps were enlivened and directed by choruses. Felix struck in with them, not altogether unsuccessfully, from horseback, as he passed; and Wilhelm felt gratified in this amusement, which gave new life to the scene.

"Apparently," he said to his companion, "you devote considerable care to this branch of instruction; the accomplishment, otherwise, could not be so widely diffused, and so completely practised."

"We do," replied the other: "on our plan, Song is the first step in education; all the rest are connected with it, and attained by means of it. The simplest enjoyment, as well as the simplest instruction, we enliven and impress by Song; nay, even what religious and moral principles we lay before our children, are communicated in the way of Song. Other advantages for the excitement of activity spontaneously arise from this practice; for, in accustoming the children to write the tones they are to utter, in musical characters, and as occasion serves, again to seek these characters in the utterance of their own voice; and besides this, to subjoin the text below the notes, they are forced to practise hand, ear and eye at once, whereby they acquire the art of penmanship sooner than you would expect; and as all this in the long-run is to be effected by copying precise measurements and accurately settled numbers, they come to conceive the high value of Mensuration and Arithmetic much sooner than in any other way. Among all imaginable things, accordingly, we have selected music as the element of our teaching; for level roads run out from music towards every side."

Wilhelm endeavoured to obtain still farther information, and expressed his surprise at hearing no instrumental music: "This is by no means neglected here," said the other; "but practised in a peculiar district, one of the most pleasant valleys among the Mountains; and there again we have arranged it so that the different instruments shall be taught in separate places. The discords of beginners, in particular, are banished into certain solitudes, where they can drive no one to despair; for you will confess that in well-regulated civil society, there is scarcely a more melancholy suffering to be undergone, than what is forced on us by the neighbourhood of an incipient player on the flute or violin.

"Our learners, out of a laudable desire to be troublesome to no one, go forth of their own accord, for a longer or a shorter time, into the wastes; and strive in their seclusion to attain the merit which shall again admit them into the inhabited world. Each of

them, from time to time, is allowed to venture an attempt for admission, and the trial seldom fails of success; for bashfulness and modesty, in this, as in all other parts of our system, we strongly endeavour to maintain and cherish. That your son has a good voice, I am glad to observe: all the rest is managed with so much the greater ease."

They had now reached a place where Felix was to stop, and make trial of its arrangements, till a formal reception should be granted him. From a distance they had been saluted by a jocund sound of music; it was a game in which the boys were, for the present, amusing themselves in their hour of play. A general chorus mounted up; each individual of a wide circle striking in at his time, with a joyful, clear, firm tone, as the sign was given him by the Overseer. The latter more than once took the singers by surprise, when at a signal he suspended the choral song, and called on any single boy, touching him with his rod, to catch by himself the expiring tone, and adapt to it a suitable song, fitted also to the spirit of what had preceded. Most part showed great dexterity; a few, who failed in this feat, willingly gave in their pledges, without altogether being laughed at for their ill success. Felix was child enough to mix among them instantly; and in his new task he acquitted himself tolerably well. The First Salutation was then enjoined on him: he directly laid his hands on his breast, looked upwards, and truly with so roguish a countenance, that it was easy to observe no secret meaning had yet in his mind attached itself to this posture.

The delightful spot, his kind reception, the merry playmates, all pleased the boy so well, that he felt no very deep sorrow as his father moved away: the departure of the pony was perhaps a heavier matter; but he yielded here also, on learning that in this circle it could not possibly be kept; and the Overseer promised him, in compensation, that he should find another horse, as smart and well-broken, at a time when he was not expecting it.

As the Chief, it appeared, was not to be come at, the Overseer turned to Wilhelm and said: "I must now leave you, to pursue my occupations; but first I will bring you to the Three, who preside over our sacred things. Your letter is addressed to them likewise, and they together represent the Chief." Wilhelm could have wished to gain some previous knowledge of these sacred things, but his companion answered: "The Three will doubtless, in return for the confidence you show in leaving us your son, disclose to you in their wisdom and fairness what is most needful for you to learn. The visible objects of reverence, which I named sacred things, are collected in this separate circle; are mixed

with nothing, interfered with by nothing: at certain seasons of the year only are our pupils admitted here, to be taught in their various degrees of culture, by historical and sensible means; and in these short intervals they carry off a deep enough impression to suffice them for a time, during the performance of their other duties."

Wilhelm had now reached the gate of a wooded vale, surrounded with high walls: on a certain sign the little door opened, and a man of earnest and imposing look received our traveller. The latter found himself in a large beautifully umbrageous space, decked with the richest foliage, shaded with trees and bushes of all sorts; while stately walls and magnificent buildings were discerned only in glimpses through this thick natural boscage. A friendly reception from the Three, who by and by appeared, at last turned into a general conversation, the substance of which we now present in an abbreviated shape.

"Since you intrust your son to us," said they, "it is fair that we admit you to a closer view of our procedure. Of what is external you have seen much, that does not bear its meaning on its front. What part of this do you chiefly wish to have explained?"

"Dignified, yet singular gestures of salutation I have noticed, the import of which I would gladly learn: with you, doubtless, the exterior has a reference to the interior, and inversely; let me know what this reference is."

"Well-formed, healthy children," replied the Three, "bring much into the world along with them: Nature has given to each whatever he requires for time and duration; to unfold this is our duty: often it unfolds itself better of its own accord. One thing there is, however, which no child brings into the world with him; and yet it is on this one thing that all depends for making man in every point a man. If you can discover it yourself, speak it out." Wilhelm thought a little while, then shook his head.

The Three, after a suitable pause, exclaimed: *Reverence!* Wilhelm seemed to hesitate. "Reverence!" cried they a second time. "All want it, perhaps you yourself.

"Three kinds of gestures you have seen; and we inculcate a threefold Reverence, which, when commingled and formed into one whole, attains its highest force and effect. The first is Reverence for what is above us. That posture, the arms crossed over the breast, the look turned joyfully towards Heaven: that is what we have enjoined on young children; requiring from them thereby a testimony that there is a God above, who images and reveals himself in parents, teachers, superiors. Then comes the second;

Reverence for what is under us. Those hands folded over the back, and, as it were, tied together, that down-turned, smiling look, announce that we are to regard the Earth with attention and cheerfulness: from the bounty of the Earth we are nourished: the Earth affords unutterable joys; but disproportionate sorrows she also brings us. Should one of our children do himself external hurt, blameably or blamelessly; should others hurt him accidentally or purposely; should dead involuntary matter do him hurt; then let him well consider it; for such dangers will attend him all his days. But from this posture we delay not to free our pupil, the instant we become convinced that the instruction connected with it has produced sufficient influence on him. Then, on the contrary, we bid him gather courage, and turning to his comrades, range himself along with them. Now, at last, he stands forth, frank and bold; not selfishly isolated; only in combination with his equals does he front the world. Farther we have nothing to add."

"I see a glimpse of it!" said Wilhelm. "Are not the mass of men so marred and stinted, because they take pleasure only in the element of evil-wishing and evil-speaking? Whoever gives himself to this, soon comes to be indifferent towards God, contemptuous towards the world, spiteful towards his equals; and the true, genuine, indispensable sentiment of self-estimation corrupts into self-conceit and presumption. Allow me, however," continued he, "to state one difficulty. You say that reverence is not natural to man: now, has not the reverence or fear of rude people for violent convulsions of Nature, or other inexplicable, mysteriously-foreboding occurrences, been heretofore regarded as the germ out of which a higher feeling, a purer sentiment, was by degrees to be developed?"

"Nature is indeed adequate to fear," replied they; "but to reverence not adequate. Men fear a known or unknown powerful being: the strong seeks to conquer it, the weak to avoid it; both endeavour to get quit of it, and feel themselves happy when for a short season they have put it aside, and their nature has in some degree restored itself to freedom and independence. The natural man repeats this operation millions of times in the course of his life; from fear he struggles to freedom; from freedom he is driven back to fear, and so makes no advancement. To fear is easy, but grievous; to reverence is difficult, but satisfactory. Man does not willingly submit himself to reverence; or rather he never so submits himself: it is a higher sense, which must be communicated to his nature; which only in some peculiarly favoured individuals unfolds itself spontaneously, who on this account

have of old been looked upon as saints and gods. Here lies the worth, here lies the business of all true Religions; whereof there are likewise only three, according to the objects towards which they direct our devotion."

The men paused; Wilhelm reflected for a time in silence; but feeling in himself no pretension to unfold the meaning of these strange words, he requested the Sages to proceed with their exposition. They immediately complied. "No religion that grounds itself on fear," said they, "is regarded among us. With the reverence, to which a man should give dominion in his mind, he can, in paying honour, keep his own honour; he is not disunited with himself, as in the former case. The Religion which depends on reverence for what is above us, we denominate the Ethnic; it is the religion of the nations, and the first happy deliverance from a degrading fear: all Heathen religions, as we call them, are of this sort, whatsoever names they may bear. The Second Religion, which founds itself on reverence for what is around us, we denominate the Philosophical; for the philosopher stations himself in the middle, and must draw down to him all that is higher, and up to him all that is lower, and only in this medium condition does he merit the title of Wise. Here, as he surveys with clear sight his relation to his equals, and therefore to the whole human race; his relation likewise to all other earthly circumstances and arrangements necessary or accidental, he alone, in a cosmic sense, lives in Truth. But now we have to speak of the Third Religion, grounded on reverence for what is beneath us: this we name the Christian, as in the Christian religion such a temper is with most distinctness manifested: it is a last step to which mankind were fitted and destined to attain. But what a task was it, not only to be patient with the Earth, and let it lie beneath us, we appealing to a higher birthplace; but also to recognise humility and poverty, mockery and despite, disgrace and wretchedness, suffering and death, to recognise these things as divine; nay, even on sin and crime to look not as hindrances, but to honour and love them as furtherances, of what is holy. Of this, indeed, we find some traces in all ages: but the trace is not the goal; and this being now attained, the human species cannot retrograde; and we may say, that the Christian religion having once appeared, cannot again vanish; having once assumed its divine shape, can be subject to no dissolution."

"To which of these religions do you specially adhere?" inquired Wilhelm.

"To all the three," replied they: "for in their union they produce what may properly be called the true religion. Out of those

Three Reverences springs the highest reverence, reverence for oneself, and those again unfold themselves from this; so that man attains the highest elevation of which he is capable, that of being justified in reckoning himself the Best that God and Nature have produced: nay, of being able to continue on this lofty eminence, without being again by self-conceit and presumption drawn down from it into the vulgar level."

"Such a confession of faith, developed in this manner, does not repulse me," answered Wilhelm: "it agrees with much that one hears now and then in the course of life; only, you unite what others separate."

To this they replied: "Our confession has already been adopted, though unconsciously, by a great part of the world."

"How then, and where?" said Wilhelm.

"In the Creed!" exclaimed they: "for the first Article is Ethnic, and belongs to all nations; the second, Christian, for those struggling with affliction and glorified in affliction; the third, in fine, teaches an inspired Communion of Saints, that is, of men in the highest degree good and wise. And should not therefore the Three Divine Persons, under the similitudes and names of which these threefold doctrines and commands are promulgated, justly be considered as in the highest sense One?"

"I thank you," said Wilhelm, "for having pleased to lay all this before me in such clearness and combination, as before a grown-up person, to whom your three modes of feeling are not altogether foreign. And now, when I reflect that you communicate this high doctrine to your children, in the first place as a sensible sign, then with some symbolical accompaniment attached to it, and at last unfold to them its deepest meaning, I cannot but warmly approve of your method."

"Right," answered they: "but now we must show you more, and so convince you the better that your son is in no bad hands. This, however, may remain for the morrow: rest and refresh yourself, that you may attend us in the morning, as a man satisfied and unimpeded, into the interior of our Sanctuary."

CHAPTER XI.

At the hand of the Eldest, our friend now proceeded through a stately portal, into a round, or rather octagonal hall, so richly decked with pictures, that it struck him with astonishment as he entered. All this, he easily conceived, must have a significant

import, though at the moment he saw not so clearly what it was. While about to question his guide on this subject, the latter invited him to step forward into a gallery, open on the one side, and stretching round a spacious gay flowery garden. The wall, however, not the flowers, attracted the eyes of the stranger; it was covered with paintings, and Wilhelm could not walk far without observing that the Sacred Books of the Israelites had furnished the materials for these figures.

"It is here," said the Eldest, "that we teach our First Religion, the religion which, for the sake of brevity, I named the Ethnic. The spirit of it is to be sought for in the history of the world; its outward form, in the events of that history. Only in the return of similar destinies on whole nations, can it properly be apprehended."

"I observe," said Wilhelm, "you have done the Israelites the honour to select their history as the groundwork of this delineation, or rather, you have made it the leading object there."

"As you see," replied the Eldest; "for you will remark, that on the socles and friezes we have introduced another series of transactions and occurrences, not so much of a synchronistic, as of a symphronistic kind; since, among all nations, we discover records of a similar import, and grounded on the same facts. Thus you perceive here, while in the main field of the picture, Abraham receives a visit from his gods in the form of fair youths, Apollo, among the herdsmen of Admetus, is painted above on the frieze. From which we may learn, that the gods, when they appear to men, are commonly unrecognised of them."

The friends walked on. Wilhelm, for the most part, met with well-known objects, but they were here exhibited in a livelier and more expressive manner than he had been used to see them. On some few matters he requested explanation, and at last could not help returning to his former question: Why the Israelitish history had been chosen in preference to all others?

The Eldest answered: "Among all Heathen religions, for such also is the Israelitish, this has the most distinguished advantages; of which I shall mention only a few. At the Ethnic judgment-seat, at the judgment-seat of the God of Nations, it is not asked Whether this is the best, the most excellent nation, but whether it lasts, whether it has continued. The Israelitish people never was good for much, as its own leaders, judges, rulers, prophets have a thousand times reproachfully declared; it possesses few virtues, and most of the faults of other nations: but in cohesion, steadfastness, valour, and when all this would not serve, in obstinate toughness, it has no match. It is the most perseverant

nation in the world: it is, it was and will be; to glorify the name of Jehovah, through all ages. We have set it up, therefore, as the pattern figure; as the main figure, to which the others only serve as a frame."

"It becomes not me to dispute with you," said Wilhelm, "since you have instruction to impart. Open to me, therefore, the other advantages of this people, or rather of its history, of its religion."

"One chief advantage," said the other, "is its excellent collection of Sacred Books. These stand so happily combined together, that even out of the most diverse elements, the feeling of a whole still rises before us. They are complete enough to satisfy; fragmentary enough to excite; barbarous enough to rouse; tender enough to appease: and for how many other contradicting merits might not these Books, might not this one Book, be praised!"

The series of main figures, as well as their relations to the smaller which above and below accompanied them, gave the guest so much to think of, that he scarcely heard the pertinent remarks of his guide; who, by what he said, seemed desirous rather to divert our friend's attention, than to fix it on the paintings. Once, however, the old man said, on some occasion: "Another advantage of the Israelitish religion, I must here mention; it has not embodied its God in any form; and so has left us at liberty to represent him in a worthy human shape, and likewise, by way of contrast, to designate Idolatry by forms of beasts and monsters."

Our friend had now, in his short wandering through this hall, again brought the spirit of universal history before his mind; in regard to the events, he had not failed to meet with something new. So likewise, by the simultaneous presentment of the pictures, by the reflections of his guide, many new views had risen on him; and he could not but rejoice in thinking that his Felix was, by so dignified a visible representation, to seize and appropriate for his whole life those great, significant and exemplary events, as if they had actually been present, and transacted beside him. He came at length to regard the exhibition altogether with the eyes of the child, and in this point of view it perfectly contented him. Thus wandering on, they had now reached the gloomy and perplexed periods of the history, the destruction of the City and the Temple, the murder, exile, slavery of whole masses of this stiff-necked people. Its subsequent fortunes were delineated in a cunning allegorical way; a real historical delineation of them would have lain without the limits of true Art.

At this point, the gallery abruptly terminated in a closed door, and Wilhelm was surprised to see himself already at the end. "In your historical series," said he, "I find a chasm. You have

destroyed the Temple of Jerusalem, and dispersed the people; yet you have not introduced the divine Man who taught there shortly before; to whom, shortly before, they would give no ear."

"To have done this, as you require it, would have been an error. The life of that divine Man, whom you allude to, stands in no connexion with the general history of the world in his time. It was a private life; his teaching was a teaching for individuals. What has publicly befallen vast masses of people, and the minor parts which compose them, belongs to the general history of the world, to the general religion of the world; the religion we have named the First. What inwardly befalls individuals, belongs to the Second religion, the Philosophical: such a religion was it that Christ taught and practised, so long as he went about on Earth. For this reason, the external here closes, and I now open to you the internal."

A door went back, and they entered a similar gallery; where Wilhelm soon recognised a corresponding series of pictures from the New Testament. They seemed as if by another hand than the first: all was softer; forms, movements, accompaniments, light and colouring. "Here," said the guide, after they had looked over a few pictures, "you behold neither actions nor events, but Miracles and Similitudes. There is here a new world, a new exterior, different from the former; and an interior, which was altogether wanting there. By Miracles and Similitudes, a new world is opened up. Those make the common extraordinary, these the extraordinary common."

"You will have the goodness," said Wilhelm, "to explain these few words more minutely; for, by my own light, I cannot."

"They have a natural meaning," said the other, "though a deep one. Examples will bring it out most easily and soonest. There is nothing more common and customary than eating and drinking; but it is extraordinary to transform a drink into another of more noble sort; to multiply a portion of food that it suffice a multitude. Nothing is more common than sickness and corporeal diseases; but to remove, to mitigate these by spiritual, or spiritual-like means, is extraordinary; and even in this lies the wonder of the Miracle, that the common and the extraordinary, the possible and the impossible, become one. With the Similitude again, with the Parable, the converse is the case: here it is the sense, the view, the idea, that forms the high, the unattainable, the extraordinary. When this embodies itself in a common, customary, comprehensible figure, so that it meets us as if alive, present, actual; so that we can seize it, appropriate, retain it, live with it as with our equal,—this is a second sort of miracle, and is justly placed

beside the first sort, nay perhaps preferred to it. Here a living doctrine is pronounced, a doctrine which can cause no argument: it is not an opinion about what is right and wrong; it is Right and Wrong themselves, and indisputably."

This part of the gallery was shorter; indeed it formed but the fourth part of the circuit enclosing the interior court. Yet if in the former part you merely walked along, you here liked to linger, you here walked to and fro. The objects were not so striking, not so varied: yet they invited you the more to penetrate their deep still meaning. Our two friends, accordingly, turned round at the end of the space; Wilhelm, at the same time, expressing some surprise that these delineations went no farther than the Supper, than the scene where the Master and his Disciples part. He inquired for the remaining portion of the history.

"In all sorts of instruction," said the Eldest, "in all sorts of communication, we are fond of separating whatever it is possible to separate; for by this means alone can the notion of importance and peculiar significance arise in the young mind. Actual experience of itself mingles and mixes all things together: here, accordingly, we have entirely disjoined that sublime Man's life from its termination. In life, he appears as a true Philosopher—let not the expression stagger you—as a wise man in the highest sense. He stands firm to his point; he goes on his way inflexibly; and while he exalts the lower to himself, while he makes the ignorant, the poor, the sick, partakers of his wisdom, of his riches, of his strength, he, on the other hand, in no wise conceals his divine origin; he dares to equal himself with God, nay to declare that he himself is God. In this manner is he wont, from youth upwards, to astound his familiar friends; of these he gains a part to his own cause; irritates the rest against him; and shows to all men, who are aiming at a certain elevation in doctrine and life, what they have to look for from the world. And thus, for the noble portion of mankind his walk and conversation are even more instructive and profitable than his death: for to those trials every one is called, to this trial but a few. Now, omitting all that results from this consideration, do but look at the touching scene of the Last Supper. Here the Wise Man, as it ever is, leaves those that are his own utterly orphaned behind him; and while he is careful for the Good, he feeds along with them a traitor by whom he and the Better are to be destroyed."

With these words the Eldest opened a door; and Wilhelm faltered in surprise, as he found himself again in the first hall at the entrance. They had, in the mean while, as he now saw, passed round the whole circuit of the court. "I hoped," said

"you were leading me to the conclusion, and you take me back to the beginning."

"For the present," said the Eldest, "I can show you nothing farther: more we do not lay before our pupils, more we do not explain to them, than what you have now gone through. All that is external, worldly, universal, we communicate to each from youth upwards; what is more particularly spiritual and conversant with the heart, to those only who grow up with some thoughtfulness of temper; and the rest, which is opened only once a-year, cannot be imparted save to those whom we are sending forth as finished. That last Religion which arises from the Reverence of what is beneath us; that veneration of the contradictory, the hated, the avoided, we give each of our pupils, in small portions by way of outfit, along with him into the world, merely that he may know where more is to be had, should such a want spring up within him. I invite you to return hither at the end of a year, to visit our general festival, and see how far your son is advanced: then shall you be admitted into the Sanctuary of Sorrow."

"Permit me one question," said Wilhelm: "as you have set up the life of this divine Man for a pattern and example, have you likewise selected his sufferings, his death, as a model of exalted patience?"

"Undoubtedly we have," replied the Eldest. "Of this we make no secret: but we draw a veil over those sufferings, even because we reverence them so highly. We hold it a damnable audacity to bring forth that torturing Cross, and the Holy One who suffers on it, or to expose them to the light of the sun, which hid its face when a reckless world forced such a sight on it; to take these mysterious secrets, in which the divine depth of Sorrow lies hid, and play with them, fondle them, trick them out, and rest not till the most reverend of all solemnities appears vulgar and paltry. Let so much, for the present, suffice to put your mind at peace respecting your son; and to convince you, that on meeting him again, you will find him trained, more or less, in one department or another, but at least in a proper way; and, at all events, not wavering, perplexed and unstable."

Wilhelm still lingered, looking at the pictures in this entrance-hall, and wishing to get explanation of their meaning. "This too," said the Eldest, "we must still owe you for a twelvemonth. The instruction, which, in the interim, we give the children, no stranger is allowed to witness: then, however, come to us; and you will hear what our best speakers think it serviceable to make public on these matters."

Shortly after this conversation, a knocking was heard at the

little gate. The Overseer of last night announced himself: he had brought out Wilhelm's horse; and so our friend took leave of the Three; who, as he set out, consigned him to the Overseer with these words: "This man is now numbered among the Trusted, and thou understandest what thou hast to tell him in answer to his questions; for, doubtless, he still wishes to be informed on much that he has seen and heard while here: purpose and circumstance are known to thee."

Wilhelm had, in fact, some questions on his mind; and these he ere long put into words. As they rode along, they were saluted by the children, as on the preceding evening; but today, though rarely, he now and then observed a boy who did not pause in his work to salute the Overseer, but let him pass unheeded. Wilhelm asked the cause of this, and what such an exception meant. His companion answered: "It is full of meaning; for it is the highest punishment which we inflict on our pupils; they are declared unworthy to show reverence, and obliged to exhibit themselves as rude and uncultivated natures: but they do their utmost to get free of this situation, and in general adapt themselves with great rapidity to any duty. Should a young creature, on the other hand, obdurately make no attempt at return and amendment, he is then sent back to his parents, with a brief but pointed statement of his case. Whoever cannot suit himself to the regulations, must leave the district where they are in force."

Another circumstance excited Wilhelm's curiosity today, as it had done yesterday: the variety of colour and shape apparent in the dress of the pupils. Hereby no gradation could be indicated; for children who saluted differently, were sometimes clothed alike; and others agreeing in salutation, differed in apparel. Wilhelm inquired the reason of this seeming contradiction. "It will be explained," said the other, "when I tell you, that by this means we endeavour to find out the children's several characters. With all our general strictness and regularity, we allow in this point a certain latitude of choice. Within the limits of our own stores of cloths and garnitures, the pupils are permitted to select what colour they please; and so likewise, within moderate limits, in regard to shape and cut. Their procedure, in these matters, we accurately note; for by the colour we discover their turn of thinking; by the cut, their turn of acting. However, a decisive judgment in this is rendered difficult by one peculiar property of human nature, by the tendency to imitate, the inclination to unite with something. It is very seldom that a pupil fancies any dress that has not been already there; for most part, they select something known, something which they see before [redacted]

eyes. Yet this also we find worth observing; by such external circumstances, they declare themselves of one party or another; they unite with this or that; and thus some general features of their characters are indicated; we perceive whither each tends, what example he follows.

"We have had cases where the dispositions of our children verged to generality; where one fashion threatened to extend over all; and any deviation from it to dwindle into the state of exception. Such a turn of matters we endeavour softly to stop; we let our stores run out; this and that sort of stuff, this and that sort of decoration is no longer to be had: we introduce something new and attractive; by bright colours and short smart shape, we allure the lively; by grave shadings, by commodious many-folded make, the thoughtful; and thus, by degrees, restore the equilibrium.

"For to uniform we are altogether disinclined: it conceals the character, and, more than any other species of distortion, withdraws the peculiarities of children from the eye of their superiors."

Amid this and other conversation, Wilhelm reached the border of the Province; and this at the point, where, by the direction of his antiquarian friend, he was to leave it, to pursue his next special object.

At parting, it was now settled with the Overseer, that after the space of a twelvemonth, Wilhelm should return, when the grand Triennial Festival was to be celebrated; on which occasion all the parents were invited; and finished pupils were sent forth into the tasks of chanceful life. Then too, so he was informed, he might visit at his pleasure all the other Districts; where, on peculiar principles, each branch of education was communicated and reduced to practice in complete isolation, and with every furtherance.

CHAPTER XII.

Hersilia to Wilhelm.

My valued, and to speak it plainly, dear friend, you are wrong; and yet, as acting on your own conviction, not wrong either. So the Nut-brown Maid is found, then; found, seen, spoken to, known and acknowledged! And you tell us farther, that it is impossible to wish this strange person, in her own way, any happier condition; or, in her present one, to be of any real advantage to her.

And now you make it a point of conscience not to tell us where that wondrous being lives. This you may settle with your own

conscience; but to us it is unconscionable. You think to calm Lenardo by assuring him that she is well. He had said, almost promised, that he would content himself with this: but what will not the passionate promise for others and themselves! Know then that the matter is not in the least concluded as it yet stands. She is happy, you tell us, happy by her own activity and merit: but the youth would like to learn the How, the When and the Where; and, what is worse than this, his sisters too would like to learn. Half a year is gone since your departure; till the end of another half year we cannot hope to see you. Could not you, like a shrewd and knowing man, contrive to play your eternal *Rouge-et-Noir* in our neighbourhood? I have seen people that could make the Knight skip over all the chess-board without ever lighting twice on one spot. You should learn this feat; your friends would not have to want you so long.

But, to set my good-will to you in the clearest light, I now tell you in confidence, that there are two most enchanting creatures on the road; whence I say not, nor whither; described they cannot be, and no eulogy will do them justice. A younger and an elder lady, between whom it always grieves one to make choice; the former so lovely, that all must wish to be loved by her; the latter so attractive, that you must wish to live beside her, though she did not love you. I could like, with all my heart, to see you hemmed in, for three days, between these two Splendours; on the morning of the fourth, your rigorous vow would stand you in excellent stead.

By way of foretaste, I send you a story, which in some degree refers to them; what of it is true or fictitious, you can try to learn from themselves.

THE MAN OF FIFTY.

The Major came riding into the court of the mansion; and Hilaria, his niece, was already standing without to receive him, at the bottom of the stairs which led up to the apartments. Scarcely could he recognise her, for she had grown both in stature and beauty. She flew to meet him; he pressed her to his breast with the feeling of a father.

To the Baroness, his sister, he was likewise welcome; and as Hilaria hastily retired to prepare breakfast, the Major said, with a joyful air: "For this time I can come to the point at once, and say that our business is finished. Our brother, the Chief Marshal, has at last convinced himself that he can neither manage farmers nor stewards. In his lifetime he makes over the estates to us and our children: the annuity he bargains for is high, indeed; but we

can still pay it: we gain something for the present; and for the future all. This new arrangement is to be completed forthwith. And as I very soon expect my discharge, I can again look forward to an active life, which may secure decided advantages to us and ours. We shall calmly see our children growing up beside us; and it will depend on us, on them, to hasten their union."

"All this were well," said the Baroness, "had not I a secret to inform thee of, which I myself discovered first. Hilaria's heart is no longer free: on her side thy son has little or nothing to hope for."

"What sayest thou?" cried the Major. "Is it possible? While we have been taking all pains to settle economical concerns, does inclination play us such a trick? Tell me, love, quick tell me, who is it that has fettered Hilaria's heart? Or is it then so bad as this? Is it not, perhaps, some transient impression we may hope to efface again?"

"Thou must think and guess a little first," replied the Baroness, and thereby heightened his impatience. It had mounted to the utmost pitch, when the entrance of Hilaria, with the servants bringing in breakfast, put a negative on any quick solution of the riddle.

The Major himself thought he saw the fair girl with other eyes than a little while before. He almost felt as if jealous of the happy man, whose image had been able to imprint itself on a soul so lovely. The breakfast he could not relish; and he noticed not that all was ordered as he liked to have it, and as he had used to wish and require it.

In this silence and stagnation, Hilaria herself almost lost her liveliness. The mother felt embarrassed, and led her daughter to the harpsichord: but Hilaria's sprightly and expressive playing scarcely extorted any approbation from the Major. He wished the breakfast and the lovely girl fairly out of the way; and the Baroness was at last obliged to resolve on breaking up, and proposed to her brother a walk in the garden.

No sooner were they by themselves, than the Major pressingly repeated his question; to which, after a pause, his sister answered, smiling: "If thou wouldst find the happy man whom she loves, thou hast not far to go, he is quite at hand; she loves *thee!*"

The Major stopped in astonishment, then cried: "It were a most unseasonable jest to trick me into such a thought, which, if true, would make me so embarrassed and unhappy. For though I need time to recover from my amazement, I see at one glance how grievously our circumstances would be disturbed by so unlooked-for an incident. The only thing that comforts me is my

persuasion that attachments of this sort are apparent merely; that a self-deception lurks behind them, and that a good true soul will undoubtedly return from such mistakes, either by its own strength, or at least by a little help from judicious friends."

"I am not of that opinion," said the Baroness; "by all the symptoms, Hilaria's present feeling is a very serious one."

"A thing so unnatural I should not have expected from so natural a character," replied the Major.

"So unnatural it is not, after all," said his sister. "I myself recollect having, in my own youth, an attachment to a man still older than thou. Thou art fifty; not so very great an age for a German, if perhaps other livelier nations do fail sooner."

"But how dost thou support thy conjecture?" said the Major.

"It is no conjecture, it is certainty. The details thou shalt learn by and by."

Hilaria joined them; and the Major felt himself, against his will, a second time altered. Her presence seemed to him still dearer and more precious than before; her manner more affectionate and tender; already he began to put some faith in his sister's statement. The feeling was highly delightful, though he neither would permit nor confess this to his mind. Hilaria was, in truth, peculiarly interesting; her manner blended in closest union a soft shyness as towards a lover, and a trustful frankness as towards an uncle; for she really, and with her whole soul, loved him. The garden lay in all the pomp of spring; and the Major, who saw so many old trees again putting on their vesture, might also believe in the returning of his own spring. And who would not have been tempted to it, at the side of this most lovely maiden?

So passed the day with them; the various household epochs were gone through in high cheerfulness: in the evening, after supper, Hilaria returned to her harpsichord; the Major listened with other ears than in the morning; one melody winded into another; one song produced a second; and scarcely could midnight separate the little party.

On retiring to his room, the Major found everything arranged to suit his old habitual conveniences: some copperplates, even, which he liked to look at, had been shifted from other apartments; and his eyes being at last opened, he saw himself attended to and flattered in the most minute particulars.

A few hours' sleep sufficed on this occasion: his buoyant spirits aroused him early. But now he soon found occasion to observe, that a new order of things carries many inconveniences along with it. His old groom, who also discharged the functions

of lackey and valet, he had not once reproved during many years; for all went its usual course in the most rigid order; the horses were dressed, and the clothes brushed, at the proper moment; but today the master had risen earlier, and nothing suited as it used to do.

Ere long a new circumstance combined with this to ruffle him still farther. At other times all had been right, as his servant had prepared it for him; now, however, on advancing to the glass, he found himself not at all as he wished to be. Some gray hairs he could not deny; and of wrinkles also there appears to have been a trace or two. He wiped and powdered more than usual; and was fain at last to let matters stand as they could. Then, it seemed, there were still creases in his coat, and still dust on his boots. The old groom knew not what to make of this, and was amazed to see so altered a master before him.

In spite of all these hindrances, the Major got down to the garden in good time. Hilaria, whom he hoped to find there, he actually found. She brought him a nosegay, and he had not the heart to kiss her as usual, and press her to his breast. He felt himself in the most delightful embarrassment, and yielded to his feelings, without reflecting whither they might carry him.

The Baroness soon joined them, and directing her brother to a note which had just been brought her by a special messenger, she cried: "Thou wilt not guess whom this announces to us!"

"Tell us at once, then," said the Major; and it now appeared that an old theatrical friend was travelling by a road not far off, and purposing to call for a moment. "I am anxious to see him again," said the Major: "he is no chicken now; and I hear he still plays young parts."

"He must be ten years older than thou," replied the Baroness.

"He must," said the Major, "from all that I remember."

They had not waited long, when a lively, handsome, courteous man stept forward to them. Yet the friends soon recognised each other; and recollections of all sorts enlivened the conversation. They proceeded to questions, to answers, to narratives; they mutually made known their present situations, and in a short time felt as if they had never been separated.

Secret history informs us that this person had, in former days, being then a very elegant and graceful youth, had the good or bad fortune to attract the favour of a lady of rank; that, by this means he had come into perplexity and danger; out of which the Major, at the very moment when the saddest fate seemed impending, had happily delivered him. From that hour he continued

grateful, to the brother as well as to the sister; for it was she that, by timeful warning, had originated their precautions.

For a while before dinner, the men were left alone. Not without surprise, nay, in some measure, with amazement, had the Major viewed as a whole, and in detail, the exterior condition of his old friend. He seemed not in the smallest altered: and it was not to be wondered at that he could still appear on the stage as an actor of youthful parts. "Thou inspectest me more strictly than is fair," said he at last to the Major: "I fear thou findest the difference between this and bygone times but too great."

"Not at all," replied the Major: "on the contrary, it fills me with astonishment to find thy look fresher and younger than mine; though I know thou wert a firmset man, at the time when I, with the boldness of a callow desperado, stood by thee in certain straits."

"It is thy own fault," replied the other; "it is the fault of all like thee; and though you are not to be loudly censured for it, you are still to be blamed. You think only of the needful; you wish to be, not to seem. This is very well, so long as one *is* anything. But when, at last, Being comes to recommend itself by Seeming, and this Seeming is found to be even more transient than the Being, then every one of you discovers that he would not have done amiss, if, in his care for what was inward, he had not entirely neglected what was outward."

"Thou art right," replied the Major, and could scarcely suppress a sigh.

"Perhaps not altogether right," said the aged youth; "for though in my trade it were unpardonable if one did not try to parget up the outward man as long as possible, you people need to think of other things, which are more important and profitable."

"Yet there are occasions," said the Major, "when a man feels fresh internally, and could wish, with all his heart, that he were fresh externally too."

As the stranger could not have the slightest suspicion of the Major's real state of mind, he took these words in a soldierly sense; and copiously explained how much depended on externals in the art military, and how the officer, who had so much attention to bestow on dress, might apply a little also to skin and hair.

"For example," continued he, "it is indubitable that your temples are already gray, that wrinkles are here and there gathering together, and that your crown threatens to grow bald. Now look at me, old fellow as I am! See how I have held out! And all this without witchcraft; and with far less pains and care

others take, day after day, in spoiling, or at least wearying themselves."

The Major found this accidental conversation too precious an affair to think of ending it soon; but he went to work softly, and with precaution towards even an old acquaintance. "This opportunity, alas, I have lost," cried he; "and it is past recalling now: I must even content myself as I am, and you will not think worse of me on that account."

"Lost it is not," said the other, "were not you grave gentlemen so stiff and stubborn; did you not directly call one vain, if he thinks about his person, and cast away from you the happiness of being in pleasant company, and pleasing there yourselves."

"If it is not magic," smiled the Major, "that you people use for keeping yourselves young, it is at all events a secret; or at least you have *arcana*, such as one often sees bepraised in newspapers, and from these you pick out the best."

"Joke or earnest," said the other, "thou hast spoken truth. Among the many things that have been tried for giving some repair to the exterior, which often fails far sooner than the interior, there are, in fact, certain invaluable recipes, simple as well as compound; which, as imparted to me by brethren of the craft, purchased for ready money, or hit upon by chance, I have proved and found effectual. By these I now hold fast and persevere, yet without abandoning my farther researches. So much I may tell thee, and without exaggeration: A dressing-box I carry with me beyond all price! A box, whose influences I could like to try on thee, if we chanced any time to be a fortnight together."

The thought that such a thing was possible, and that this possibility was held out to him so accidentally at the very moment of need, enlivened the spirit of the Major to such a degree, that he actually appeared much fresher and brisker already: at table, excited by the hope of bringing head and face into harmony with his heart, and by eagerness to get acquainted with the methods of doing so, he was quite another man; he met Hilaria's graceful attentions with alacrity of soul, and even looked at her with a certain confidence, which in the morning he was far from feeling.

If the dramatic stranger had contrived, by many recollections, stories and happy hits, to keep up the cheerful humour once excited, he so much the more alarmed the Major, on signifying, when the cloth was removed, that he must now think of setting forth and continuing his journey. By every scheme in his power, the Major strove to facilitate his friend's stay, at least for the night; he pressingly engaged to have horses and relays in readiness next morning; in a word, the healing toilette was absolutely

not to get out of the premises, till once he had obtained more light on its contents and use.

The Major saw very well that here no time must be lost: he accordingly endeavoured, soon after dinner, to take his old favourite aside, and speak with him in private. Not having the heart to proceed directly to the point, he steered towards it afar off; and, taking up the former conversation, signified: That he, for his part, would willingly bestow more care on his exterior, were it not that people, the moment they observed a man making such an attempt, marked him down for vain; and so deducted from him in regard to moral esteem, what they felt obliged to yield him in regard to sensible.

"Do not vex me with such phrases!" said his friend: "these are words to which society has got accustomed, without attaching any meaning to them; or if we take it up more strictly, by which it indicates its unfriendly and spiteful nature. If thou consider it rightly, what, after all, is this same vanity they make so much ado about? Every man should feel some pleasure in himself, and happy he who feels it. But if he does feel it, how can he help letting others notice it? How shall he hide, in the midst of life, that it gives him joy to be alive? If good society, and I mean this exclusively here, only blamed such indications when they became too violent; when the joy of one man over his existence hindered others to have joy and to show it over theirs, it were good and well; and from this excess the censure has, in fact, originally sprung. But what are we to make of that strange, prim, abnegating rigour against a thing which cannot be avoided? Why should not a display of feeling on the part of others be considered innocent and tolerable, which, more or less, we from time to time allow ourselves? For it is the pleasure one has in himself, the desire to communicate this consciousness of his to others, that makes a man agreeable; the feeling of his own grace that makes him graceful. Would to Heaven all men were vain! that is, were vain with clear perception, with moderation and in a proper sense; we should then, in the cultivated world, have happy times of it. Women, it is told us, are vain from the very cradle; yet does it not become them, do they not please us the more? How can a youth form himself, if he is not vain? An empty, hollow nature, will, by this means, at least contrive to give itself an outward show; and a proper man will soon train himself from the outside inwards. As to my own share, I have reason to consider myself in this point a most happy man; for my trade justifies me in being vain; and the vainer I am, the more satisfaction I give. I am praised when others are blamed; and have still, in this very

way, the happiness and the right to gratify and charm the public, at an age when others are constrained to retire from the scene, or linger on it only with disgrace."

The Major heard with no great joy the issue of these reflections. The little word vanity, as he pronounced it, had been meant to serve as a transition, for enabling him to introduce with some propriety the statement of his own wish. But now he was afraid, if their dialogue proceeded thus, he should be led still farther from his aim; so he hastened to the point directly.

"For my own part," said he, "I should by no means disincline to enlist under thy flag, since thou still holdest it to be in time, and thinkest I might yet in some degree make up for what is lost. Impart to me somewhat of thy tinctures, pomades and balsams; and I will make a trial of them."

"Imparting," said the other, "is a harder task than you suppose. Here, for example, it were still to small purpose that I poured thee out some liquors from my phials, and left the half of the best ingredients in my toilette: the appliance is the hardest. You cannot, on the instant, appropriate what is given you: how this and that suit together, under what circumstances, in what sequence things are to be used; all this requires practice and study; nay study and practice themselves will scarcely profit, if one bring not to the business a natural genius for it."

"Thou art now, it seems, for drawing back," said the Major. "Thou raisest difficulties when I would have thy truly somewhat fabulous assertions rendered certain. Thou hast no mind to let me try thy words by the test of action."

"By such banterings, my friend," replied the other, "thou wouldst not prevail on me to gratify thy wish; if it were not that I entertain such affection for thee, and indeed first made the proposal myself. Besides, if we consider it, man has quite a peculiar pleasure in making Proselytes; in bringing what he values in himself into view also without himself on others; causing others to enjoy what he enjoys; finding in others his own likeness, represented and reflected back to him. In sooth, if this is selfishness, it is of the most laudable and lovable sort, that selfishness which has made us men and keeps us so. From this universal feeling, then, apart from my friendship to thee, I shall be happy in having such a scholar in the great youth-renewing art. But, as from a master it may be expected that he shall produce no botcher by his training, I confess myself a little at a loss how to set about it. I told thee already that neither recipes nor instructions would avail; the practice cannot be taught by universal rules. For thy sake, and from the wish to propagate my doctrine, I am ready to

make any sacrifice. The greatest in my power for the present moment I will now propose to thee. I shall leave my servant here; a sort of waiting-man and conjuror, who, if he does not understand preparing everything, if he has not yet been initiated into all the mysteries, can apply my preparations perfectly; and in the first stage of the attempt will be of great use to thee, till once thou have worked thy way so far into the art, that I may reveal to thee the higher secrets also."

"How!" cried the Major; "thou hast stages and degrees in thy art of making young? Thou hast secrets even for the initiated?"

"No doubt of it!" replied the other. "That were but a sorry art which could be comprehended all at once; the last point of which could be seen by one just entering its precincts."

Without loss of time, the waiting-man was formally consigned to the Major, who engaged to treat him handsomely. The Baroness was called on for drawers, boxes, glasses, to what purpose she knew not: the partition of the toilette store went forward; the friends kept together in a gay and sprightly mood till after night-fall. At moonrise, some time later, the guest took his leave, promising ere long to return.

The Major reached his chamber pretty much fatigued. He had risen early, had not spared himself throughout the day, and now hoped very soon to get to bed. But here instead of one servant, he found two. The old groom, in his old way, rapidly undressed him; but now the waiting-man stept forth and signified, that for appliances of a renovating and cosmetic nature, the peculiar season was night; that so their effects, assisted by a peaceful sleep, might be stronger and safer. The Major was obliged to content himself, and let his head be anointed, his face painted, his eyebrows pencilled, and his lips tipt with salve. Besides all this, there were various ceremonies still required; nay the very nightcap was not to be put on immediately, not till a net, or even a fine leather cap, had been drawn on next the head.

The Major laid himself in bed with a sort of unpleasant feeling; which, however, he had no time to investigate the nature of, as he very soon fell asleep. But if we might speak with his spirit, we should say he felt himself a little mummy-like, somewhat between a sick man and a man embalmed. Yet the sweet image of Hilaria, encircled with the gayest hopes, soon led him into a refreshing sleep.

In the morning, at the proper hour, the groom was ready in his place. All that pertained to his master's equipment lay in wonted order on the chairs; and the Major was just on the point of rising, when the new attendant entered, and strongly pro[redacted]

against any such precipitation. He must rest, he must wait, if their enterprise was to prosper, if they were to be rewarded for their pains and labour. The Major now learned that he had to rise by and by, to take a slight breakfast, and then go into a bath, which was already prepared for him. The regulations were inflexible; they required a strict observance; and some hours passed away under these occupations.

The Major abridged the resting-time after his bath, and thought to get his clothes about him; for he was by nature expeditious, and at present he longed to see Hilaria: but in this point also his new servant thwarted him; and signified, that in all cases he must drop the thought of being in a hurry. Whatever he did, it appeared, must be done leisurely and pleasureably; but the time of dressing was especially to be considered as a cheerful hour for conversation with oneself.

The valet's manner of proceeding completely agreed with his words. But, in return, the Major, when, on stepping forward to the glass, he saw himself trimmed out in the neatest fashion, really thought that he was better dressed than formerly. Without many words, the conjuror had changed the very uniform into a newer cut, having spent the night in working at it. An apparently so quick rejuvenescence put the Major in his liveliest mood; so that he felt himself as if renovated both without and within, and hastened with impatient longing to his friends.

He found his sister engaged in looking at the pedigree, which she had caused to be hung up; the conversation last night having turned on some collateral relations, unmarried persons, or resident in foreign countries, or entirely gone out of sight, from all of whom the Baroness and her brother had more or less hope of heritages for themselves or their families. They conversed a while on these matters, without mentioning the circumstance that all their economical cares and exertions had hitherto been solely directed to their children. By Hilaria's attachment the whole of this prospect had altered; yet neither the Major nor his sister could summon courage to mention it farther, at this moment.

The Baroness left the room; the Major was standing alone before this laconic history of his family; Hilaria stept in to him; she leant herself on him in a kind child-like way, looked at the parchment, and asked him whom of all these he had known, and who of them were still left and living.

The Major began his delineation with the oldest, of whom any dim recollection remained with him from childhood. Then he proceeded farther; painted the characters of several fathers, the likeness or unlikeness of their children to them; remarked that

the grandfather often re-appeared in the grandson; spoke, by the way, of the influence of certain women, wedded out of stranger families, and sometimes changing the character of whole branches. He eulogised the virtue of many an ancestor and relative, nor did he hide their failings. Such as had brought shame on their lineage he passed in silence. At length he reached the lowest lines. Here stood his brother, the Chief-Marshal, himself, and his sister, and beneath him his son, with Hilaria at his side.

"These two look each other straight enough in the face," said the Major; not adding what he thought of the matter in his heart.

After a pause Hilaria answered, in a meek small tone, and almost with a sigh: "Yet those, surely, are not to blame who look upwards." At the same time she looked up to him with a pair of eyes, out of which her whole love was speaking.

"Do I understand thee rightly?" said the Major, turning round to her.

"I can say nothing," answered she, with a smile, "which you do not know already."

"Thou makest me the happiest man under the sun," cried he, and fell at her feet. "Wilt thou be mine?"

"For Heaven's sake rise! I am thine forever."

The Baroness entered. Though not surprised, she rather hesitated. "If it be wrong, sister," said the Major, "the blame is thine; if it be right, we will thank thee forever."

The Baroness from youth upwards had so loved her brother, that she preferred him to all men; and perhaps Hilaria's attachment itself had, if not arisen from this sisterly partiality, at least been cherished by it. All three now united in one love, in one delight; and thus the happiest hours flew over them. Yet at last their eyes re-opened to the world around them likewise; and this rarely stands in unison with such emotions.

They now again bethought them of the son. For him Hilaria had been destined; this he himself well knew. Directly after finishing the business with the Chief-Marshal, the Major had appointed his son to expect him in the garrison, that they might settle everything together, and conduct these purposes to a happy issue. But now, by an unexpected occurrence, the whole state of matters had been thrown out of joint; the circumstances which before plied into one another so kindly, now seemed to be assuming a hostile aspect; and it was not easy to foresee what turn the affair would take, what temper would seize the individuals concerned in it.

Meanwhile the Major was obliged to resolve on visiting his son, to whom he had already announced himself. Not without

reluctance, not without singular forecastings, not without pain at even for a short time leaving Hilaria, he at last, after much lingering, took the road; and leaving groom and horses behind him, proceeded with his cosmetic valet, who had now become an indispensable appendage, towards the town where his son resided.

Both saluted and embraced each other cordially, after so long a separation. They had much to communicate; yet they did not just commence with what lay nearest their hearts. The son went into copious talk about his hopes of speedy advancement; in return for which, the father gave him precise accounts of what had been discussed and determined between the elder members of the family, both in regard to fortune in general, to the individual estates, and everything pertaining to them.

The conversation was in some degree beginning to flag, when the son took heart, and said to his father, with a smile: "You treat me very tenderly, dear father, and I thank you for it. You tell me of properties and fortune, and mention not the terms under which, at least in part, they are to be mine: you keep back the name of Hilaria; you expect that I should bring it forth, that I should express my desire to be speedily united with that amiable maiden."

At these words the Major felt himself in great perplexity; but as, partly by nature, partly by old habit, it was his way to collect the purpose of the man he had to treat with before stating his own, he now said nothing, and looked at the son with an ambiguous smile. "You will not guess, father, what I have to say," continued the Lieutenant; "I will speak it out briefly, and once for all. I can depend on your affection, which, amid such manifold care for me, has doubtless an eye to my true happiness as well as my fortune. Some time or other it must be said; be it said then even now; Hilaria cannot make me happy! I think of Hilaria as of a lovely relative, towards whom I would live all my days with the friendliest feelings; but another has awakened my affection, another has bound my heart. The attachment is irresistible; you will not make me miserable."

Not without effort did the Major conceal the cheerfulness which was rising over his face; and in a tone of mild seriousness inquire of the son: Who the person was that had so entirely subdued him?—"You must see her yourself, father," said the other; "for she can as little be described as comprehended. I have but one fear,—that you yourself will be led away by her, like every one that approaches her. By Heaven, it will be so; and I shall see you the rival of your son!"

"But who is she, then?" inquired the Major. "If it is not in

thy power to delineate her personal characteristics, tell me at least of her outward circumstances; these at least may be described."

"Well, then, father," replied the son: "and yet these outward circumstances too would be different in a different person, would act otherwise on another. She is a young widow, heiress of an old rich man lately deceased; independent, and well meriting to be so; acquainted with many, loved by just as many, courted by just as many; yet, if I mistake not very greatly, in her heart wholly mine."

With joyful vivacity, as the father kept silence, and gave no sign of disapproval, the son proceeded to describe the conduct of the fair widow towards him; told of her all-conquering grace; recounted one by one her tender expressions of favour; in which the father truly could see nothing but the light friendliness of a universally courted woman, who among so many may indeed prefer some one, yet without on that account entirely deciding for him. Under any other circumstances he would doubtless have endeavoured to warn a son, nay even a friend, of the self-deception which might probably enough be at work here: but in the present case he himself was so anxious for his son's being right, for the fair widow's really loving him, and as soon as possible deciding in his favour, that he either felt no scruple of this sort, or banished any such from his mind, perhaps even only concealed it.

"Thou placest me in great perplexity," began the father, after some pause. "The whole arrangement between the surviving members of our family depends on the understanding that thou wed Hilaria. If she wed a stranger, the whole fair, careful combination of a fine fortune falls to the ground again, and thou thyself art not too well provided for. There is certainly another way still, but one which sounds rather strange, and by which thou wouldst gain very little: I, in my old days, might wed Hilaria; a plan which could hardly give thee any very high satisfaction."

"The highest in the world!" exclaimed the Lieutenant: "for who can feel a true attachment, who can enjoy or anticipate the happiness of love, without wishing every friend, every one whom he values, the like supreme felicity! You are not old, father; and how lovely is Hilaria! Even the transient thought of offering her your hand bespeaks a youthful heart, an unimpaired spirit. Let us take up this thought, this project, on the spot, and consider and investigate it thoroughly. My own happiness would be complete, if I knew you happy: I could then rejoice in good earnest, that the care you had bestowed on my destiny was repaid on your own by so fair and high a recompense. I can now with confidence and frankness, and true openness of heart, conduct you to my fair

one. You will approve of my feelings, since you yourself feel: you will not impede the happiness of your son, since you are advancing to your own happiness."

With these, and other importunate words, the Lieutenant repressed many a scruple which his father was for introducing; left him no time to calculate, but hurried off with him to the fair widow: whom they found in a commodious and splendid house, with a select rather than numerous party, all engaged in cheerful conversation. She was one of those female souls whom no man can escape. With incredible address she contrived to make our Major the hero of this evening. The rest of the party seemed to be her family; the Major alone was her guest. His circumstances she already knew very well; yet she had the skill to ask about them, as if she were wishing, now at last, to get right information on the subject from himself; and so, likewise, every individual of the company was made to show some interest in the stranger. One must have known his brother, a second his estates, a third something else concerned with him; so that the Major, in the midst of a lively conversation, still felt himself to be the centre. Moreover, he was sitting next the fair one; her eyes were on him, her smile was directed to him; in a word, he felt himself so comfortable, that he almost forgot the cause which had brought him. She herself scarcely ever mentioned his son, though the young man took a keen share in the conversation: it seemed as if in her eyes, he, like all the rest, was present only on his father's account.

The guests strolled up and down the rooms, and grouped themselves into accidental knots. The Lieutenant stept up to his fair one, and asked: "What say you to my father?"

With a smile she replied: "Methinks you might well take him as a pattern. Do but look how neatly he is dressed! If his manner and bearing are not better than his gentle son's!" And thus she continued to cry up and praise the father at the son's expense; awakening, by this means, a very mixed feeling of contentment and jealousy in the young man's heart.

Ere long the Lieutenant came in contact with his father, and recounted all this to him. It made the Major's manner to his fair hostess so much the more friendly; and she, on her side, began to treat him on a more lively and trustful footing. In short, we may say that, when the company broke up, the Major, as well as the rest, already belonged to her, and to her circle.

A heavy rain prevented the guests from returning home as they had come. Some coaches drove up, into which the walkers *arranged* themselves; only the Lieutenant, under the pretext that

the carriage was already too crowded, let his father drive away, and stayed behind.

The Major, on entering his apartment, felt actually confused and giddy in mind; uncertain of himself; as is the case with us, on passing rapidly from one state to the opposite. The land still seems in motion to a man who steps from shipboard; and the light still quivers in the eye of him who comes at once into darkness. So did the Major still feel himself encircled with the presence of that fair being. He wished still to see, to hear her, again to see, again to hear her; and after some consideration he forgave his son; nay he thought him happy that he might pretend to the appropriation of such loveliness.

From these feelings he was roused by the Lieutenant, who, with lively expressions of rapture, rushed into the room; embraced his father, and exclaimed: "I am the happiest man in the world!" After several more of such preliminary phrases, the two at last came to an explanation. The father remarked, that the fair lady in conversing with him had not mentioned the son, or hinted at him by a single syllable.—"That is just her soft, silent, half-concealing, half-discovering way; by which you become certain of your wishes, and yet can never altogether get rid of doubt. So was she wont to treat me hitherto; but your presence, father, has done wonders. I confess it, I stayed behind, that I might see her one moment longer. I found her walking to and fro in her still shining rooms: for I know it is her custom, when the company is gone, no light must be extinguished. She walks alone up and down in her magic halls, when the spirits are dismissed which she had summoned thither. She accepted the pretext, under cover of which I came back. She spoke with kind grace, though of indifferent matters. We walked to and fro through the open doors, along the whole suite of chambers. We had wandered several times to the end, into the little cabinet, which is lighted only by a dim lamp. If she was beautiful while moving under the blaze of the lustres, she was infinitely more so when illuminated by the soft gleam of the lamp. We had again reached the cabinet; and, in turning, we paused for an instant. I know not what it was that forced this audacity on me; I know not how I could venture, in the midst of the most ordinary conversation, all at once to seize her hand, to kiss that soft hand, and to press it to my heart. It was not drawn away. 'Heavenly creature!' cried I, 'conceal thyself no longer from me. If in this fair heart dwells favour for the happy man who stands before thee, disclose it, confess it! The present is the best, the highest time. Banish me, or take me to thy arms!'

"I know not what all I said, what I looked and expressed. She withdrew not, she resisted not, she answered not. I ventured to clasp her in my arms, to ask her if she would be mine. I kissed her with rapture; she pushed me away: 'Well, yes, then; yes!' or some such words, said she, in a faint tone, as if embarrassed. I retired, and cried, 'I will send my father; he shall speak for me.' 'Not a word to him of this!' replied she, following me some steps. 'Go away; forget what has happened.'"

What the Major thought, we shall not attempt to unfold. He said, however, to his son: "What is to be done now, thinkest thou? To my mind, the affair is, by accident, so well introduced, that we may now go to work a little more formally; that perhaps it were well if I called there tomorrow, and proposed in thy name."

"For Heaven's sake, no, father!" cried the son: "it would spoil the whole business. That look, that tone, must be disturbed and deranged by no formality. It is enough, father, that your presence accelerates this union, without your uttering a word on the subject. Yes, it is to you that I owe my happiness! The respect which my loved one entertains for you has conquered every scruple; and never would your son have found so good a moment, had not his father prepared it for him."

These and such disclosures occupied them till far in the night. They mutually settled their plans: the Major, simply for form's sake, was to make a parting call, and then set out to arrange his marriage with Hilaria; the son was to forward and accelerate his, as he should find it possible.

Hersilia's Postscript.

Here I break off, partly because I can write no more at present, but partly also to fix a thorn in your heart. Now, answer the question for yourself: How strangely from all that you have read, must matters stand with these ladies at present! Till now, they had no mutual relation to each other; they were strangers, though each seemed to have the prospect of a marriage which was to approximate them. And now we find them in company, but by themselves, without male attendance, and wandering over the world. What can have passed, what can be to follow? You, my worthy sir, will doubtless get quit of the difficulty, by mournfully exclaiming to yourself: "These, also, are Renunciants!" And here you are perfectly right: but Expectants too? This I durst not discover, even if I knew it.

To show you the way how this amiable pair may be met with on your wandering, I adopt a singular expedient. You herewith

receive a little clipping of a map: when you lay this in its place on the full map of the country, the magnetic needle painted here will point with its barb to the spot whither the Desirable are moving. This riddle is not so very hard to read: but I could wish that, from time to time, you would do the like for us, and send a little snip of chart over hither; we should then, in some measure, understand to what quarter our thoughts were to be directed; and how glad should we be, if the needle were at last attracted by ourselves. May all good be given you, and all errors forgiven!

It is said of women, that they cannot send away a letter without tacking postscripts to the end of it. Whatever inferences you may draw from the fact, I cannot deny that this is my second postscript, and the place, after all, where I am to tell you the flower of the whole matter. This arrow-shaft, on the little patch of map, Hilaria herself was at the pains to draw, and to decorate with such dainty plumage: the sharp point, however, was the fair Widow's work. Have a care that it do not scratch, or perhaps pierce you. Our bargain is, that whenever you meet, be this where it may, you are forthwith to present the small shred of paper, and so be the sooner and more heartily admitted into trust.

A WORD FROM THE EDITOR.

That a certain deficiency, perhaps discernible in the parts, certainly discernible here and there in the whole, cannot henceforth be avoided, we ourselves take courage to forewarn the reader, without fearing thereby to thwart his enjoyment. In the present task, undertaken truly with forethought and good heart, we still meet with all the inconveniences which have delayed the publication of these little volumes for twenty years. This period has altered nothing for the better. We still find ourselves in more than one way impeded; at this or that place, threatened with one obstruction or another. For we have to solve the uncertain problem of selecting from those most multifarious papers, what is worthiest and most important, so that it be grateful to thinking and cultivated minds, and refresh and forward them in many a province of life. Now here are the Journals, more or less complete, lying before us; sometimes communicable without scruple; sometimes, again, by reason of their unimportant, and likewise of their too important contents, seemingly unfit for insertion.

There are not even wanting sections devoted to the actual world; on statistic, technical and other practical external subjects. To cut these off as incongruous, we do not determine without re-

luctance; as life and inclination, knowledge and passion, strangely combining together, go on here in the straitest union.

Then we come on sketches written with clear views and for glorious objects; but not so consequent and deep-searching, that we can fully approve of them, or suppose that, in this new and so far advanced time, they could be readable and influential.

So likewise we fall in with little anecdotes, destitute of connexion, difficult to arrange under heads; some of them, when closely examined, not altogether unobjectionable. Here and there we discover more complete narratives, several of which, though already known to the world, nevertheless demand a place here, and at the same time require exposition and conclusion. Of poems, also, there is no want; and yet it is not always easy, not always possible, to decide where they should be introduced, with best regard to the preserving and assisting of their true tone, which is but too easily disturbed and overturned. If we are not, therefore, as we have too often done in bygone years, again to stop in the middle of this business, nothing will remain for us but to impart what we possess, to give out what has been preserved. Some Chapters, accordingly, the completion of which might have been desirable, we now offer in their first hurried form; that so the reader may not only feel the existence of a want here, but also be informed what this want is, and complete in his own mind whatever, partly from the nature of the object, partly from the intervening circumstances, cannot be presented to him perfectly completed in itself, or furnished with all its requisite accompaniments.

CHAPTER XIII.

The proposed riddle raised some scruples in Wilhelm's mind; yet ere long he began to feel a still attraction in the matter, an impulse of longing to reach that appointed line, and follow its direction; as, indeed, we are wont to seize with eagerness any specific object, that excites our imagination, our active faculties, and to wish that we might accomplish it and partake of it.

A child that, in asking alms of us, puts into our hand a card with five Lottery Numbers written on it, we do not lightly turn away unserved; and it depends on the moment, especially if it be shortly before the drawing, whether we shall not, with accidentally stimulated hope, quite against our usual custom, stake heavy shares upon these very numbers.

The wanderer now tried on a large Map the little fragment

which had been sent him; and stood surprised, amazed, affrighted, as he saw the needle pointing straight to Mignon's native place, to the houses where she had lived. What his peculiar feelings were, we do not find declared; but whoever can bring back to memory the end of the *Apprenticeship*, will in his own heart and mind, without difficulty, call forth the like.

The chief cause, however, why we meet with scantier records of this excursion than we could have wished, may probably be this: that Wilhelm chanced to fall in with a young lively companion of his journey, by means of whom it became easy to retain for himself and his friends a vivid and strong remembrance of this pious pilgrimage, without any aid of writing. Unexpectedly he finds himself beside a Painter; one of that class of persons whom we often see wandering about the world, and still oftener figuring in Romances and Dramas; but in this case, an individual who showed himself at once to be really a distinguished artist. The two very soon got acquainted; mutually communicated their desires, projects, purposes. And now it appears that this skilful artist, who delights in painting aquatical landscapes, and can decorate his pieces with rich, well-imagined, well-executed additions and accompaniments, has been passionately attracted by Mignon's form, destiny and being. He has often painted her already, and is now going forth to copy from nature the scenes where she passed her early years; amid these to represent the dear child, in happy and unhappy circumstances and moments, and thus to make her image, which lives in all tender hearts, present also to the sense of the eye.

The friends soon reach the Lago Maggiore; Wilhelm endeavours, by degrees, to find out the places indicated. Rural palaces, spacious monasteries, ferries and bays, capes and landings, are visited; nor are the dwellings of courageous and kind-hearted fishermen forgotten; or the cheerfully-built villages along the shore, or the gay mansions on the neighbouring heights. All this the Artist can seize; to all of it communicate, by light and colouring, the feeling suitable for each scene; so that Wilhelm passes his days and his hours in heart-searching emotion.

In several of the leaves stood Mignon represented on the foreground, as she had looked and lived; Wilhelm striving, by correct description, to assist the happy imagination of his friend, and reduce these general conceptions within the stricter limits of individuality.

And thus you might see the Boy-girl, set forth in various attitudes and manifold expression. Beneath the lofty portal of the

splendid Country-house, she is standing, thoughtfully contemplating the Marble Statues in the Hall. Here she rocks herself, plashing to and fro among the waters, in the fastened boat; there she climbs the mast, and shows herself as a fearless sailor.

But, distinguished beyond all the other pictures, was one which the Artist, on his journey hither, and prior to his meeting with Wilhelm, had combined and painted with all its characteristic features. In the heart of the rude Mountains shines the graceful seeming-boy, encircled with toppling cliffs, besprayed with cataracts, in the middle of a motley horde. Never, perhaps, was a grim, precipitous, primeval mountain-pass more beautifully or expressively relieved with living figures. The party-coloured, gipsy-looking group, at once rude and fantastic, strange and common, too loose to cause fear, too singular to awaken confidence. Stout beasts of burden are bearing along, now over paths made of trees, now down by steps hewn in the rock, a tawdry chaotic heap of luggage, round which all the instruments of a deafening music hang dangling to and fro, to affright the ear from time to time with rude tones. Amid all this, the lovely child, self-collected without defiance, indignant without resistance, led but not dragged. Who would not have looked with pleasure at this singular and impressive picture? Given in strong characters, frowned the stern obstruction of these rock masses, riven asunder by gloomy chasms, towered up together, threatening to hinder all outgate, had not a bold bridge betokened the possibility of again coming into union with the rest of the world. Nor had the Artist, with his quick feeling of fictitious truth, forgot to indicate the entrance of a Cave, which you might equally regard as the natural laboratory of huge crystals, or as the abode of a fabulously frightful brood of Dragons.

Not without a holy fear did our friends visit the Marchese's palace. The old man was still absent on his travels; but in this circle also, the two wanderers, knowing well how to apply and conduct themselves both towards spiritual and temporal authorities, were kindly received and entertained.

The absence of the owner also was to Wilhelm very pleasant; for although he could have wished to see the worthy gentleman, and would have heartily saluted him, he felt afraid of the Marchese's thankful generosity, and of any forced recompense of that true loving conduct, for which he had already obtained the fairest reward.

And thus our friends went floating in gay boats from shore to shore, cruising the Lake in every direction. It was the fairest season of the year; and they missed neither sunrise nor sunset, nor any of the thousand shadings which the heavenly light first

bounteously dispenses over its own firmament, and from thence over lake and land; not appearing itself in its perfect glory, till imaged back from the waters.

A luxuriant vegetable world, planted by Nature, watched over and forwarded by Art, on every side surrounded them. The first chestnut forests they had already greeted with welcome; and now they could not restrain a mournful smile, as, lying under the shade of cypresses, they saw the laurel mounting up; the pomegranates reddening; orange and citron trees unfolding themselves in blossoms, and fruit at the same time glowing forth from the leafy gloom.

Through means of his vivid associate, Wilhelm had another enjoyment prepared for him. Our old friend had not been favoured by Nature with the eye of a painter. Susceptible of visual beauty only in the human form, he now felt that, by the presence of a companion, alike disposed, but trained to quite different enjoyments and activities, the surrounding world also was opened to his sight.

By viewing, under conversational direction, the changing glories of the region, and still more by concentrated imitation, his eyes were opened, and his mind freed from all its once obstinate doubts. Hitherto all copies of Italian scenery had seemed to him suspicious; the sky, he thought, was too blue; the violet tone of those charming distances was lovely but untrue, and the abundant fresh green too bright and gay: but now he united in his inmost perceptions with his new friend; and learned, susceptible as he was, to look at the Earth with that friend's eyes; and while Nature unfolded the open secret of her beauty, he could not but feel an irresistible attraction towards Art, as towards her most fit expositor.

But his pictorial friend quite unexpectedly anticipated his wishes in another point. The Artist had already many times started some gay song; and thus, in hours of rest, delightfully enlivened and accompanied their movement, when out in long voyages over the water. But now it happened, that in one of the palaces they were visiting, he found a curious peculiar stringed instrument; a lute of small size, strong, well-toned, convenient and portable: he soon contrived to tune it; and then handled the strings so pleasantly, and so well entertained those about him, that, like a new Orpheus, he subdued by soft harmonies the usually rigorous and dry castellain, and kindly constrained him to lend the instrument for a time; under the condition that before departing, the singer should faithfully return it; and in the interim, should come back some Sunday or holyday, and again gratify them by his music.

Quite another spirit now enlivened lake and shore; boat and skiff strove which should be nearest our friends; even freight and market barges lingered in their neighbourhood; rows of people on the beach followed their course; when landing they were encircled by a gay-minded throng; when departing, each blessed them, with a heart contented, yet full of longing.

And now, at last, to any third party who had watched our friends, it must have been apparent enough that their mission was, in fact, accomplished: all scenes and localities referring to Mignon had been not only sketched, but partly brought into light, shade and colour; partly, in warm, midday hours, finished with the utmost fidelity. In effecting this, they had shifted from place to place in a peculiar way, as Wilhelm's vow frequently impeded them: this, however, they had now and then contrived to evade, by explaining it as valid only on land, and on water not applicable.

Indeed Wilhelm himself now felt that their special purpose was attained; yet he could not deny that the wish to see Hilaria and the fair Widow must also be satisfied, if he wished to leave this country with a free mind. His friend, to whom he had imparted their story, was no less curious; and already prided himself in the thought that in one of his paintings there was a vacant space, which, as an artist, he might decorate with the forms of these gentle persons.

Accordingly, they now cruised to and fro, watching the points where strangers are wont first to enter this paradise. Their hope of meeting friends here had already been made known to the boatmen; and the search had not lasted long, when there came in sight a splendid barge; which they instantly made chase of, and forbore not passionately to grapple with, on reaching it. The dames, in some degree alarmed at this movement, soon recovered their composure as Wilhelm produced his little piece of chart, and the two, without hesitation, recognised the arrow which themselves had drawn on it. The friends were then kindly invited to come on board the ladies' barge; which they did without an instant's delay.

And now let us figure to ourselves these four; as they sit together in the daintiest apartment, the most blissful world lying round them; looking in each other's faces; fanned by soft airs; rocked on glittering waves. Imagine the female pair, as we lately saw them described; the male, as they have together for weeks been leading a wayfaring life; and after a little reflection, we behold them all in the most delightful, but also the most dangerous situation.

For the three who have before, willingly or unwillingly, ranked

themselves in the number of Renunciants, we have not the worst to fear: the fourth, however, may probably enough too soon see himself admitted into that order, like the others.

After crossing the Lake several times, and pointing out the most interesting spots both on the shore and the islands, our two wanderers conducted their fair friends to the place they were to pass the night in; where a dextrous guide, selected for this voyage, had taken care to provide all possible conveniences. Wilhelm's vow was now a harsh but suitable master of the ceremonies: for he and his companion had already passed three days in this very station, and exhausted all that was remarkable in the environs. The Artist, not restrained by any vow, begged permission to attend the dames on shore; this, however, they declined; and so the party separated at some distance from the harbour.

Scarcely had the singer stept into his skiff, which hastily drew back from the beach, when he seized his lute; and gracefully began raising that strangely plaintive song, which the Venetian gondoliers send forth in clear melody from land to sea and from sea to land. Expert enough in this feat, which, in the present instance, proceeded with peculiar tenderness and expression, he strengthened his voice in proportion to the increasing distance, so that on the shore you would have thought you heard him still singing in the same place. He at last laid his lute aside, trusting to his voice alone; and had the satisfaction to observe that the dames, instead of retiring into their house, were pleased to linger on the shore. He felt so inspired that he could not cease; not even when night and remoteness had withdrawn everything from view; till at last his calmer friend reminded him that, if darkness did favour his tones, the skiff had already long passed the limits within which these could take effect.

According to promise, the two parties again met next day on the open Lake. Flying along, they formed acquaintance with the lovely series of prospects, now standing forth in separate distinction, then gathering into rows, and seen behind each other, and at last fading away, as the higher eclipsed the lower; all which, repeating itself in the waters, affords in such excursions the most varied entertainment. Nor, in the course of these sights, did the copies of them, from our Artist's portfolio, fail to awaken thoughts and anticipations of what, in the present hour, was not imparted. For all such matters the still Hilaria seemed to have a free and fair feeling.

But towards noon, singularity again came into play: the ladies landed alone; the men cruised before the harbour. And now the

singer endeavoured to accommodate his music to a shorter distance, where not only the general, soft and quickly warbling tone of desire, but likewise a certain gay, graceful importunity, might be expected to tell. And here, now and then, some one or other of the songs, for which we stand indebted to our friends in the *Apprenticeship*, would come hovering over his strings, over his lips; but out of well-meant regard to the feelings of his hearers, as well as to his own, he restrained himself in this particular; and roved at large in foreign images and emotions, whereby his performance gained in effect, and reached the ear with so much the more insinuating blandishment. The two friends, blockading the harbour in this way, would not have recollected the trivial concern of eating and drinking, had not the more provident fair ones sent them over a supply of dainty bits; to which an accompanying draught of wine had the best possible relish.

Every separation, every stipulation that comes in the way of our gathering passions, sharpens instead of stifling them; and in this case, as in others, it may be presumed that the short absence had awakened equal longing in both parties. At all events, the dames, in their gay dazzling gondola, were very soon to be seen coming back.

This word gondola, however, let us not take up in the melancholy Venetian meaning: here it signifies a cheerful, commodious, social bark; which, had our little company been twice as large, would still have been spacious enough for them.

Some days were spent in this peculiar way, between meeting and parting, between separation and social union; but amid the enjoyment of the most delightful intercourse, departure and bereavement still hovered before the agitated soul. In presence of the new friends, the old came back into the mind; were these new ones absent, each could not but admit that already they had taken deep root in his remembrance. None but a composed and tried spirit, like our fair Widow, could in such moments have maintained herself in complete equilibrium.

Hilaria's heart had been too deeply wounded to admit of any new entire impression: but as the grace of a fair scene encircles us of itself with soothing influences; so when the mildness of tender-hearted friends conspires with it, there comes over sense and soul a peculiar mood of softness, that recalls to us, as in dreaming visions, the past and the absent, and withdraws the present, as if it were but a show, into spiritual remoteness. Thus, alternately rocked this way and that, attracted and repelled, approximated and removed, they wavered and wended for several days.

Without more narrowly investigating these circumstances, the shrewd, experienced guide imagined he observed some alteration in the calm demeanour of his heroines; and when, at last, the whimsical part of their predicament became known to him, he contrived here also to devise the most grateful expedient. For as our two shipmen were again conducting the ladies to their usual place of dinner, they were met by another gay bark; which, falling alongside of theirs, exhibited a well-covered table, with all the cheerful invitations of a festive repast: the friends could now wait in company the lapse of several hours; and only night decided the customary separation.

Happily the Artist and Wilhelm had in their former voyagings neglected, out of a certain natural caprice, to visit the most highly ornamented of all the islands, and had even yet never thought of showing to their fair friends the many artificial and somewhat dilapidated curiosities of the place, before these glorious scenes of creation were entirely gone through. At last, however, new light rose on their minds. They took counsel with the guide: he contrived forthwith to expedite their voyage, and all looked on it as the most blissful they had yet undertaken. They could now hope and expect, after so many interrupted joys, to spend three whole heavenly days, assembled together in a sequestered abode.

And here we cannot but bestow on this guide our high commendation; he belonged to that nimble, active, dextrous class, who, in attendance on successive parties, often travel the same roads; perfectly acquainted with the conveniences and inconveniences on all of them, they understand how to use the one and evade the other; and, without leaving their own profit out of sight, still to conduct their patrons more cheaply and pleasantly through the country, than without such aid would have been possible.

At this time, also, a sufficient female train belonging to our dames, for the first time stept forth in decided activity; and the fair Widow could now make it one of her conditions that the friends were to remain with her as guests, and content themselves with what she called her moderate entertainment. In this point too all prospered: for the cunning functionary had, on this occasion as on others, contrived to make so good a use of the letters and introductions which his heroines had brought with them, that, the owner of the place they were now about to visit being absent, both castle and garden, kitchen included, were thrown open for the service of the strangers; nay some prospect was held out even of the cellar. All things coöperated so harmoniously, that our wanderers, from the very first moment, felt themselves as if at home, as if born lords of this paradise.

The whole luggage of the party was now carried to the island, an arrangement producing much convenience to all; though the chief advantage aimed at was, that the portfolios of our Artist, now, for the first time, all collected together, might afford him means to exhibit, in continuous sequence, to his fair hostesses the route he had followed. This task was undertaken by all parties with delight. Not that they proceeded in the common style of amateur and artist, mutually eulogising: here was a gifted man, rewarded by the most sincere and judicious praise. But that we fall not into the suspicion of attempting, with general phrases, to palm on credulous readers what we could not openly show them, let us here insert the judgment of a critic, who some years afterwards viewed with studious admiration both the pieces here in question, and the others of a like or similar sort, by the same hand:

"He succeeds in representing the cheerful repose of lake prospects, where houses in friendly approximation, imaging themselves in the clear wave, seem as if bathing in its depths; shores encircled with green hills, behind which rise forest mountains, and icy peaks of glaciers. The tone of colouring in such scenes is gay, mirthfully clear; the distances, as if overflowed with softening vapour, which from watered hollows and river valleys mounts up grayer and mistier, and indicates their windings. No less is the Master's art to be praised in views from valleys lying nearer the high Alpine ranges; where declivities slope down, luxuriantly overgrown, and fresh streams roll hastily along by the foot of rocks.

"With exquisite skill, in the deep shady trees of the foreground, he gives the distinctive character of the several species; satisfying us in the form of the whole, as in the structure of the branches, and the details of the leaves: no less so, in the fresh green with its manifold shadings, where soft airs appear as if fanning us with benignant breath, and the lights as if thereby put in motion.

"In the middle-ground, his lively green tone grows fainter by degrees; and at last, on the more distant mountain-tops, passing into weak violet, weds itself with the blue of the sky. But our Artist is above all happy in his paintings of high Alpine regions; in seizing the simple greatness and stillness of their character; the wide pastures on the slopes, clothed with the freshest green, where dark solitary firs stand forth from the grassy carpet; and from high cliffs foaming brooks rush down. Whether he relieve his pasturages with grazing cattle, or the narrow winding rocky path with mules and laden pack-horses, he paints all with equal

truth and richness; still introduced in the proper place, and not in too great copiousness, they decorate and enliven these scenes, without interrupting, without lessening their peaceful solitude. The execution testifies a master's hand; easy, with a few sure strokes, and yet complete. In his later pieces, he employed glittering English permanent-colours on paper: these pictures, accordingly, are of preëminently blooming tone; cheerful, yet, at the same time, strong and sated.

"His views of deep mountain chasms, where round and round nothing fronts us but dead rock; where, in the abyss, overspanned by its bold arch, the wild stream rages, are indeed of less attraction than the former: yet their truth excites us; we admire the great effect of the whole, produced at so little cost, by a few expressive strokes, and masses of local colours.

"With no less accuracy of character can he represent the regions of the topmost Alpine ranges, where neither tree nor shrub any more appears; but only, amid the rocky teeth and snow summits, a few sunny spots clothe themselves with a soft sward. Beautiful, and balmy, and inviting as he colours these spots, he has here wisely forborne to introduce grazing herds; for these regions give food only to the chamois, and a perilous employment to the Wild-hay-men."

"We shall not deviate from our purpose of bringing the condition of these waste scenes as close as possible to the conception of our readers, if to this word, Wild-hay-man, or *Wildheuer*, we subjoin a short explanation. It is a name given to the poorer inhabitants of the upland Alpine ranges, who occupy themselves in making hay from such grassy spots as are inaccessible to cattle. For this purpose, they climb, with cramps on their feet, the steepest and most dangerous cliffs; or from high crags let themselves down by ropes, when this is necessary: and so reach these grassy patches. The grass once cut and dried to hay, they throw it down from the heights into the deeper valleys; where being collected together, it is sold to cattle-owners, with whom, on account of its superior quality, it finds a ready market."

These paintings, which must have gratified and attracted any eye, were viewed by Hilaria, in particular, with great attention; and from her observations it became clear, that in this department, she herself was no stranger. To the Artist, least of all, did this continue secret; nor could approval from any one have

been more precious to him, than from this most graceful of all persons. Her companion, therefore, kept silence no longer, but blamed Hilaria for not coming forward with her own accomplishment, but lingering in this case as she always did; now where the question was not, of being praised or blamed, but of being instructed. A fairer opportunity, she said, might not easily occur.

And now it came to light, when she was thus forced to exhibit her portfolios, what a talent was lying hid behind this still and most lovely nature: the capacity had been derived from birth, and diligently cultivated by practice. She possessed a true eye; a delicate hand, such as women, accustomed to use it in their dressing and decorating operations, find available in higher art. You might, doubtless, observe unsureness in the strokes; and, in consequence, a too undecided character in the objects: but you could not help admiring the most faithful execution; though the whole was not seized in its happiest effect, not grouped and adjusted with the skill of an artist. She is afraid, you would say, of profaning her object, if she keep not completely true to it; hence she becomes precise and stiff, and loses herself in details.

But now, by the great free talent, by the bold hand of the Artist, she feels rising, awakening within her, whatever genuine feeling and taste had till now slumbered in her mind; she perceives that she has but to take heart, and earnestly and punctually to follow some fundamental maxims, which the Artist, with penetrating judgment and friendly importunity, is repeating and impressing on her. That sureness of stroke comes of its own accord; she by degrees dwells less on the parts than on the whole: and thus the fairest capability rises on a sudden to fulfilment; as a rose-bud, which in the evening we passed by unobservant, breaks forth in the morning at sunrise before our face: and the living quivering movement of this lordly blossom, struggling out to the light, seems almost visible before our eyes.

Nor did this intellectual culture remain without moral effects: for on a pure spirit it produces a magic impression to be conscious of that heartfelt thankfulness, natural towards any one to whom it stands indebted for decisive instruction. In this case it was the first glad emotion which had risen in Hilaria's soul for many a week. To see this lordly world lying round her day after day; and now at once to feel the instantly acquired, more perfect gift of representing it! What delight, in figures and tints, to be approaching nearer the Unspeakable! She felt herself surprised as with a new youth; and could not refuse a peculiar kindliness to the man who had procured for her such happiness.

Thus did the two sit together; you could scarcely have deter-

mined whether he was readier in communicating secret advantages in art, or she in seizing them and turning them to practice. The happiest rivalry, such as too seldom rises between scholar and master, here took place. Many a time you might observe the friend preparing with some decisive stroke to influence her drawing; which she, on the other hand, would gently decline, hastening to do the wished, the necessary, of her own accord, and always to her master's astonishment.

The fair Widow, in the mean while, walked along the terraces with Wilhelm, under cypresses and pines, now under vine, now under orange groves; and at last could not but fulfil the faintly indicated wish of her new friend, and disclose to him the strange entanglement by which the two fair pilgrims, cut off from their former ties, and straitly united to one another, had been sent forth to wander over the world.

Wilhelm, who wanted not the gift of accurately noting what he saw, took down her narrative some time afterwards in writing: this, as he compiled it and transmitted it by Hersilia to Natalia, we purpose by and by communicating to our readers.

The last evening was now come; and a rising, most clear, full moon concealed the transition from day to night. The party had assembled and seated themselves on one of the highest terraces, to see distinct and unimpeded, and glittering in the sheen of east and west, the peaceful Lake, hidden partly in its length, but visible over all its breadth.

Whatever in such circumstances might be talked of, it was natural once more to repeat the hundred times repeated; to mention the beauties of this sky, of this water, of this land, under the influences of a strong sun and milder moon, nay exclusively and lyrically to recognise and describe them.

But what none of them uttered, what each durst scarcely avow to himself, was the deep mournful feeling which, stronger or weaker, but with equal truth and tenderness, was beating in every bosom. The presentiment of parting diffused itself over present union; a gradual stagnation was becoming almost painful.

Then at last the Singer roused himself, summoned up his resolution; with strong tones, preluding on his instrument; heedless of the former well-meant reserve. Mignon's figure, with the first soft song of the gentle child, were hovering before him. Passionately hurried over the limits; with longing touch awakening the sweetly sounding strings, he began to raise:

Know'st thou the land where citron-apples bloom,
And oranges like gold — — — — —

Hersilia rose in deepest agitation, and hurried away veiling her face; our fair Widow, with a motion of refusal, waved her hand towards the Singer, while she caught Wilhelm's arm with the other. The perplexed and half-unconscious youth followed Hilaria; Wilhelm, by his more considerate guide, was led after them. And now when they stood all four under the high moonshine, the general emotion was no longer to be concealed. The women threw themselves into each other's arms; the men embraced each other; and Luna was witness of the noblest, chastest tears. Some recollection slowly returned; they forced themselves asunder, silent, under strange feelings and wishes, from which hope was already cut off. And now our Artist, whom his friend dragged with him, felt himself here under the void heaven, in the solemn lovely hour of night, initiated in the first stage of Renunciation, which those friends had already passed through, though they now saw themselves again in danger of being sharply tried.

Not till late had the young men gone to rest; awakening in the early morning, they took heart; thought themselves now strong enough for a farewell to this paradise; devised many plans for still, without violation of duty, at least lingering in the pleasant neighbourhood.

While purposing to introduce their projects to this effect, they were cut short by intelligence that, with the earliest break of day, the ladies had departed. A letter from the hand of our Queen of Hearts gave them more precise information. You might have doubted whether sense rather than goodness, love rather than friendship, acknowledgment of merit rather than soft bashful favour, was expressed in it. But alas, in the conclusion stood the hard request, that our two wanderers were neither to follow their heroines, nor anywhere to seek them; nay if they chanced to see each other, they were faithfully to avoid meeting.

And now the paradise, as if by the touch of an enchanter's rod, was changed for our friends into an utter desert: and certainly they would have smiled at themselves, had they perceived at this moment how unjust and unthankful they were on a sudden become to so fair and remarkable a scene. No self-seeking hypochondriac could so sharply and spitefully have rated and censured the decay of the buildings, the neglected condition of the walls, the weathered aspect of the towers, the grassy obstruction of the walks, the perishing of the trees, the mossiness and mouldering of the artificial grottoes, and whatever else of that sort was to be observed, as our two travellers now did. By degrees, however, they settled themselves as circumstances would admit: the Artist carefully packed up his work: they both set sail; Wilhelm accom-

panying him to the upper quarter of the Lake, where, by previous agreement, the former set forth on his way to Natalia, to introduce her by his fair landscape papers, into scenes which perhaps she might not soon have an opportunity of viewing with her eyes. He was at the same time commissioned to inform her confessionally of the late incident, which had reduced him to a state such that he might be received with hearty kindness by the Confederates in the vow of Renunciation, and with soft friendly treatment, in the midst of them, be comforted, if he could not be healed.

CHAPTER XIV.

In this division of our work, the exculpatory Word from the Editor might have been more requisite than even in the foregoing Chapter: for there, though we had not the paintings of the master and his fair scholar, on which all depended, to exhibit before our readers; and could neither make the perfection of the finished artist, nor the commencing stintedness nor rapid development of the art-loving beauty visible to their eyes: yet still the description might not be altogether inefficient, and many genial and thought-exalting matters remained to be imparted. But here, where the business in hand is a great object, which one could have wished to see treated in the most precise manner, there is, unhappily, too little noted down; and we cannot hope that a complete view will be attained from our communications.

Again, it is to be observed, that in the Novel, as in Universal History, we have to struggle with uncertain computations of time; and cannot always decisively fix what has happened sooner, and what later. We shall hold, therefore, by the surest points.

That a year must have passed since Wilhelm left the Pedagogic Province, is rendered certain, by the circumstance, that we now meet him at the Festival to which he had been invited: but as our wandering Renunciants sometimes unexpectedly dive down and vanish from our sight, and then again emerge into view at a place where they were not looked for, it cannot be determined with certainty what track they have followed in the interim.

Now, however, the Traveller advances from the side of the plain country into the Pedagogic Province: he comes over fields and pasturages; skirts, on the dry lea, many a little freshet; sees bushy rather than woody hills; a free prospect on all sides, over a

surface but little undulated. On such tracks, he did not long doubt that he was in the horse-producing region; and accordingly he failed not here and there to observe greater or smaller herds of mares and foals. But all at once the horizon darkens with a fierce cloud of dust, which rapidly swelling nearer and nearer, covers all the breadth of the space; yet at last, rent asunder by a sharp side wind, is forced to disclose its interior tumult.

At full gallop rushes forward a vast multitude of these noble animals, guided and held together by mounted keepers. The monstrous hurlyburly whirls past the wanderer; a fair boy among the keepers looks at him with surprise; pulls in, leaps down, and embraces his father.

Now commences a questioning and answering: the boy relates that an agricultural life had not agreed with him; the harvest-home he had indeed found delightful, but the subsequent arrangements, the ploughing and digging, by no means so. This the Superiors remark, and observe at the same time that he likes to employ himself with animals; they direct him to the useful and necessary domestic breeds; try him as a sequestered herdsman and keeper, and at last promote him to the more lively equestrian occupation; where accordingly he now, himself a young foal, has to watch over foals, and to forward their good nourishment and training, under the oversight of skilful comrades.

Father and son, following the herd, by various lone-lying spacious farmyards, reached the town or hamlet, near which the great annual Market was held. Here rages an incredible confusion, in which it is hard to determine whether merchants or wares raise more dust. From all countries, purchasers assemble here to procure animals of noble blood and careful training; all the languages of the Earth, you would fancy, meet your ear. Amid all this hubbub, too, rises the lively sound of powerful wind-instruments: everything bespeaks motion, vigour and life.

The Wanderer meets his overseer of last year, who presents him to the others: he is even introduced to one of the Three; and by him, though only in passing, paternally and expressively saluted.

Wilhelm, here again observing an example of exclusive culture and life-leading, expresses a desire to know in what else the pupils are practised, by way of counterpoise; that so in this wild, and, to a certain degree, savage occupation of feeding animals, the youth may not himself roughen into an animal. And, in answer, he is gratified to learn, that precisely with this violent and rugged-looking occupation, the softest in the world is united; the learning and practising of languages.

"To this," it was said, "we have been induced by the circum-

stance, that there are youths from all quarters of the world assembled here: now to prevent them from uniting, as usually happens when abroad, into national knots, and forming exclusive parties, we endeavour by a free communication of speech to approximate them.

"Indeed, a general acquaintance with languages is here in some degree rendered necessary; since, in our yearly market festivals, every foreigner wishes to converse in his own tones and idiom; and, in the course of cheapening and purchasing, to proceed with all possible convenience. That no Babylonish confusion of tongues, however, no corruption of speech, may arise from this practice, we employ a different language month by month, throughout the year: according to the maxim, that in learning anything, its first principles alone should be taught by constraint.

"We look upon our scholars," said the Overseer, "as so many swimmers, who, in the element which threatened to swallow them, feel with astonishment that they are lighter, that it bears and carries them forward: and so it is with everything that man undertakes.

"However, if any one of our young men show a special inclination for this or the other language, we neglect not, in the midst of this tumultuous-looking life, which nevertheless offers very many quiet, idly solitary, nay tedious hours, to provide for his true and substantial instruction. Our riding grammarians, among whom there are even some pedagogues, you would be surprised to discover among these bearded and beardless Centaurs. Your Felix has turned himself to Italian; and in the monotonous solitude of his herdsman life, you shall hear him send forth many a dainty song with proper feeling and taste. Practical activity and expertness are far more compatible with sufficient intellectual culture, than is generally supposed."

Each of these districts was celebrating its peculiar festival; so the guest was now conducted to the Instrumental Music department. This tract, skirted by the level country, began from its very border to exhibit kind and beautifully changing valleys, little trim woods; soft brooks, by the side of which, among the sward, here and there, a mossy crag modestly stood forth. Scattered, bush-encircled dwellings you might see on the hillsides; in soft hollows, the houses clustered nearer together. Those gracefully separated cottages lay so far apart, that neither tones nor mistones could be heard from one to the other.

They now approached a wide space, begirt with buildings and shady trees, where crowded, man on man, all seemed on the stretch of expectation and attention. Just as the stranger entered,

there was sent forth from all the instruments a grand symphony, the full rich power and tenderness of which he could not but admire. Opposite the spacious main orchestra was a smaller one, which failed not to attract his notice: here stood various younger and elder scholars; each held his instrument in readiness without playing; these were they who as yet could not, or durst not, join in with the whole. It was interesting to observe how they stood as it were on the start; and our friend was informed that such a festival seldom passed over, without some one or other of them suddenly developing his talent.

As among the instrumental music, singing was now introduced, no doubt could remain that this also was favoured. To the question, What other sort of culture was here blended in kind union with the chief employment, our wanderer learned in reply, that it was Poetry, and of the lyrical kind. In this matter, it appeared, their main concern was, that both arts should be developed each for itself and from itself, but then also in contrast and combination with each other. The scholars were first instructed in each according to its own limitations; then taught how the two reciprocally limit, and again reciprocally free each other.

To poetical rhythm, the musical artist opposes measure of tone and movement of tone. But here the mastery of Music over Poesy soon shows itself; for if the latter, as is fit and necessary, keep her quantities never so steadily in view, still for the musician few syllables are decidedly short or long; at his pleasure he can overset the most conscientious procedure of the rhythmer, nay change prose itself into song; from which, in truth, the richest possibilities present themselves; and the poet would soon feel himself annihilated, if he could not, on his own side, by lyrical tenderness and boldness, inspire the musician with reverence; and, now in the softest sequence, now by the most abrupt transitions, awaken new feelings in the mind.

The singers to be met with here are mostly poets themselves. Dancing also is taught in its fundamental principles; that so all these accomplishments may regularly spread themselves into every district.

The guest, on being led across the next boundary, at once perceived an altogether different mode of building. The houses were no longer scattered into separation, no longer in the shape of cottages: they stood regularly united, beautiful in their exterior, spacious, convenient and elegant within; you here saw an unconfined, well-built, stately town, corresponding to the scene it stood in. Here the Plastic Arts, and the trades akin to them, have their home; and a peculiar silence reigns over these spaces.

The plastic artist, it is true, must still figure himself as standing in relation to all that lives and moves among men; but his occupation is solitary; and yet, by the strangest contradiction, there is perhaps no other that so decidedly requires a living accompaniment and society. Now here, in that circle, is each in silence forming shapes that are forever to engage the eyes of men; a holyday stillness reigns over the whole scene; and did you not here and there catch the picking of stone-hewers, and the measured stroke of carpenters, who are now busily employed in finishing a lordly edifice, the air were unmoved by any sound.

Our wanderer was struck, moreover, by the earnestness, the singular rigour with which beginners, as well as more advanced pupils, were treated; it seemed as if no one by his own power and judgment accomplished anything, but as if a secret spirit, striving towards one single great aim, pervaded and vivified them all. Nowhere did you observe a scheme or sketch; every stroke was drawn with forethought. As the wanderer inquired of his guide the reason of this peculiar procedure, he was told: That Imagination was in itself a vague, unstable power, which the whole merit of the plastic artist consisted in more and more determining, fixing, nay at last exalting to visible presence.

The necessity for sure principles in other arts was mentioned. "Would the musician," it was said, "permit his scholar to dash wildly over the strings, nay to invent bars and intervals for himself at his own good pleasure? Here it is palpable that nothing can be left to the caprice of the learner: the element he is to work in is irrevocably given; the implement he is to wield is put into his hands; nay the very way and manner of his using it, I mean the changing of the fingers, he finds prescribed to him; so ordered, that the one part of his hand shall give place to the other, and each prepare the proper path for its follower: by such determinate coöperation only can the impossible at last become possible.

"But what chiefly vindicates the practice of strict requisitions, of decided laws, is that genius, that native talent, is precisely the readiest to seize them, and yield them willing obedience. It is only the half-gifted that would wish to put his own contracted singularity in the place of the unconditional whole, and justify his false attempts under cover of an unconstrainable originality and independence. To this we grant no currency: we guard our scholars from all such misconceptions, whereby a large portion of life, nay often the whole of life, is apt to be perplexed and disjointed.

"With genius we love most to be concerned: for this is ani-

mated just by that good spirit of quickly recognising what is profitable for it. Genius understands that Art is called Art because it is *not* Nature. Genius bends itself to respect even towards what may be named conventional: for what is this but agreeing, as the most distinguished men have agreed, to regard the unalterable, the indispensable as the best? And does not such submission always turn to good account?

"Here too, as in all our departments, to the great assistance of the teachers, our three Reverences and their signs, with some changes suitable to the nature of the main employment, have been introduced and inculcated."

The wanderer, in his farther survey, was surprised to observe that the Town seemed still extending; street unfolding itself from street, and so offering the most varied prospects. The exterior of the edifices corresponded to their destination; they were dignified and stately, not so much magnificent as beautiful. To the nobler and more earnest buildings in the centre of the Town, the more cheerful were harmoniously appended; till farther out, gay decorated suburbs, in graceful style, stretched forth into the country, and at last separated into garden-houses.

The stranger could not fail to remark, that the dwellings of the musicians in the preceding district were by no means to be compared, in beauty or size, with the present, which painters, statuaries and architects inhabited. He was told that this arose from the nature of the thing. The musician, ever shrouded in himself, must cultivate his inmost being, that so he may turn it outwards. The sense of the eye he may not flatter. The eye easily corrupts the judgment of the ear, and allures the spirit from the inward to the outward. Inversely, again, the plastic artist has to live in the external world; and to manifest his inward being, as it were, unconsciously, in and upon what is outward. Plastic artists should dwell like kings and gods: how else are they to build and decorate for kings and gods? They must at last so raise themselves above the common, that the whole mass of a people may feel itself ennobled in and by their works.

Our friend then begged an explanation of another paradox: Why at this time, so festive, so enlivening, so tumultuously excited, in the other regions, the greatest stillness prevailed here, and all labours were continued?

"A plastic artist," it was answered, "needs no festival. When he has accomplished something excellent, it stands, as it has long done before his own eye, now at last before the eye of the world: in his task he needed no repetition, no new effort, no fresh success; whereas the musician constantly afflicts himself with all

this; and to him, therefore, the most splendid festival, in the most numerous assemblage, should not be refused."

"Yet, at such a season," replied Wilhelm, "something like an exhibition might be desirable; in which it would be pleasant to inspect and judge the triennial progress of your best pupils."

"In other places," it was answered, "an exhibition may be necessary; with us it is not. Our whole being and nature is exhibition. Look round you at these buildings of every sort: all erected by our pupils; and this not without plans a hundred times talked of and meditated; for the builder must not grope and experiment; what is to continue standing, must stand rightly, and satisfy, if not forever, yet at least for a long space of time. If we cannot help *committing* errors, we must *build* none.

"With statuaries we proceed more laxly, most so of all with painters; to both we give liberty to try this and that, each in his own way. It stands in their power to select in the interior or exterior compartments of edifices in public places, some space which they may incline to decorate. They give forth their ideas, and if these are in some degree to be approved of, the completion of them is permitted, and this in two ways: either with liberty, sooner or later, to remove the work, should it come to displease the artist; or, with the condition that what is once set up shall remain unalterable in its place. Most part choose the first of these offers, retaining in their own hands this power of removal; and in the performance, they constantly avail themselves of the best advice. The second case occurs seldomer; and we then observe that the artist trusts less to himself, holds long conferences with companions and critics, and by this means produces works really estimable, and deserving to endure."

After all this, our Traveller neglected not to ask: What other species of instruction was combined with the main one here? and received for answer, that it was Poetry, and of the Epic sort.

This to our friend must have seemed a little singular, when he heard farther that the pupils were not allowed to read or hear any finished poems by ancient or modern poets. "We merely impart to them," it was said, "a series of mythuses, traditions and legends, in the most laconic form. And now, from the pictorial or poetic execution of these subjects, we at once discover the peculiar productive gift of the genius devoted to the one or the other art. Both poet and painter thus labour at the same fountain; and each endeavours to draw off the water to his own side, to his own advantage, and attain his own required objects with it; in which he succeeds much better than if he attempted again to fashion something that has been fashioned already."

The Traveller himself had an opportunity of seeing how this was accomplished: several painters were busy in a room; a gay young friend was relating with great minuteness a very simple story; so that he employed almost as many words as the others did pencil-strokes, to complete the same exhibition and round it fully off.

He was told, that in working together the friends were wont to carry on much pleasant conversation; and that in this way several improvisatori had unfolded their gifts, and succeeded in exciting great enthusiasm for this twofold mode of representation.

Our friend now reverted his inquiries to the subject of plastic art. "You have no exhibition," said he; "and therefore I suppose give no prize either?"

"No," said the other, "we do not; but here, close by, we can show you something which we reckon more useful."

They entered a large hall, beautifully lighted from above; a wide circle of busy artists first attracted the eye; and from the midst of these rose a colossal group of figures, elevated in the centre of the place. Male and female forms, of gigantic power, in violent postures, reminded one of that lordly fight between Heroic youths and Amazons, wherein hate and enmity at last issue in mutually regretful alliance. This strikingly intertwisted piece of art presented an equally favourable aspect from every point of its circuit. In a wide ring round it were many artists sitting and standing, each occupied in his own way; the painter at his easel, the drawer at his sketch-board; some were modelling it in full, others in bas-relief; there were even architects engaged in planning the pedestal, on which a similar group, when wrought in marble, was to be erected. Each individual was proceeding by his own method in this task: painters and drawers were bringing out the group to a plain surface; careful, however, not to destroy its figures, but to retain as much of it as possible. In the same manner were works in bas-relief going forward. One man only had repeated the whole group in a miniature scale; and in certain movements and arrangements of limbs he really seemed to have surpassed his model.

And now it came out that this man was the maker of the model; who, before working it in marble, had here submitted his performance not to a critical, but to a practical trial; and by accurately observing whatever any of his fellow-artists in his special department and way of thought might notice, retain or alter in the group, was purposing, in subsequent consideration, to turn all this to his own profit; so that, when at length the grand work stood finished in marble, though undertaken, planned and executed by one, it might seem to belong to all.

The greatest silence reigned throughout this apartment also; but the Superior raised his voice, and cried: "Is there any of you, then, who in presence of this stationary work can, with gifted words, so awaken our imagination, that all we here see concreted shall again become fluid, without losing its character; and so convince us, that what our artist has here laid hold of, was indeed the worthiest?"

Called forth on all sides by name, a fair youth laid down his work; and as he stept forward, began a quiet speech, seemingly intended merely to describe the present group of figures; but ere long he cast himself into the region of poetry, plunged into the middle of the action, and ruled this element like a master; by degrees, his representation so swelled and mounted by lordly words and gestures, that the rigid group seemed actually to move about its axis, and the number of its figures to be doubled and trebled. Wilhelm stood enraptured, and at last exclaimed: "Can we now forbear passing over into song itself, into rhythmic melody?"

"This I should wish to hinder," said the Overseer; "for if our excellent statuary will be candid, he will confess to us that our poet scarcely pleases him; and this because their arts lie in the most opposite regions: on the other hand, I durst bet, that here and there a painter has not failed to appropriate some living touches from the speech. A soft kindly song, however, I could wish our friend to hear: there is one, for instance, which you sing to an air so lovely and earnest; it turns on Art in general, and I myself never listen to it without pleasure."

After a pause, in which they beckoned to each other, and settled their arrangements by signs, the following heart and spirit stirring song resounded in stately melody from all sides:

While inventing and effecting,
Artist, by thyself continue long:
The result art thou expecting,
Haste and see it in the throng.
Here in others look, discover
What thy own life's course has been;
And thy deeds of years past over
In thy fellow man be seen.

The devising, the uniting,
What and how the forms shall be;
One thing will the other lighten,
And at last comes joy to thee!
Wise and true what thou impartest,
Fairly shaped, and softly done:
Thus of old the cunning artist
Artist-like his glory won.

As all Nature's thousand changes
But one changeless God proclaim ;
So in Art's wide kingdoms ranges
One sole meaning still the same :
This is Truth, eternal Reason,
Which from Beauty takes its dress,
And serene through time and season
Stands for aye in loveliness.

While the orator, the singer,
Pour their hearts in rhyme and prose,
'Neath the painter's busy finger
Shall bloom forth Life's cheerful rose ;
Girt with sisters ; in the middle,
And with Autumn's fruitage blent ;
That of life's mysterious riddle
Some short glimpses may be hent.

Thousandfold, and graceful, show thou
Form from forms evolving fair ;
And of man's bright image know thou
That a God once tarried there :
And whate'er your tasks or prizes,
Stand as brethren one and all,
While, like song, sweet incense rises
From the altar at your call.

All this Wilhelm could not but let pass, though it must have seemed paradoxical enough; and had he not seen it with his eyes, might even have appeared impossible. But now, when it was explained and pointed out to him, openly and freely, and in fair sequence, he scarcely needed to put any farther question on the subject. However, he at last addressed his conductor as follows : "I see here a most prudent provision made for much that is desirable in life : but tell me farther, which of your regions exhibits a similar attention to Dramatic Poetry, and where could I instruct myself in that matter? I have looked round over all your edifices, and observed none that seemed destined for such an object."

"In reply to this question, we must not hide from you, that, in our whole Province, there is no such edifice to be seen. The drama presupposes the existence of an idle multitude, perhaps even of a populace ; and no such class finds harbour with us ; for birds of that feather, when they do not in spleen forsake us of their own accord, we soon take care to conduct over the marches. Doubt not, however, that in our Institution, so universal in its character, this point was carefully meditated : but no region could be found for the purpose, everywhere some important scruple came

in the way. Indeed, who among our pupils could readily determine, with pretended mirth, or hypocritical sorrow, to excite in the rest a feeling untrue in itself, and alien to the moment, for the sake of calling forth an always dubious satisfaction? Such jugglerries we reckoned in all cases dangerous, and could not reconcile with our earnest objects."

"It is said, however," answered Wilhelm, "that this far-stretching art promotes all the rest, of whatever sort."

"Nowise," answered the other; "it employs the rest, but spoils them. I do not blame a player for uniting himself with a painter: but the painter, in such society, is lost. Without any conscience, the player will lay hold of whatever art or life presents him, and use it for his fugitive objects, indeed with no small profit: the painter, again, who could wish in return to extract advantage from the theatre, will constantly find himself a loser by it; and so also in the like case will the musician. The combined Arts appear to me like a family of sisters, of whom the greater part were inclined to good economy, but one was light-headed, and desirous to appropriate and squander the whole goods and chattels of the household. The Theatre is this wasteful sister: it has an ambiguous origin, which, in no case, whether as art or trade or amusement, it can wholly conceal."

Wilhelm cast his eyes on the ground with a deep sigh; for all that he had enjoyed or suffered on the Stage rose at once before his mind; and he blessed the good men who were wise enough to spare their pupils such pain, and, out of principle and conviction, to banish such errors from their sphere.

His attendant, however, did not leave him long in these meditations, but continued: "As it is our highest and holiest principle, that no talent, no capacity be misdirected, we cannot hide from ourselves, that among so large a number, here and there a mimical gift will sometimes decidedly come to light; exhibiting itself in an irresistible desire to ape the characters, forms, movements, speech of others. This we certainly do not encourage; but we observe our pupil strictly, and if he continue faithful to his nature, then we have already established an intercourse with the great theatres of all nations, and so thither we send any youth of tried capability, that, as the duck on the pond, so he on the boards, may be forthwith conducted, full speed, to the future quack-quacking and gibble-gabbling of his life."

Wilhelm heard this with patience, but only with half conviction, perhaps with some spleen: for so strangely is man tempered, that he may be persuaded of the worthlessness of any darling object, may turn away from it, nay even execrate it, but yet will not see it

treated in this way by others; and perhaps the Spirit of Contradiction which dwells in all men, never rouses itself more vehemently and stoutly than in such cases.

And the Editor of these sheets may himself confess, that he lets not this strange passage through his hands without some touch of anger. Has not he too, in many senses, expended more life and faculty than was right on the Theatre? And would these men convince him that this has been an unpardonable error, a fruitless toil?

But we have no time for appending, in splenetic mood, such remembrances and after-feelings to the narrative: for our friend now finds himself agreeably surprised, as one of the Three, and this a particularly prepossessing one, again comes before his eyes. Kind, open meekness, announcing the purest peace of soul, came in its refreshing effluences along with him. Trustfully the Wanderer could approach, and feel his trust returned.

Here he now learned that the Chief was at present in the Sanctuary, instructing, teaching, blessing; while the Three had separated to visit all the Regions, and everywhere, after most thorough information obtained, and conferences with the subordinate Overseers, to forward what was in progress, to found what was newly planned, and thereby faithfully discharge their high duty.

This same excellent person now gave him a more comprehensive view of their internal situation and external connexions; explained to him the mutual influences of one Region on another; and also by what steps, after a longer or a shorter date, a pupil could be transferred from the one to the other. All this harmonised completely with what he already knew. At the same time, he was much gratified by the description given of his son; and their farther plan of education met with his entire approval.

He was now, by the Assistants and Overseer, invited to a Miners' Festival, which was forthwith to be celebrated. The ascent of the Mountains was difficult; and Wilhelm fancied he observed that his guide walked even slower towards evening, as if the darkness had not been likely to obstruct their path still more. But when deep night came round them, this enigma was solved: our Wanderer observed little flames come glimmering and wavering forth from many dells and chasms; gradually stretch themselves into lines, and roll over the summits of the mountains. Much kindlier than when a volcano opens, and its belching roar threatens whole countries with destruction, did this fair light appear; and yet, by degrees, it glowed with new brightness; grew stronger, broader, more continuous; glittered like a stream of stars, soft and lovely *indeed, yet* spreading boldly over all the scene.

After the attendant had a little while enjoyed the surprise of his guest, for they could clearly enough observe each other, their faces and forms as well as their path being illuminated by the light from the distance,—he began: "You see here, in truth, a curious spectacle: these lights which, day and night, the whole year over, gleam and work under ground, forwarding the acquisition of concealed and scarcely attainable treasures; these now mount and well forth from their abysses, and gladden the upper night. Scarcely could one anywhere enjoy so brave a review as here, where this most useful occupation, which in its subterranean concealment is dispersed and hidden from the eye, rises before us in its full completeness, and bespeaks a great secret combination."

Amid such speeches and thoughts, they had reached the spot where these fire-brooks poured themselves into a sea of flame, surrounding a well lighted insular space. The Wanderer placed himself in the dazzling circle, within which, glittering lights by thousands formed an imposing contrast with the miners, ranked round it like a dark wall. Forthwith arose the gayest music, accompanied by becoming songs. Hollow masses of rock came forward on machinery, and opened a resplendent interior to the eye of the delighted spectator. Mimetic exhibitions, and whatever else at such a moment can gratify the multitude, combined with all this at once to excite and to satisfy a cheerful attention.

But with what astonishment was Wilhelm filled, when, on being introduced to the Superiors, he observed Friend Jarno, in solemn stately robes, among the number! "Not in vain," cried Jarno, "have I changed my former name with the more expressive title of Montan: thou findest me here initiated in mountain and cave; and now, if questioned, I could disclose and explain to thee much that a year ago was still a riddle to myself."

At this point our manuscripts forsake us: of the conversation of these friends there is nothing specified; as little can we discover the connexion of what follows next; an incident of which in the same bundle, in the same paper, we find brief notice: That a meeting had taken place between our Wanderer and Lothario and the Abbé. Unhappily, in this, as in so many other leaves, the date has been neglected.

Some passages, introduced rather in the way of exclamation than of narrative, point to the high meaning of Renunciation, by which alone the first real entrance into life is conceivable. Then we come upon a Map, marked with several Arrows pointing towards one another; and along with this we find, in a certain sequence,

several days of the month written down; so that we might fancy ourselves again walking in the real world, and moderately certain as to the next part of our friend's route, were it not that here also various marks and ciphers, appended in different ways, awoke some fear that a secret meaning at the bottom of it would forever lie hid from us.

But what drives us out of all historical composure, is the strange circumstance, that immediately on all this there comes in the most improbable narration; of a sort like those tales, whereby you long keep the hearer's curiosity on the stretch with a series of wonders, and at last explain: That you were talking of a dream. However, we shall communicate without change what lies before us:

"If hitherto we had continued in the metalliferous part of the mountains, which externally is soft and by no means of a wild aspect, I was now conducted through precipitous and scarcely passable rocks and chasms: at last I gained the topmost summit; a cliff, the peak of which afforded room only for a single person; who, if he looked down from it into the horrid depth, might see furious mountain-torrents foaming through black abysses. In the present case, I looked down without giddiness or terror, for I was light of heart: but now my attention fixed itself on some huge crags rising opposite me, precipitous like my own, yet offering on their summits a larger space of level. Though parted by a monstrous chasm, the jutting masses came so near together that I could distinctly enough, with the naked eye, observe several persons assembled on the summit. They were for most part ladies; one of whom coming forward to the very verge, awakened in me double and treble anxiety, as I became completely convinced that it was Natalia herself. The danger of such an unexpected interview increased every moment: but it grew boundless, when a perspective came before my eyes, and brought me over to her, and her over to me. There is something magical at all times in perspectives. Were we not accustomed from youth to look through them, we should shudder and tremble every time we put them to our eyes. It is we who are looking, and it is not we; a being it is whose organs are raised to a higher pitch, whose limitations are done away, who has become entitled to stretch forth into infinitude.

"When, for example, we observe far distant persons, by means of such an instrument, and see them in unsuspicious thoughtlessness following their business as if they were solitary and unwatched, we could almost feel afraid lest they might discover us, and indignantly upbraid us for our treacherous curiosity.

"And so likewise did I, hemmed in by a strange feeling, waver

between proximity and distance, and from instant to instant alternate between the two.

"Those others in their turn had observed us; as a signal with a white handkerchief put beyond a doubt. For a moment I delayed in my answer to it; finding myself thus close beside the being whom I adored. This is her pure benign form; these are her taper arms, which once so helpfully appeared before me, after unblessed sorrows and perplexities; and at last too, though but for moments, sympathisingly embraced me.

"I saw distinctly enough that she too had a perspective, and was looking over to me; and I failed not, by such tokens as stood at my command, to express the profession of a true and heartfelt attachment.

"And as experience teaches that remote objects, which we have once clearly recognised through a perspective, afterwards appear even to the naked eye as if standing shaped in distinct nearness; be it that more accurate knowledge sharpens the sense, or that imagination supplies what is wanting; so now did I see this beloved being as accurately and distinctly as if I could have touched her; though her company continued still irrecognisable. And as I was trampling round my narrow station, struggling towards her the more, the abyss was like to swallow me, had not a helpful hand laid hold of mine, and snatched me at once from my danger and my fairest happiness."

CHAPTER XV.

HERE at last we again step on firmer ground, the localities of which we can settle with some probability; though still here and there on our way there occur a few uncertainties, which it is not in our power altogether to clear up.

As Wilhelm, in order to reach any point of the line marked out by the first Arrow, had to proceed obliquely through the country, he found himself necessitated to perform the journey on foot, leaving his luggage to be carried after him. For this walk of his, however, he was richly rewarded; meeting at every step, quite unexpectedly, with loveliest tracts of scenery. They were of that sort, which the last slope of a mountain region forms in its meeting with the plain country; bushy hills, their soft declivities employed in domestic use; all level spaces green; nowhere aught steep, unfruitful or unploughed to be noticed. Ere long he reached the main valley, into which the side-waters flowed; and this too

was carefully cultivated, graceful when you looked over it; with taper trees marking the bends of the river, and of the brooks which poured into it. On looking at his map, his indicator, he observed with surprise that the line drawn for him cut directly through this valley; so that, in the first place, he was at least on the right road.

An old castle, in good repair, and seemingly built at different periods, stood forth on a bushy hill; at the foot of which a gay hamlet stretched along, with its large inn rising prominent among the other houses. Hither he proceeded; and was received by the landlord kindly enough, yet with an excuse that he could not be admitted, unless by the permission of a party who had hired the whole establishment for a time; on which account he, the landlord, was under the necessity of sending all his guests to the older inn, which lay farther up the hamlet. After a short conference, the man seemed to bethink himself, and said: "Indeed there is no one of them at home even now; but this is Saturday, and the Bailiff will not fail to be here soon: he comes every week to settle the accounts of the last, and make arrangements for the next. Truly, there is a fair order reigns among these men, and a pleasure in having to do with them, though they are strict enough: for if they yield one no great profit, it is sure and constant." He then desired his new guest to amuse himself in the large upper hall, and await what farther might occur.

Here Wilhelm, on entering, found a large clean apartment; except for benches and tables, altogether empty. So much the more was he surprised to see a large tablet inserted above one of the doors, with these words marked on it in golden letters, *Ubi homines sunt modi sunt;* which in modern tongue may signify, that where men combine in society, the way and manner in which they like to be and to continue together is directly established. This motto made our Wanderer think: he took it as a good omen; finding here, expressed and confirmed, a principle which he had often, in the course of life, perceived for himself to be furthersome and reasonable. He had not waited long, when the Bailiff made his appearance; who being forewarned by the landlord, after a short conversation, and no very special scrutiny, admitted Wilhelm on the following terms: To continue three days; to participate quietly in whatever should occur; and happen what might, to ask no questions about the reason, and at taking leave, to ask none about the score. All this our Traveller was obliged to comply with, the deputy not being allowed to yield in a single point.

The Bailiff was about retiring, when a sound of vocal music rolled up the stairs: two pretty young men entered singing; and these the Bailiff, by a simple sign, gave to understand that their

guest was accepted. Without interrupting their song, they kindly saluted the stranger, and continued their duet with the finest grace; showing clearly enough that they were well trained, and complete masters of their art. As Wilhelm testified the most attentive interest, they paused and inquired: If in his own pedestrian wanderings no song ever occurred to him, which he went along singing by himself? "A good voice," answered Wilhelm, "Nature has in truth denied me: yet I often feel as if a secret Genius were whispering some rhythmic words in my ear; so that, in walking, I move to musical measure: fancying, at the same time, that I hear low tones, accompanying some song, which, in one way or another, has pleasantly risen before me."

"If you recollect such a song, write it down for us," said they: "we shall see if we have skill to accompany your singing Demon." He took a leaf from his note-book, and handed them the following lines:

From the mountains to the champaign,
By the glens and hills along,
Comes a rustling and a tramping,
Comes a motion as of song:
And this undetermined roving
Brings delight, and brings good heed;
And thy striving, be't with Loving,
And thy living, be't in Deed!

After brief study, there arose at once a gay marching melody, which, in its repetition and restriction still stepping forward, hurried on the hearer with it: he was in doubt whether this was his own tune, his former theme; or one now for the first time so fitted to the words, that no other movement was conceivable. The singers had for some time pleasantly proceeded in this manner, when two stout young fellows came in, whom, by their accoutrements, you directly recognised as masons; two others, who followed them, being as evidently carpenters. These four, softly laying down their tools, listened to the music, and soon struck in with sure and decided voices; so that to the mind it seemed as if a real wayfaring company were stepping along over hill and valley; and Wilhelm thought he had never heard anything so graceful, so enlivening to heart and mind. This enjoyment, however, was to be increased yet farther, and raised to the highest pitch, by the entrance of a gigantic figure, mounting the stairs with a hard firm tread, which, with all his efforts, he could scarcely moderate. A heavy-laden dorsel he directly placed in the corner; himself he seated on a bench, which beginning to creak under his weight, the others laughed, yet without going wrong in their music. Wil-

helm, however, was exceedingly surprised, when, with a huge bass voice, this Son of Anak joined in also. The hall quivered; and it was to be observed that in his part he altered the burden, and sang it thus:

Life's no resting, but a moving,
Let thy life be Deed on Deed!

Farther, you could very soon perceive that he was drawing down the time to a slower step, and forcing the rest to follow him. Of this, when at last they were satisfied and had concluded, they accused him; declaring he had tried to set them wrong.

"Not at all!" cried he: "it is you who tried to set me wrong; to put me out of my own step, which must be measured and sure, if I am to walk with my loading up hill and down dale, and yet, in the end, arrive at my appointed hour, to satisfy your wants."

One after the other, these persons now passed into an adjoining room to the Bailiff; and Wilhelm easily observed that they were occupied in settling accounts; a point, however, as to which he was not allowed at present to inquire farther. Two fair lively boys in the mean while entered, and began covering a table in all speed, moderately furnishing it with meat and wine; and the Bailiff, coming out, invited them all to sit down along with him. The boys waited; yet forgot not their own concern, but enjoyed their share in a standing posture. Wilhelm recollected witnessing similar scenes during his abode among the players; yet the present company seemed to be of a much more serious cast; constituted not out of sport, for show, but with a view to important concerns of life.

The conversation of the craftsmen with the Bailiff added strength to this conviction. These four active young people, it appeared, were busy in the neighbourhood, where a violent conflagration had destroyed the fairest village in the country; nor did Wilhelm fail to learn that the worthy Bailiff was employed in getting timber and other building materials; all which looked the more enigmatical, as none of these persons seemed to be resident here, but in all other points announced themselves as transitory strangers. By way of conclusion to the meal, St. Christopher, such was the name they gave the giant, brought out, for good-night, a dainty glass of wine, which had before been set aside: a gay choral song kept the party still some time together, after they were out of sight; and then Wilhelm was at last conducted to a chamber of the loveliest aspect and situation. The full moon, enlightening a rich plain, was already up; and in the bosom of our Wanderer it awoke remembrances of similar scenes. The spirits of all dear friends hovered past him; especially the image of Lenardo rose

in him so vividly, that he might have fancied the man himself was standing before his eyes. All this had prepared him with its kind influences for nightly rest; when, on a sudden, there arose a tone of so strange a nature, that it almost frightened him. It sounded as from a distance, and yet seemed to be in the house itself; for the building quivered many times, and the floors reverberated when the sound rose to its highest pitch. Wilhelm, though his ear was usually delicate in discriminating tones, could make nothing of this: he compared it to the droning roar of a huge organ-pipe, which, for sheer compass, produces no determinate note. Whether this nocturnal terror passed away towards morning, or Wilhelm by degrees became accustomed to the sound, and no longer heeded it, is difficult to discover: at any rate he fell asleep; and was in due time pleasantly awakened by the rising sun.

Scarcely had one of the boys who were in waiting brought him breakfast, when a figure entered, whom he had already noticed last night at supper, without clearly ascertaining his quality. A well-formed, broad-shouldered, yet nimble man; who now, by the implements which he spread out, announced himself as Barber, and forthwith prepared for performing his much-desired office on Wilhelm. For the rest, he was quite silent: and with a light hand he went through his task, without once having opened his lips. Wilhelm therefore began, and said: "Of your art you are completely master; and I know not that I have ever had a softer razor on my cheeks; at the same time, however, you appear to be a strict observer of the laws of the Society."

Roguishly smiling, laying his finger on his lips, the taciturn shaver glided through the door. "By my sooth," cried Wilhelm after him, "I think you must be old Redcloak; if not himself, at least a descendant of his: it is lucky for you that you ask no counter service of me; your turn would have been but sorrily done."

No sooner had this curious personage retired, than the well-known Bailiff came in, inviting our friend to dinner for this day, in words which sounded pretty strange: the BOND, so said the speaker expressly, gave the stranger welcome; requested his company at dinner; and took pleasure in the hope of being more closely connected with him. Inquiries were then made as to the guest's health, and how he was contented with his entertainment; to all which he could only answer in terms of satisfaction. He would, in truth, have liked much to ask of this man, as previously of the silent Barber, some information touching the horrid sound which throughout the night had, if not tormented, at least discomposed him; but, mindful of his engagement, he forbore all ques-

tions; hoping that, without importunity, from the good-will of the Society, or in some other accidental way, he might be informed according to his wishes.

Our friend now, when left alone, began to reflect on the strange person who had sent him this invitation, and knew not well what to make of the matter. To designate one or more superiors by a neuter noun, seemed to him a somewhat precarious mode of speech. For the rest, there was such a stillness all round, that he could not recollect of ever having passed a stiller Sunday. He went out of doors; and, hearing a sound of bells, walked towards the village. Mass was just over; and among the villagers and country-people crowding out of church, he observed three acquaintances of last night; a mason, a carpenter and a boy. Farther on, he met among the Protestant worshipers the other corresponding three. How the rest managed their devotion was unknown to him: but so much he thought himself entitled to conclude, that in this Society a full religious toleration was practised.

About mid-day, at the castle-gate, he was met by the Bailiff; who then conducted him through various halls into a large antechamber, and there desired him to take a seat. Many persons passed through into an adjoining hall. Those already known were to be seen among them; St. Christopher himself went by: all saluted the Bailiff and the stranger. But what struck our friend most in this affair was, that the whole party seemed to consist of artisans; all dressed in the usual fashion, though extremely neat and clean: a few among the number you might at most perhaps have reckoned of the clerk species.

No more guests now making their appearance, the Bailiff led our friend through the stately door into a spacious hall. Here a table of immense length had been covered; past the lower end of which he was conducted, towards the head, where he saw three persons standing in a cross direction. But what was his astonishment when he approached, and Lenardo, scarcely yet recognised, fell upon his neck. From this surprise he had not recovered, when another person, with no less warmth and vivacity, likewise embraced him; announcing himself as our strange Friedrich, Natalia's brother. The rapture of these friends diffused itself over all present: an exclamation of joy and blessing sounded along the whole table. But in a moment, the company being seated, all again became silent; and the repast, served up with a certain solemnity, was enjoyed in like manner.

Towards the conclusion of the ceremony, Lenardo gave a sign: two singers rose; and Wilhelm was exceedingly surprised to hear

in this place his yesternight's song; which we, for the sake of what follows, shall beg permission to insert once more:

From the mountains to the champaign,
By the glens and hills along,
Comes a rustling and a tramping,
Comes a motion as of song:
And this undetermined roving
Brings delight, and brings good heed;
And thy striving, be't with Loving,
And thy living, be't in Deed!

Scarcely had this duet, accompanied by a chorus of agreeable number, approached its conclusion, when two other singers, on the opposite side, started up impetuously; and, with earnest vehemence, inverted rather than continued the song; to Wilhelm's astonishment, proceeding thus:

For the tie is snapt asunder,
Trust and loving hope are fled;
Can I tell, in fear and wonder,
With what dangers now bested,
I, cut off from friend and brother,
Like the widow in her woe,
With the one and not the other,
On and on, my way must go!

The chorus, taking up this strophe, grew more and more numerous, more and more vociferous; and yet the voice of St. Christopher, from the bottom of the table, could still be distinctly recognised among them. The lamentation, in the end, rose almost to be frightful: a spirit of dispiritment, combining with the skilful execution of the singers, introduced something unnatural into the whole, so that it pained our friend, and almost made him shudder. In truth, they all seemed perfectly of one mind; and as if lamenting their own fate on the eve of a separation. The strange repetitions, the frequent resuscitation of a fatiguing song, at length became dangerous in the eyes of the Bond itself: Lenardo rose, and all instantly sat down, abruptly breaking off their hymn. The other, with friendly words, thus began:

"Indeed I cannot blame you for continually recalling to your minds the destiny which stands before us all, that so, at any hour, you may be ready for it. If aged and lifeweary men have called to their neighbours: Think of dying! we younger and lifeloving men may well keep encouraging and reminding one another with the cheerful words: Think of wandering! Yet, withal, of a thing which we either voluntarily undertake, or believe ourselves constrained to, it were well to speak with cheerfulness and moderation. You

yourselves know best what, in our situation, is fixed, and what is movable: let us enjoy the former too, in sprightly and gay tones; and to its success be this parting cup now drunk!" He emptied his glass, and sat down: the four singers instantly rose, and in flowing connected tones thus began:

Keep not standing fix'd and rooted,
Briskly venture, briskly roam:
Head and hand, where'er thou foot it,
And stout heart, are still at home.
In each land the sun does visit
We are gay, whate'er betide:
To give room for wand'ring is it
That the world was made so wide.

As the chorus struck in with its repetition of these lines, Lenardo rose, with him all the rest. His nod set the whole company into singing movement; those at the lower end marched out, St. Christopher at their head, in pairs through the hall; and the uplifted wanderers' song grew clearer and freer, the farther they proceeded; producing at last a particularly good effect, when, from the terraces of the castle-garden, you looked down over the broad valley, in whose fulness and beauty you might well have liked to lose yourself. While the multitude were dispersing this way and that, according to their pleasure, Wilhelm was made acquainted with the third Superior. This was the Amtmann; by whose kind influence many favours had been done the Society; in particular, the Castle of his patron the Count, situated among several families of rank, had been given up to their use, so long as they might think fit to tarry here.

Towards evening, while the friends were in a far-seeing grove, there came a portly figure over the threshold, whom Wilhelm at once recognised as the Barber of this morning. To a low mute bow of the man, Lenardo answered: "You now come, as always, at the right season; and will not delay to entertain us with your talent. I may be allowed," continued he, turning towards Wilhelm, "to give you some knowledge of our Society, the Bond of which I may flatter myself that I am. No one enters our circle unless he have some talents to show, which may contribute to the use or enjoyment of society in general. This man is an excellent surgeon; of his skill as a beard-artist you yourself can testify: for these reasons, he is no less welcome than necessary to us. Now, as his employment usually brings with it a great and often burdensome garrulity, he has engaged, for the sake of his own culture, to comply with a certain condition; as, indeed, every one that means to live with us must agree to constrain himself in some particular

point, if the greater freedom be left him in all other points. Accordingly our Barber has renounced the use of his tongue, in so far as aught common or casual is to be expressed by it: but by this means, another gift of speech has been unfolded in him, which acts by forethought, cunningly and pleasurably; I mean the gift of narration.

"His life is rich in wonderful experiences, which he used to split in pieces, babbling of them at wrong times; but which he now, constrained by silence, repeats and arranges in his quiet thought. This also his power of imagination now forwards, lending life and movement to past occurrences. With no common art and skill, he can relate to us genuine Antique Tales, or modern stories of the same fabulous cast; thereby at the right hour affording us a most pleasant entertainment, when I loose his tongue for him; which I now do; giving him, at the same time, this praise, that in the considerable period during which I have known him, he has never once been guilty of a repetition. I cannot but hope that, in the present case, for love and respect to our dear guest, he will especially distinguish himself."

A sprightly cheerfulness spread over Redcloak's face; and without delay, he began speaking as follows.

CHAPTER XVI.

THE NEW MELUSINA.

"RESPECTED gentlemen! Being aware that preliminary speeches and introductions are not much to your taste, I shall without farther talk assure you, that in the present instance, I hope to fulfil your commission moderately well. From me has many a true history gone forth already, to the high and universal satisfaction of hearers: but, today I may assert, that I have one to tell, which far surpasses the former; and which, though it happened to me several years ago, still disquiets me in recollecting it, nay still gives hope of some farther development.

"By way of introduction, let me confess, that I have not always so arranged my scheme of life as to be certain of the next period in it, or even of the next day. In my youth, I was no first-rate economist; and often found myself in manifold perplexity. At one time I undertook a journey, thinking to derive good profit in the course of it: but the scale I went upon was too liberal; and after having commenced my travel with Extra-post, and then pro-

secuted it for a time in the Diligence, I at last found myself obliged to front the end of it on foot.

"Like a gay young blade, it had been from of old my custom on entering any inn, to look round for the landlady, or even the cook, and wheedle myself into favour with her; whereby, for most part, my shot was somewhat reduced.

"One night at dusk, as I was entering the Post-house of a little town, and purposing to set about my customary operations, there came a fair double-seated coach with four horses rattling up to the door behind me. I turned round; and observed in it a young lady, without maid, without servants. I hastened to open the carriage for her, and to ask if I could help her in anything. On stepping out, a fair form displayed itself; and her lovely countenance, if you looked at it narrowly, was adorned with a slight shade of sorrow. I again asked if there was aught I could do for her. 'O yes!' said she, 'if you will lift that little Box carefully, which you will find standing on the seat, and bring it in: but I beg very much of you to carry it with all steadiness, and not to move or shake it in the least.' I took out the Box with great care; she shut the coach-door; we walked up-stairs together, and she told the servants that she was to stay here for the night.

"We were now alone in the chamber: she desired me to put the Box on the table, which was standing at the wall; and as, by several of her movements, I observed that she wished to be alone, I took my leave, reverently but warmly kissing her hand.

"'Order supper for us two,' said she then: and you may well conceive with what pleasure I executed the commission; scarcely deigning, in my pride of heart, to cast even a side-look on landlady and menials. With impatience I expected the moment that was to lead me back to her. Supper was served; we took our seats opposite each other; I refreshed my heart, for the first time during a considerable while, with a good meal; and no less with so desirable a sight beside me; nay it seemed as if she were growing fairer and fairer every moment.

"Her conversation was pleasant; yet she carefully waved whatever had reference to affection and love. The cloth was removed: I still lingered, I tried all sorts of manœuvres to get near her; but in vain; she kept me at my distance, by a certain dignity which I could not withstand; nay against my will, I had to part from her at a rather early hour.

"After a night passed in waking or unrestfully dreaming, I rose early; inquired whether she had ordered horses; and learning that she had not, I walked into the garden, saw her standing

dressed at the window, and hastened up to her. Here, as she looked so fair, and fairer than ever, love, roguery and audacity all at once started into motion within me: I rushed towards her, and clasped her in my arms. 'Angelic, irresistible being,' cried I, 'pardon! but it is impossible—!' With incredible dexterity she whisked herself out of my arms, and I had not even time to imprint a kiss on her cheek. 'Forbear such outbreakings of a sudden foolish passion,' said she, 'if you would not scare away a happiness which lies close beside you, but which cannot be laid hold of till after some trials.'

"'Ask of me what thou pleasest, angelic spirit!' cried I: 'but do not drive me to despair.' She answered with a smile: 'If you mean to devote yourself to my service, hear the terms. I am come hither to visit a lady of my friends, and with her I purpose to continue for a time: in the mean while, I could wish that my carriage and this Box were taken forward. Will you engage with it? You have nothing to do, but carefully to lift the Box into the carriage and out; to sit down beside it, and punctually take charge that it receive no harm. When you enter an inn, it is put upon a table, in a chamber by itself, in which you must neither sit nor sleep. You lock the chamber-door with this key, which will open and shut any lock, and has the peculiar property, that no lock shut by it can be opened in the interim.'

"I looked at her; I felt strangely enough at heart: I promised to do all, if I might hope to see her soon, and if she would seal this hope to me with a kiss. She did so; and from that moment, I had become entirely her bondman. I was now to order horses, she said. We settled the way I was to take; the places where I was to wait, and expect her. She at last pressed a purse of gold into my hand, and I pressed my lips on the fair hand that gave it me. She seemed moved at parting; and for me, I no longer knew what I was doing or was to do.

"On my return from giving my orders, I found the room door locked. I directly tried my master-key, and it performed its duty perfectly. The door flew up: I found the chamber empty; only the Box standing on the table where I had laid it.

"The carriage drove up: I carried the Box carefully down with me, and placed it by my side. The hostess asked: 'Where is the lady, then?' A child answered: 'She is gone into the town.' I nodded to the people: and rolled off in triumph from the door, which I had last night entered with dusty gaiters. That in my hours of leisure I diligently meditated on this adventure, counted my money, laid many schemes, and still now and then kept glancing at the Box, you will readily imagine. I posted right forwards,

passed several stages without alighting; and rested not till I had reached a considerable town, where my fair one had appointed me to wait. Her commands had been pointedly obeyed: the Box always carried to a separate room, and two wax candles lighted beside it, for such also had been her order. I would then lock the chamber; establish myself in my own, and take such comfort as the place afforded.

"For awhile I was able to employ myself with thinking of her: but by degrees the time began to hang heavy on my hands. I was not used to live without companions: these I soon found, at tables-d'hôte, in coffee-houses and public places, altogether to my wish. In such a mode of living my money began to melt away; and one night, it vanished entirely from my purse, in a fit of passionate gaming, which I had not had the prudence to abandon. Void of money; with the appearance of a rich man, expecting a heavy bill of charges; uncertain whether and when my fair one would again make her appearance, I felt myself in the deepest embarrassment. Doubly did I now long for her; and believe that, without her and her gold, it was quite impossible for me to live.

"After supper, which I had relished very little, being forced for this time to consume it in solitude, I took to walking violently up and down my room: I spoke aloud to myself, cursed my folly with horrid execrations, threw myself on the floor, tore my hair, and indeed behaved in the most outrageous fashion. Suddenly, in the adjoining chamber where the Box was, I heard a slight movement, and then a soft knocking at the well-bolted door, which entered from my apartment. I gather myself, grope for my master-key; but the door-leaves fly up of themselves; and in the splendour of those burning wax-lights enters my Beauty. I cast myself at her feet, kiss her robe, her hands; she raises me; I venture not to clasp her, scarcely to look at her; but candidly and repentantly confess to her my fault. 'It is pardonable,' said she; 'only it postpones your happiness and mine. You must now make another tour into the world before we can meet again. Here is more money,' continued she, 'sufficient if you husband it with any kind of reason. But as wine and play have brought you into this perplexity, be on your guard in future against wine and women, and let me hope for a glad meeting when the time comes.'

"She retired over the threshold; the door-leaves flew together: I knocked, I entreated; but nothing farther stirred. Next morning, while presenting his bill, the waiter smiled, and said: 'So we have found out at last, then, why you lock your door in so artful and incomprehensible a way, that no master-key can open it. We supposed you must have much money and precious ware laid up

by you: but now we have seen your treasure walking down-stairs; and in good truth it seemed worthy of being well kept.'

"To this I answered nothing; but paid my reckoning, and mounted with my Box into the carriage. I again rolled forth into the world, with the firmest resolution to be heedful in future of the warning given me by my fair and mysterious friend. Scarcely, however, had I once more reached a large town, when forthwith I got acquainted with certain interesting ladies, from whom I absolutely could not tear myself away. They seemed inclined to make me pay dear for their favour: for while they still kept me at a certain distance, they led me into one expense after the other; and I, being anxious only to promote their satisfaction, once more ceased to think of my purse, but paid and spent straightforward, as occasion needed. But how great was my astonishment and joy, when, after some weeks, I observed that the fulness of my store was not in the least diminished, that my purse was still as round and crammed as ever! Wishing to obtain more strict knowledge of this pretty quality, I set myself down to count; I accurately marked the sum; and again proceeded in my joyous life as before. We had no want of excursions by land, and excursions by water; of dancing, singing and other recreations. But now it required small attention to observe that the purse was actually diminishing; as if by my cursed counting I had robbed it of the property of being uncountable. However, this gay mode of existence had been once entered on; I could not draw back; and yet my ready money soon verged to a close. I execrated my situation; upbraided my fair friend, for having so led me into temptation; took it as an offence that she did not again show herself to me; renounced, in my spleen, all duties towards her; and resolved to break open the Box, and see if peradventure any help might be found there. I was just about proceeding with my purpose: but I put it off till night, that I might go through the business with full composure; and, in the mean time, I hastened off to a banquet, for which this was the appointed hour. Here again we got into a high key; the wine and trumpet sounding had flushed me not a little, when by the most villanous luck it chanced, that during the dessert, a former friend of my dearest fair one, returning from a journey, entered unexpectedly, placed himself beside her, and, without much ceremony, set about asserting his old privileges. Hence, very soon arose ill-humour, quarrelling and battle: we plucked out our spits; and I was carried home half dead of several wounds.

"The surgeon had bandaged me and gone away: it was far in the night; my sick nurse had fallen asleep; the door of the side-room went up; my fair mysterious friend came in, and sat down

by me on the bed. She asked how I was: I answered not, for I was faint and sullen. She continued speaking with much sympathy: she rubbed my temples with a certain balsam, whereby I felt myself rapidly and decidedly strengthened, so strengthened that I could now get angry and upbraid her. In a violent speech I threw all the blame of my misfortune on her; on the passion she had inspired me with; on her appearing and vanishing, and the tedium, the longing which in such a case I could not but feel. I waxed more and more vehement, as if a fever had been coming on; and I swore to her at last, that if she would not be mine, would not now abide with me and wed me, I had no wish to live any longer; to all which I required a peremptory answer. As she lingered and held back with her explanation, I got altogether beside myself, and tore off my double and triple bandages, in the firmest resolution to bleed to death. But what was my amazement, when I found all my wounds healed, my skin smooth and entire, and this fair friend in my arms!

"Henceforth we were the happiest pair in the world. We both begged pardon of each other, without either of us rightly knowing why. She now promised to travel on along with me: and soon we were sitting side by side in the carriage; the little Box lying opposite us on the other seat. Of this I had never spoken to her, nor did I now think of speaking, though it lay there before our eyes; and both of us, by tacit agreement, took charge of it, as circumstances might require; I, however, still carrying it to and from the carriage, and busying myself, as formerly, with the locking of the doors.

"So long as aught remained in my purse, I had continued to pay: but when my cash went done, I signified the fact to her. 'That is easily helped,' said she, pointing to a couple of little pouches fixed at the top, to the sides of the carriage. These I had often observed before, but never turned to use. She put her hand into the one, and pulled out some gold pieces, as from the other some coins of silver; thereby showing me the possibility of meeting any scale of expenditure, which we might choose to adopt. And thus we journeyed on from town to town, from land to land; contented with each other and with the world: and I fancied not that she would again leave me; the less so, that for some time she had evidently been as loving wives wish to be, a circumstance by which our happiness and mutual affection was increased still farther. But one morning, alas, she could not be found: and as my actual residence, without her company, became displeasing, I again took the road with my Box; tried the virtue of the two pouches, and found it still unimpaired.

"My journey proceeded without accident. But if I had hitherto paid little heed to the mysteries of my adventure, expecting a natural solution of the whole, there now occurred something which threw me into astonishment, into anxiety, nay into fear. Being wont, in my impatience for change of place, to hurry forward day and night, it was often my hap to be travelling in the dark: and when the lamps, by any chance, went out, to be left in utter obscurity. Once in the dead of such a night, I had fallen asleep; and on awakening I observed the glimmer of a light on the covering of my carriage. I examined this more strictly, and found that it was issuing from the Box; in which there seemed to be a chink, as if it had been chapped by the warm and dry weather of summer, which was now come on. My thoughts of jewels again came into my head; I supposed there must be some carbuncle lying in the Box, and this point I forthwith set about investigating. I postured myself as well as might be, so that my eye was in immediate contact with the chink. But how great was my surprise, when a fair apartment, well lighted, and furnished with much taste and even costliness, met my inspection, just as if I had been looking down through the opening of a dome into a royal saloon! A fire was burning in the grate; and before it stood an arm-chair. I held my breath and continued to observe. And now there entered from the other side of the apartment a lady with a book in her hand, whom I at once recognised for my wife, though her figure was contracted into the extreme of diminution. She sat down in the chair by the fire to read; she trimmed the coals with the most dainty pair of tongs; and in the course of her movements, I could clearly perceive that this fairest little creature was also in the family way. But now I was obliged to shift my constrained posture a little; and the next moment, when I bent down to look in again, and convince myself that it was no dream, the light had vanished, and my eye rested on empty darkness.

"How amazed, nay terrified I was, you may easily conceive. I started a thousand thoughts on this discovery, and in truth could think nothing. In the midst of this, I fell asleep; and on awakening, I fancied that it must have been a mere dream; yet I felt myself in some degree estranged from my fair one; and though I watched over the Box but so much the more carefully, I knew not whether the event of her re-appearance in human size was a thing which I should wish or dread.

"After some time she did in fact re-appear: one evening, in a white robe, she came gliding in; and as it was just then growing dusky in my room, she seemed to me taller than when I had seen her last: and I remembered having heard that all beings of the

mermaid and gnome species increased in stature very perceptibly at the fall of night. She flew, as usual, to my arms; but I could not with right gladness press her to my obstructed breast.

"'My dearest,' said she, 'I now feel by thy reception of me, what, alas, I already knew too well. Thou hast seen me in the interim: thou art acquainted with the state in which, at certain times, I find myself; thy happiness and mine is interrupted, nay it stands on the brink of being annihilated altogether. I must leave thee; and I know not whether I shall ever see thee again.' Her presence, the grace with which she spoke, directly banished from my memory almost every trace of that vision, which indeed had already hovered before me as little more than a dream. I addressed her with kind vivacity, convinced her of my passion, assured her that I was innocent, that my discovery was accidental; in short, I so managed it that she appeared composed, and endeavoured to compose me.

"'Try thyself strictly,' said she, 'whether this discovery has not hurt thy love, whether thou canst forget that I live in two forms beside thee, whether the diminution of my being will not also contract thy affection.'

"I looked at her: she was fairer than ever; and I thought within myself: Is it so great a misfortune, after all, to have a wife who from time to time becomes a dwarf, so that one can carry her about with him in a casket? Were it not much worse if she became a giantess, and put her husband in the box? My gaiety of heart had returned. I would not for the whole world have let her go. 'Best heart,' said I, 'let us be and continue ever as we have been. Could either of us wish to be better? Enjoy thy conveniency; and I promise thee to guard the Box with so much the more faithfulness. Why should the prettiest sight I have ever seen in my life make a bad impression on me? How happy would lovers be, could they but procure such miniature pictures! And after all, it was but a picture, a little sleight-of-hand deception. Thou art trying and teasing me: but thou shalt see how I will stand it.'

"'The matter is more serious than thou thinkest,' said the fair one: 'however, I am truly glad to see thee take it so lightly; for much good may still be awaiting us both. I will trust in thee; and for my own part do my utmost: only promise me that thou wilt never mention this discovery by way of reproach. Another prayer likewise I most earnestly make to thee: Be more than ever on thy guard against wine and anger.'

"I promised what she required; I could have gone on promising to all lengths: but she herself turned aside the conversa-

tion; and thenceforth all proceeded in its former routine. We had no inducement to alter our place of residence: the town was large, the society various; and the fine season gave rise to many an excursion and garden festival.

"In all such amusements the presence of my wife was welcome, nay eagerly desired, by women as well as men. A kind insinuating manner, joined with a certain dignity of bearing, secured to her on all hands praise and estimation. Besides, she could play beautifully on the lute, accompanying it with her voice; and no social night could be perfect, unless crowned by the graces of this talent.

"I will be free to confess that I have never got much good of music; on the contrary, it has always rather had a disagreeable effect on me. My fair one soon noticed this, and accordingly, when by ourselves, she never tried to entertain me by such means: in return, however, she appeared to indemnify herself while in society, where indeed she always found a crowd of admirers.

"And now, why should I deny it, our late dialogue, in spite of my best intentions, had by no means sufficed to abolish the matter within me: on the contrary, my temper of mind had by degrees got into the strangest tune, almost without my being conscious of it. One night, in a large company, this hidden grudge broke loose; and by its consequences produced to myself the greatest damage.

"When I look back on it now, I in fact loved my beauty far less, after that unlucky discovery: I was also growing jealous of her; a whim that had never struck me before. This night at table, I found myself placed very much to my mind beside my two neighbours, a couple of ladies, who, for some time, had appeared to me very charming. Amid jesting and soft small talk, I was not sparing of my wine: while, on the other side, a pair of musical dilettanti had got hold of my wife, and at last contrived to lead the company into singing separately, and by way of chorus. This put me into ill-humour. The two amateurs appeared to me impertinent; the singing vexed me; and when, as my turn came, they even requested a solo-strophe from me, I grew truly indignant, I emptied my glass, and set it down again with no soft movement.

"The grace of my two fair neighbours soon pacified me, indeed; but there is an evil nature in wrath, when once it is set a-going. It went on fermenting within me, though all things were of a kind to induce joy and complaisance. On the contrary, I waxed more splenetic than ever when a lute was produced, and my fair one began fingering it and singing, to the admiration of all the rest. Unhappily, a general silence was requested. So then,

I was not even to talk any more; and these tones were going through me like a toothache. Was it any wonder that, at last, the smallest spark should blow up the mine?

"The songstress had just ended a song amid the loudest applauses, when she looked over to me; and this truly with the most loving face in the world. Unluckily, its lovingness could not penetrate so far. She perceived that I had just gulped down a cup of wine, and was pouring out a fresh one. With her right fore-finger she beckoned to me in kind threatening. 'Consider that it is wine!' said she, not louder than for myself to hear it.—'Water is for mermaids!' cried I.—'My ladies,' said she to my neighbours, 'crown the cup with all your gracefulness, that it be not too often emptied.'—'You will not let yourself be tutored?' whispered one of them in my ear.—'What ails the Dwarf?' cried I, with a more violent gesture, in which I overset the glass.—'Ah, what you have spilt!' cried the paragon of women; at the same time, twanging her strings, as if to lead back the attention of the company from this disturbance to herself. Her attempt succeeded; the more completely as she rose to her feet, seemingly that she might play with greater convenience, and in this attitude continued preluding.

"At sight of the red wine running over the table-cloth, I returned to myself. I perceived the great fault I had been guilty of; and it cut me through the very heart. Never till now had music spoken to me: the first verse she sang was a friendly good-night to the company, here as they were, as they might still feel themselves together. With the next verse they became as if scattered asunder; each felt himself solitary, separated, no one could fancy that he was present any longer. But what shall I say of the last verse? It was directed to me alone; the voice of injured Love bidding farewell to Moroseness and Caprice.

"In silence I conducted her home; foreboding no good. Scarcely, however, had we reached our chamber, when she began to show herself exceedingly kind and graceful, nay even roguish; she made me the happiest of all men.

"Next morning, in high spirits and full of love, I said to her: 'Thou hast so often sung, when asked in company; as, for example, thy touching farewell song last night. Come now, for my sake, and sing me a dainty gay welcome to this morning hour, that we may feel as if we were meeting for the first time.'

"'That I may not do, my friend,' said she seriously. 'The song of last night referred to our parting, which must now forthwith take place: for I can only tell thee, the violation of thy promise and oath will have the worst consequences for us both; thou hast scoffed away a great felicity, and I too must renounce my dearest wishes.'

"As I now pressed and entreated her to explain herself more clearly, she answered: 'That, alas, I can well do; for, at all events, my continuance with thee is over. Hear, then, what I would rather have concealed to the latest times. The form, under which thou sawest me in the Box, is my natural and proper form: for I am of the race of King Eckwald, the dread Sovereign of the Dwarfs, concerning whom authentic History has recorded so much. Our people are still as of old laborious and busy, and therefore easy to govern. Thou must not fancy that the Dwarfs are behindhand in their manufacturing skill. Swords which followed the foe, when you cast them after him; invisible and mysteriously binding chains; impenetrable shields, and such-like ware, in old times, formed their staple produce. But now they chiefly employ themselves with articles of convenience and ornament; in which truly they surpass all people of the Earth. I may well say, it would astonish thee to walk through our workshops and warehouses. All this would be right and good, were it not that with the whole nation in general, but more particularly with the royal family, there is one peculiar circumstance connected.'

"She paused for a moment; and I again begged farther light on these wonderful secrets; which accordingly she forthwith proceeded to grant.

"'It is well known,' said she, 'that God, so soon as he had created the world, and the ground was dry, and the mountains were standing bright and glorious, that God, I say, thereupon, in the very first place, created the Dwarfs; to the end that there might be reasonable beings also, who, in their passages and chasms, might contemplate and adore his wonders in the inward parts of the Earth. It is farther well known, that this little race by degrees became uplifted in heart, and attempted to acquire the dominion of the Earth; for which reason God then created the Dragons, in order to drive back the Dwarfs into their mountains. Now, as the Dragons themselves were wont to nestle in the large caverns and clefts, and dwell there; and many of them, too, were in the habit of spitting fire, and working much other mischief, the poor little Dwarfs were by this means thrown into exceeding straits and distress, so that not knowing what in the world to do, they humbly and fervently turned to God, and called to him in prayer, that he would vouchsafe to abolish this unclean Dragon generation. But though it consisted not with his wisdom to destroy his own creatures, yet the heavy sufferings of the poor dwarfs so moved his compassion, that anon he created the giants, ordaining them to fight these Dragons, and if not root them out, at least lessen their numbers.

"'Now, no sooner had the Giants got moderately well through with the Dragons, than their hearts also began to wax wanton; and, in their presumption, they practised much tyranny, especially on the good little Dwarfs, who then once more in their need turned to the Lord; and he, by the power of his hand, created the Knights, who were to make war on the Giants and Dragons, and to live in concord with the Dwarfs. Hereby was the work of creation completed on this side: and it is plain, that henceforth Giants and Dragons, as well as Knights and Dwarfs, have always maintained themselves in being. From this, my friend, it will be clear to thee, that we are of the oldest race on the Earth; a circumstance which does us honour, but, at the same time, brings great disadvantage along with it.

"'For as there is nothing in the world that can endure forever, but all that has once been great, must become little and fade, it is our lot also, that ever since the creation of the world, we have been waning and growing smaller; especially the royal family, on whom, by reason of their pure blood, this destiny presses with the heaviest force. To remedy this evil, our wise teachers have many years ago devised the expedient of sending forth a Princess of the royal house from time to time into the world, to wed some honourable Knight, that so the Dwarf progeny may be refected, and saved from entire decay.'

"Though my fair one related these things with an air of the utmost sincerity, I looked at her hesitatingly; for it seemed as if she meant to palm some fable on me. As to her own dainty lineage, I had not the smallest doubt: but that she should have laid hold of me in place of a Knight, occasioned some mistrust; seeing I knew myself too well to suppose that my ancestors had come into the world by an immediate act of creation.

"I concealed my wonder and scepticism, and asked her kindly: 'But tell me, my dear child, how hast thou attained this large and stately shape? For I know few women that in richness of form can compare with thee.'—'Thou shalt hear,' replied she. 'It is a settled maxim in the Council of the Dwarf Kings, that this extraordinary step be forborne as long as it possibly can; which, indeed, I cannot but say is quite natural and proper. Perhaps they might have lingered still longer, had not my brother, born after me, come into the world so exceedingly small, that the nurses actually lost him out of his swaddling-clothes, and no creature yet knows whither he is gone. On this occurrence, unexampled in the annals of Dwarfdom, the Sages were assembled; and without more ado, the resolution was taken, and I sent out in quest of a husband.'

"'The resolution!' exclaimed I: 'that is all extremely well. One can resolve, one can take his resolution: but to give a Dwarf this heavenly shape, how did your Sages manage that?'

"'It had been provided for already,' said she, 'by our ancestors. In the royal treasury lay a monstrous gold ring. I speak of it as it then appeared to me, when I saw it in my childhood: for it was this same ring, which I have here on my finger. We now went to work as follows:

"'I was informed of all that awaited me; and instructed what I had to do and to forbear. A splendid palace, after the pattern of my father's favourite summer-residence, was then got ready: a main edifice, wings, and whatever else you could think of. It stood at the entrance of a large rock-cleft, which it decorated in the handsomest style. On the appointed day, our court moved thither, my parents also and myself. The army paraded; and four-and-twenty priests, not without difficulty, carried on a costly litter the mysterious ring. It was placed on the threshold of the building, just within the spot where you entered. Many ceremonies were observed; and after a pathetic farewell, I proceeded to my task. I stept forward to the ring; laid my finger on it; and that instant began perceptibly to wax in stature. In a few moments I had reached my present size; and then I put the ring on my finger. But now, in the twinkling of an eye, the doors, windows, gates flapped to; the wings drew up into the body of the edifice; instead of a palace, stood a little Box beside me; which I forthwith lifted and carried off with me; not without a pleasant feeling in being so tall and strong; still, indeed, a dwarf to trees and mountains, to streams and tracts of land; yet a giant to grass and herbs; and above all to ants, from whom we Dwarfs, not being always on the best terms with them, often suffer considerable annoyance.

"'How it fared with me on my pilgrimage, I might tell thee at great length. Suffice it to say I tried many; but no one save thou seemed worthy of being honoured to renovate and perpetuate the line of the glorious Eckwald.'

"In the course of these narrations, my head had now and then kept wagging, without myself having absolutely shaken it. I put several questions; to which I received no very satisfactory answers; on the contrary, I learned, to my great affliction, that after what had happened, she must needs return to her parents. She had hopes still, she said, of getting back to me: but for the present, it was indispensably necessary to present herself at court; as otherwise, both for her and me, there was nothing but utter ruin. The purses would soon cease to pay; and who knew what all would be the consequences?

"On hearing that our money would run short, I inquired no farther into consequences: I shrugged my shoulders; I was silent, and she seemed to understand me.

"We now packed up, and got into our carriage; the Box standing opposite us; in which, however, I could still see no symptoms of a palace. In this way we proceeded several stages. Post-money and drink-money were readily and richly paid from the pouches to the right and left; till at last we reached a mountainous district; and no sooner had we alighted here, than my fair one walked forward, directing me to follow her with the Box. She led me by rather steep paths to a narrow plot of green ground, through which a clear brook now gushed in little falls, now ran in quiet windings. She pointed to a little knoll; bade me set the Box down there, then said: 'Farewell! Thou wilt easily find the way back; remember me; I hope to see thee again.'

"At this moment, I felt as if I could not leave her. She was just now in one of her fine days, or if you will, her fine hours. Alone with so fair a being, on the greensward, among grass and flowers, girt in by rocks, waters murmuring round you, what heart could have remained insensible! I came forward to seize her hand, to clasp her in my arms: but she motioned me back; threatening me, though still kindly enough, with great danger, if I did not instantly withdraw.

"'Is there no possibility, then,' exclaimed I, 'of my staying with thee, of thy keeping me beside thee?' These words I uttered with such rueful tones and gestures, that she seemed touched by them, and after some thought confessed to me that a continuance of our union was not entirely impossible. Who happier than I! My importunity, which increased every moment, compelled her at last to come out with her scheme, and inform me that if I too could resolve on becoming as little as I had once seen her, I might still remain with her, be admitted to her house, her kingdom, her family. The proposal was not altogether to my mind; yet at this moment I positively could not tear myself away; so, having already for a good while been accustomed to the marvellous, and being at all times prone to bold enterprises, I closed with her offer, and said she might do with me as she pleased.

"I was thereupon directed to hold out the little finger of my right hand: she placed her own against it; then with her left hand, she quite softly pulled the ring from her finger, and let it run along mine. That instant, I felt a violent twinge on my finger: the ring shrunk together, and tortured me horribly. I gave a loud cry, and caught round me for my fair one, but she had disappeared. What state of mind I was in during this moment, I find

no words to express; so I have nothing more to say, but that I very soon, in my miniature size, found myself beside my fair one in a wood of grass-stalks. The joy of meeting after this short yet most strange separation, or, if you will, of this re-union without separation, exceeds all conception. I fell on her neck; she replied to my caresses, and the little pair was as happy as the large one.

"With some difficulty, we now mounted a hill: I say difficulty, because the sward had become for us an almost impenetrable forest. Yet at length we reached a bare space; and how surprised was I at perceiving there a large bolted mass; which, ere long, I could not but recognise for the Box, in the same state as when I had set it down.

"'Go up to it, my friend,' said she, 'and do but knock with the ring: thou shalt see wonders.' I went up accordingly; and no sooner had I rapped, than I did, in fact, witness the greatest wonder. Two wings came jutting out; and at the same time there fell, like scales and chips, various pieces this way and that; while doors, windows, colonnades, and all that belongs to a complete palace at once came into view.

"If ever you have seen one of Röntchen's desks; how, at one pull, a multitude of springs and latches get in motion, and writing-board and writing-materials, letter and money compartments, all at once, or in quick succession, start forward, you will partly conceive how this palace unfolded itself, into which my sweet attendant now introduced me. In the large saloon, I directly recognised the fire-place which I had formerly seen from above, and the chair in which she had then been sitting. And on looking up, I actually fancied I could still see something of the chink in the dome, through which I had peeped in. I spare you the description of the rest: in a word, all was spacious, splendid, and tasteful. Scarcely had I recovered from my astonishment, when I heard afar off a sound of military music. My better half sprang up; and with rapture announced to me the approach of His Majesty her Father. We stept out to the threshold, and here beheld a magnificent procession moving towards us, from a considerable cleft in the rock. Soldiers, servants, officers of state and glittering courtiers, followed in order. At last you observed a golden throng, and in the midst of it the King himself. So soon as the whole procession had drawn up before the palace, the King, with his nearest retinue, stept forward. His loving daughter hastened out to him, pulling me along with her. We threw ourselves at his feet; he raised me very graciously; and on coming to stand before him, I perceived, that in this little world I was still the most considerable figure. We proceeded together to the palace; where His Ma-

jesty, in presence of his whole court, was pleased to welcome me with a well-studied oration in which he expressed his surprise at finding us here; acknowledged me as his son-in-law, and appointed the nuptial ceremony to take place on the morrow.

"A cold sweat went over me as I heard him speak of marriage; for I dreaded this even more than music, which otherwise appeared to me the most hateful thing on Earth. Your music-makers, I used to say, enjoy at least the conceit of being in unison with each other, and working in concord; for when they have tweaked and tuned long enough, grating our ears with all manner of screeches, they believe in their hearts that the matter is now adjusted, and one instrument accurately suited to the other. The band-master himself is in this happy delusion; and so they set forth joyfully, though still tearing our nerves to pieces. In the marriage-state, even this is not the case: for although it is but a duet, and you might think two voices, or even two instruments, might in some degree be attuned to each other, yet this happens very seldom; for while the man gives out one tone, the wife directly takes a higher one, and the man again a higher; and so it rises from the chamber to the choral pitch, and farther and farther, till at last wind-instruments themselves cannot reach it. And now, as harmonical music itself is an offence to me, it will not be surprising that disharmonical should be a thing which I cannot endure.

"Of the festivities in which the day was spent, I shall and can say nothing; for I paid small heed to any of them. The sumptuous victuals, the generous wine, the royal amusements, I could not relish. I kept thinking and considering what I was to do. Here, however, there was but little to be considered. I determined, once for all, to take myself away, and hide somewhere. Accordingly, I succeeded in reaching the chink of a stone, where I intrenched and concealed myself as well as might be. My first care after this was to get the unhappy ring off my finger; an enterprise, however, which would by no means prosper, for, on the contrary, I felt that every pull I gave, the metal grew straiter and cramped me with violent pains, which again abated so soon as I desisted from my purpose.

"Early in the morning I awoke (for my little person had slept, and very soundly); and was just stepping out to look farther about me, when I felt a kind of rain coming on. Through the grass, flowers and leaves, there fell as it were something like sand and grit in large quantities: but what was my horror when the whole of it became alive, and an innumerable host of Ants rushed down on me! No sooner did they observe me, than they made an attack on all sides; and though I defended myself stoutly and gallantly

enough, they at last so hemmed me in, so nipped and pinched me, that I was glad to hear them calling to surrender. I surrendered instantly and wholly; whereupon an Ant of respectable stature approached me with courtesy, nay with reverence, and even recommended itself to my good graces. I learned that the Ants had now become allies of my father-in-law, and by him been called out in the present emergency, and commissioned to fetch me back. Here then was little I in the hands of creatures still less. I had nothing for it but looking forward to the marriage; nay, I must now thank Heaven, if my father-in-law were not wroth, if my fair one had not taken the sullens.

"Let me skip over the whole train of ceremonies; in a word, we were wedded. Gaily and joyously as matters went, there were nevertheless solitary hours, in which you were led astray into reflection; and now there happened to me something which had never happened before: what, and how, you shall learn.

"Everything about me was completely adapted to my present form and wants; the bottles and glasses were in a fit ratio to a little toper, nay, if you will, better measure, in proportion, than with us. In my tiny palate, the dainty titbits tasted excellently; a kiss from the little mouth of my spouse was still the most charming thing in nature; and I will not deny that novelty made all these circumstances highly agreeable. Unhappily, however, I had not forgotten my former situation. I felt within me a scale of bygone greatness; and it rendered me restless and cheerless. Now, for the first time, did I understand what the philosophers might mean by their Ideal, which they say so plagues the mind of man. I had an Ideal of myself; and often in dreams I appeared as a giant. In short, my wife, my ring, my dwarf figure, and so many other bonds and restrictions, made me utterly unhappy; so that I began to think seriously about obtaining my deliverance.

"Being persuaded that the whole magic lay in the ring, I resolved on filing this asunder. From the court-jeweller, accordingly, I borrowed some files. By good luck, I was left-handed, as, indeed, throughout my whole life, I had never done aught in the right-handed way. I stood tightly to the work: it was not small; for the golden hoop, so thin as it appeared, had grown proportionably thicker in contracting from its former length. All vacant hours I privately applied to this task: and at last, the metal being nearly through, I was provident enough to step out of doors. This was a wise measure; for all at once the golden hoop started sharply from my finger, and my frame shot aloft with such violence, that I actually fancied I should dash against the sky; and, at all events, I must have bolted through the dome of our palace; nay, perhaps,

in my new awkwardness, have destroyed this summer-residence altogether.

"Here then was I standing again; in truth, so much the larger, but also, as it seemed to me, so much the more foolish and helpless. On recovering from my stupefaction, I observed the royal strong-box lying near me, which I found to be moderately heavy, as I lifted it, and carried it down the foot-path to the next stage; where I directly ordered horses, and set forth. By the road, I soon made trial of the two side-pouches. Instead of money, which appeared to be run out, I found a little key: it belonged to the strong-box, in which I got some moderate compensation. So long as this held out, I made use of the carriage: by and by I sold it, and proceeded by the Diligence. The strong-box too, I at length cast from me, having no hope of its ever filling again. And thus in the end, though after a considerable circuit, I again returned to the kitchen-hearth, to the landlady and the cook, where you were first introduced to me."

CHAPTER XVII.

LENARDO was overwhelmed with business, his writing-office in the greatest activity; clerks and secretaries finding no moment's rest; while Wilhelm and Friedrich, strolling over field and meadow, were entertaining each other with the most pleasant conversation.

And here, first of all, as necessarily happens between friends meeting after some separation, the question was started: How far they had altered in the interim? Friedrich would have it that Wilhelm was exactly the same as before: to Wilhelm again it seemed that his young friend, though no whit abated in mirth and discursiveness, was somewhat more staid in his manner. "It were pity," interrupted Friedrich, "if the father of three children, the husband of an exemplary matron, had not likewise gained a little in dignity of bearing."

Now, also, it came to light, that all the persons whom we got acquainted with in the *Apprenticeship* were still living and well; nay better than before; being now in full and decisive activity; each, in his own way, associated with many fellow-labourers, and striving towards the noblest aim. Of this, however, it is not for the present permitted us to impart any more precise information; as, in a little book like ours, reserve and secrecy may be no unseemly qualities.

But whatever, in the course of this confidential conversation,

transpired respecting the Society in which we now are, as their more intimate relations, maxims and objects, by little and little, came to view, it is our duty and opportunity to disclose in this place.

"The whim of Emigration," such was the substance of Friedrich's talk on this matter, "the whim of Emigration may, in straitened and painful circumstances, very naturally lay hold of men; if particular cases chance to be favoured by a happy issue, this whim will, in the general mind, rise to the rank of passion; as we have seen, as we still see, and withal cannot deny that we, in our time, have been befooled by such a delusion ourselves.

"Emigration takes place in the treacherous hope of an improvement in our circumstances; and it is too often counterbalanced by a subsequent emigration; since, go where you may, you still find yourself in a conditional world, and if not constrained to a new emigration, are yet inclined in secret to cherish such a desire.

"We have therefore bound ourselves to renounce all Emigration, and to devote ourselves to Migration. Here one does not turn his back on his native country forever; but hopes, even after the greatest circuit, to arrive there again, richer, wiser, cleverer, better, and whatever else such a way of life can make him. Now, in society all things are easier, more certain in their accomplishment, than to an individual; in which sense, my friend, consider what thou shalt observe here; for whatever thou mayest see, all and every part of it is meant to forward a great movable connexion among active and sufficient men of all classes.

"But, as where men are, manners are too, I may explain thus much of our constitution by way of preliminary: When two of our number anywhere by accident meet, they conduct themselves towards each other according to their rank and fashion, according to custom of handicraft or art, or by some other such mode adapted to their mutual relations. Three meeting together are considered as a Unity, which governs itself: but if a fourth join them, they instantly elect the BOND, one chief and three subjects. This Bond, however many more combine with them, can still only be a single newly-elected person; for, in the great as in the small scale, coregents are found to be mutually obstructive.

"Thou mayest observe that Lenardo unites, in this way, more than a hundred active and able men; unites, employs, calls home, sends forth; as tomorrow, an important day with us, thou wilt perceive and understand. Thou wilt then see the Bond dissolved; the multitude divided into smaller societies, and the Bond multiplied; all the rest will at the same time become clear to thee.

"But, for the present, I invite thee to a short bout of reading. Here, under the shadow of these whispering trees, by the side of this still-flowing water, let us peruse a story, this little paper, which Lenardo, from the rich treasures of his Collection, has intrusted to me; that so both of us may see thoroughly what a difference there is between a mad pilgrimage, such as many lead in the world, and a well-meditated, happily-commenced undertaking like ours, of which I shall at this time say no more in praise."

The quaint, fitful and most dainty story of *The Foolish Pilgrimess*, with which our two friends now occupied their morning, we feel ourselves constrained, not unreluctantly, by certain grave calculations, to reserve for some future and better season.

CHAPTER XVIII.

LENARDO having freed himself from business for an hour, took dinner with his friends; and at table he began to explain to them his family circumstances. His eldest sister was married. A rich brother-in-law, to the great satisfaction of the Uncle, had undertaken the management of all the estates; with him Valerina's husband was stoutly coöperating; they were labouring on the great scale; strengthening their enterprises by connexion with distant countries and places.

Here likewise our oldest friends once more make their appearance: Lothario, Werner, the Abbé, are on their side proceeding in the highest diligence, while Jarno occupies himself with mining. A general Insurance has been instituted; we discern a vast property in Land; and on this depends the existence of a large Wandering Society, the individual members of which, under the condition of the greatest possible usefulness, are recommended to all the world, are forwarded in every undertaking, and secured against all mischances; while they again, as scattered colonists, may be supposed to react on their mother country with favourable influences.

Throughout all this, we observe Lenardo recognised as the wandering Bond; in smaller and greater combinations, he, for most part, is elected: on him is placed the most unrestricted confidence.

So far had the disclosure, partly from Lenardo, partly from Friedrich, proceeded without let, when both of them on a sudden became silent, each seeming to have scruples about communi-

cating more. After a short pause, Wilhelm addressed them, and cried: "What new secret again suddenly overshadows the friendliest explanation? Will you again leave me in the lurch?"

"Not at all!" exclaimed Friedrich. "Do but hear me! He has found the Nutbrown Maid; and for her sake——"

"Not for her sake," interrupted Lenardo.

"And just for her sake!" persisted Friedrich. "Do not deceive yourself: for her sake you are changing yourself into a lawful vagabond; as some others of us, not, in truth, for the most praiseworthy purposes, have in times past changed ourselves into lawless vagrants."

"Let us go along calmly," said Lenardo: "our friend here must be made acquainted with the state of our affairs; but, in the first place, let him have a little touch of discipline for himself. You had found the Nutbrown Maid; but to me you refused the knowledge of her abode. For this I will not blame you: but what good did it do? To discover this secret, I was passionately incited; and, notwithstanding your sagacious caution, I at length came upon the right trace. You have seen the good Maiden yourself; her circumstances you have accurately investigated; and yet you did not judge them rightly. It is only the Loving who feels and discovers what the Beloved wishes and wants; he can read it in her from her deepest heart. Let this at present suffice: for explanation we have no time left today. Tomorrow I have the hottest press of business to front: next day we part. But for your information, composure and participating interest, accept this copy of a week from my Journal: it is the best legacy which I can leave you. By reading it, you will not indeed become wiser than you are and than I am: but let this for the present suffice. The nearest future, or a more remote one, will arrange and direct: that is to say, in this case, as in so many others, we know not what is to become of us."

By way of dessert, Lenardo received a packet, at the opening of which, he, with some tokens of surprise, handed a letter to Wilhelm. "What secrets, what speedy concerns can sister Hersilia have with our friend? 'To be delivered instantly, and opened privately, without the presence of any one, friend or stranger!' Let us give him all possible convenience, Friedrich; let us withdraw!" Wilhelm hastily broke open the sheet, and read:

Hersilia to Wilhelm.

Wherever this letter may reach you, my noble friend, to a certainty it will find you in some nook, where you are striving in

vain to hide from yourself. By making you acquainted with my two fair dames, I have done you a sorry service.

But wherever you may be lurking, and doubtless it will search you out, my promise is, that if, after reading this letter, you do not forthwith leap from your seat, and, like a pious pilgrim, appear in my presence without delay, I must declare you to be the manliest of all men: that is to say, the one most completely void of the finest property belonging to our sex; I mean Curiosity, which at this moment is afflicting me in its sharpest concentration.

In one word, then, your Casket has now got its key; this, however, none but you and I are to know. How it came into my hands, let me now tell you.

Some days ago, our Man of Law gets despatches from a distant Tribunal; wherein he was asked if, at such and such a time, there had not been a boy prowling about our neighbourhood, who had played all manner of tricks, and at length, in a rash enterprise, lost his jacket.

By the way this brat was described, no doubt remained with us but he was Fitz; the gay comrade whom Felix talked so much of, and so often wished back to play with him.

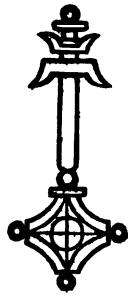
Now, for the present, those Authorities request that said article of dress may be sent to them, if it is still in existence; as the boy, at last involved in judicial examinations, refers to it. Of this demand our Lawyer chances to make mention; he shows us the little frock before sending it off.

Some good or evil spirit whispers me to grope the breast-pocket: a little angular prickly Something comes into my hand; I, so timorous, ticklish and startlish as I usually am, clench my hand, clench it, hold my peace, and the jerkin is sent away. Directly, of all feelings, the strangest seizes me. At the first stolen glance, I saw, I guessed that it was the key of your little Box. And now came wondrous scruples of conscience, and all sorts of moral doubts. To discover, to give back my windfall, was impossible; what have those long-wigged judges to do with it, when it may be so useful to my friend! And then, again, all manner of questions about Right and Duty begin lifting up their voices; but I would not let them outvote me.

From this you perceive into what a situation my friendship for you has reduced me: a choice faculty develops itself, all on a sudden, for your sake; what an occurrence! May it not be something more than Friendship that so holds the balance of my conscience? Between guilt and curiosity I am wonderfully discomposed; I have a hundred whims and stories about what may follow: Law and Judgment will not be trifled with. Hersilia, the

careless, and as occasion served, capricious Hersilia, entangled in a criminal process, for this is the scope and tendency of it! And what can I do, but think of the friend for whose sake I suffer all this? I thought of you before, yet with pauses: but now I think of you incessantly; now when my heart throbs, and I think of the Eighth Commandment, I must turn to you, as to the Saint, who has caused this sin, and will also procure me an absolution: thus the opening of the Casket is the only thing that can compose me. My curiosity is growing stronger and doubly strong: come and bring the Casket with you! To what judgment-seat it properly belongs we will make out between us: till then let it remain between us; no one must know of it, be who he will.

But now, in conclusion, look here, my friend! And tell me, what say you to this picture of the riddle? Does it not remind you of Arrows with barbs? God help us! But the Box must first stand unopened between you and me; and then when opened, tell us farther what we have to do. I wish there were nothing whatever in it; and who knows what all I wish, and what all I could tell: but do you look at this, and hasten so much the faster to get upon the road.



Friedrich returned more gay and lively than he had gone: "Good news!" cried he: "good luck! Lenardo has received some pretty letters, to facilitate the parting: credit more than sufficient; and thou too shalt have thy share in it. Fortune herself surely knows not what she is about; for once in her time she has done wise worthy fellows a favour."

Hereupon he handed to his friend some clipped fragments of maps, with directions where they were to be produced, and changed for hard cash or bills, as he might choose. Wilhelm was obliged to accept them, though he kept assuring his companion, that for the present he had no need of such things. "Then others will

need them!" cried Friedrich: "constrain not thy good feelings; and wherever thou art, appear as a benefactor. But now come along, let us have a look at this manuscript: it is long till night; one tires of talking and listening, so I have begged some writing for our entertainment. Every leaf in Lenardo's Archives is penned in the spirit of the whole: in giving me this, he said: 'Well, take it, and read it; our friend will acquire more confidence in our Society and Bond, the more good members he becomes acquainted with.'" The two then retired to a cheerful spot; and Friedrich read, enlivening with much natural energy and mirth, what he found set down for him.

WHO CAN THE TRAITOR BE?

"No! No!" exclaimed he, violently and hastily rushing into the chamber allotted him, and setting down his candle: "No! it is impossible! But whither shall I turn? For the first time, I think otherwise than he; for the first time, I feel, I wish otherwise. O father! couldst thou but be present invisibly, couldst thou but look through and through me, thou wouldst see that I am still the same, still thy true, obedient, affectionate son. Yet to say No! To contradict my father's dearest, long-cherished wish! How shall I disclose it? How shall I express it? No, I cannot marry Julia! While I speak of it, I shudder. And how shall I appear before him, tell him this, him the good, kind father? He looks at me with astonishment, without speaking: the prudent, clear-sighted, gifted man can find no words. Woe is me! Ah, I know well to whom I would confide this pain, this perplexity; who it is I would choose for my advocate! Before all others, thou, Lucinda! And I would first tell thee how I love thee, how I give myself to thee, and pressingly entreat thee to speak for me; and if thou canst love me again, if thou wilt be mine, to speak for us both."

To explain this short pithy monologue will require some details.

Professor N. of N. had an only boy of singular beauty, whom, till the child's eighth year, he had left entirely in charge of his wife. This excellent woman had directed the hours and days of her son, in living, learning and all good behaviour. She died; and the father instantly felt, that to prosecute this parental tutelage was impossible. In their lifetime, all had been harmony between the parents; they had laboured for a common aim, had determined in concert what was next to be done; and the mother had not wanted skill to execute wisely, by herself, what the two *had* planned together. Double and treble was now the widower's

anxiety, seeing, as he could not but daily see, that for the sons of professors, even in universities, it was only by a sort of miracle that a happy education could be expected.

In this strait he applied to his friend the Oberamtmann of R., with whom he had already been treating of plans for a closer alliance between their families. The Oberamtmann gave him counsel and assistance; so the son was established in one of those Institutions, which still flourish in Germany, and where charge is taken of the whole man, and body, soul and spirit are trained with all attention.

The son was thus provided for; the father, however, felt himself very lonely: robbed of his wife; shut out from the cheerful presence of the boy, whom he had seen, without effort of his, growing up in such desirable culture. But here again the friendship of the Oberamtmann served him in good stead: the distance of their abodes vanished before his affection, his desire for movement, for diversion of thought. In this hospitable home the widowed Man of Letters found, in a family-circle motherless like his own, two beautiful little daughters growing up in diverse loveliness; a state of things which more and more confirmed the fathers in their purpose, in their hope, of one day seeing their families united in the most joyful bonds.

They lived under the sway of a mild good Prince: the meritorious Oberamtmann was certain of his post during life; and in the appointment of a successor, his recommendation was likely to go far. And now, according to the wise family arrangement, sanctioned also by the Minister, Lucidor was to train himself for the important office of his future father-in-law. This in consequence he did from step to step. Nothing was neglected in communicating to him all sorts of knowledge, in developing in him all sorts of activity, which the State in any case requires: practice in rigorous judicial law; and also in the laxer sort, where prudence and address find their proper field; foresight for daily ways and means; not excluding higher and more comprehensive views, yet all tending towards practical life, and so as with effect and certainty to be employed in its concerns.

With such purposes had Lucidor spent his school-years: by his father and his patron, he was now warned to make ready for the university. In all departments he already showed the fairest talents; and to Nature he was farther indebted for the singular happiness of inclining, out of love for his father, out of respect for his friend, to turn his capabilities, first from obedience, then from conviction, on that very object to which he was directed. He was placed in a foreign university; and here, both by his own assiduity

in his letters, and by the testimony of his teachers and overseers, he continued walking in the path that led towards his appointed goal. It was only objected to him, that in certain cases he had been too impetuously brave. The father shook his head at this; the Oberamtmann nodded. Who would not have been proud of such a son?

Meanwhile, the two daughters, Julia and Lucinda, were waxing in stature and graces. Julia, the younger, waggish, lovely, unstable, highly entertaining; the other difficult to portray, for in her sincerity and purity she represented all that we prize most in woman. Visits were paid and repaid; and, in the Professor's house, Julia found the most inexhaustible amusement.

Geography, which he failed not to enliven by Topography, belonged to his province; and no sooner did Julia cast her eyes on any of the volumes, of which a whole series from Homann's Warehouse were standing there, than the cities all and sundry had to be mustered, judged, preferred or rejected: all havens especially obtained her favour; other towns, to acquire even a slight approval from her, must stand forth well supplied with steeples, domes and minarets.

Julia's father often left her for weeks to the care of his tried friend. She was actually advancing in knowledge of her science; and already the inhabited world, in its main features, in its chief points and places, stood before her with some accuracy and distinctness. The garbs of foreign nations attracted her peculiar attention; and often when her foster-father asked her in jest: If among the many young handsome men who were passing to and fro before her window, there was not some one or other whom she liked? she would answer: "Yes, indeed, if he do but look odd enough." And as our young students are seldom behindhand in this particular, she had often occasion to take notice of individuals among them: they brought to her mind the costume of foreign nations; however, she declared in the end, that if she was to bestow her undivided attention on any one, he must be at least a Greek, equipped in the complete fashion of his country; on which account, also, she longed to be at some Leipzig Fair, where, as she understood, such persons were to be seen walking the streets.

After his dry and often irksome labours, our Teacher had now no happier moments than those he spent in mirthfully instructing her; triumphing withal, in secret, that a being so attractive, ever entertaining, ever entertained, was in the end to be his own daughter. For the rest, the two fathers had mutually agreed, that no hint of their purpose should be communicated to the girls; from Lucidor, also, it was kept secret.

Thus had years passed away, as indeed they very lightly pass; Lucidor presented himself completed, having stood all trials to the joy even of the superior overseers, who wished nothing more heartily than being able, with a good conscience, to fulfil the hopes of old, worthy, favoured and deserving servants.

And so the business had at length by quiet regular steps come so far, that Lucidor, after having demeaned himself in subordinate stations to universal satisfaction, was now to be placed in a very advantageous post, suitable to his wishes and merits, and lying just midway between the University and the Oberamtmanship.

The father now spoke with his son about Julia, of whom he had hitherto only hinted, as about his bride and wife, without any doubt or condition; congratulating him on the happiness of having appropriated such a jewel to himself. The Professor saw in fancy his daughter-in-law again from time to time in his house; occupied with charts, plans and views of cities: the son recalled to mind the gay and most lovely creature, who, in times of childhood, had, by her rogueries as by her kindliness, always delighted him. Lucidor was now to ride over to the Oberamtmann's, to take a closer view of the full-grown fair one; and, for a few weeks, to surrender himself to the habitudes and familiarity of her household. If the young people, as was to be hoped, should speedily agree, the Professor was forthwith to appear, that so a solemn betrothment might forever secure the anticipated happiness.

Lucidor arrives, is received with the friendliest welcome, a chamber is allotted him; he arranges himself there, and appears. And now he finds, besides the members of the family already known to us, a grown-up son; misbred certainly, yet shrewd and good-natured; so that if you liked to take him as the jesting Counsellor of the party, he fitted not ill with the rest. There belonged, moreover, to the house, a very old, but healthy and gayhearted man; quiet, wise, discreet; completing his life, as it were, and here and there requiring a little help. Directly after Lucidor, too, there had arrived another stranger; no longer young, of an impressive aspect, dignified, thoroughly well-bred, and, by his acquaintance with the most distant quarters of the world, extremely entertaining. He was called Antoni.

Julia received her announced bridegroom in fit order, yet with an excess rather than a defect of frankness: Lucinda, on the other hand, did the honours of the house, as her sister did those of herself. So passed the day; peculiarly agreeable to all, only to Lucidor not: he, at all times silent, had been forced, that he might avoid sinking dumb entirely, to employ himself in asking questions; and in this attitude no one appears to advantage.

Throughout he had been absent-minded; for at the first glance he had felt, not aversion or repugnance, yet estrangement, towards Julia: Lucinda, on the contrary, attracted him, so that he trembled every time she looked at him with her full pure peaceful eyes.

Thus hard bested, he reached his chamber the first night, and gave vent to his heart in that soliloquy with which we began. But to explain this sufficiently, to show how the violence of such an emphatic speech agrees with what we know of him already, another little statement will be necessary.

Lucidor was of a deep character; and for most part had something else in his mind than what the present scene required: hence talk and social conversation would never prosper rightly with him; he felt this, and was wont to continue silent, except when the topic happened to be particular, on some department which he had completely studied, and of which, whatever he needed was at all times ready. Besides this, in his early years at school, and later at the university, he had been deceived in friends, and had wasted the effusions of his heart unhappily; hence every communication of his feelings seemed to him a doubtful step, and doubting destroys all such communication. With his father he was used to speak only in unison; therefore his full heart poured itself out in monologues, so soon as he was by himself.

Next morning he had summoned up his resolution; and yet he almost lost heart and composure again, when Julia met him with still more friendliness, gaiety and frankness than ever. She had much to ask; about his journeys by land and journeys by water; how, when a student, with his knapsack on his back, he had roamed and climbed through Switzerland, nay crossed the Alps themselves. And now of those fair islands on the great Southern Lake she had much to say; and then backwards, the Rhine must be accompanied from his primary origin; at first, through most undelicious regions, and so downwards through many an alternation, till at length, between Maynz and Coblenz, you find it still worth while respectfully to dismiss the old River from his last confinement, into the wide world, into the sea.

Lucidor, in the course of this recital, felt himself much lightened in heart; he narrated willingly and well, so that Julia at last exclaimed in rapture: "It is thus that our other self should be!" At which phrase Lucidor again felt startled and frightened; thinking he saw in it an allusion to their future pilgrimage in common through life.

From his narrative duty, however, he was soon relieved: for the stranger, Antoni, very speedily overshadowed all mountain streams, and rocky banks, and rivers whether hemmed in or left

at liberty. Under his guidance you now went forward to Genoa; Livorno lay at no great distance; whatever was most interesting in the country you took with you as fair spoil; Naples, too, was a place you should see before you died; and then, in truth, remained Constantinople, which also was by no means to be neglected. Antoni's descriptions of the wide world carried the imagination of every hearer along with him, though Antoni himself introduced little fire into the subject. Julia, quite enraptured, was still nowise satisfied: she longed for Alexandria, Cairo, and above all, for the Pyramids; of which, by the lessons of her intended father-in-law, she had gained some moderate knowledge.

Lucidor next night (he had scarcely shut his door; the candle he had not put down) exclaimed: "Now, bethink thee, then: it is growing serious! Thou hast studied and meditated many serious things: what avails thy law-learning, if thou canst not act like a man of law? View thyself as a delegate, forget thy own feelings, and do what it would behove thee to do for another. It thickens and closes round me horribly! The stranger is plainly come for the sake of Lucinda; she shows him the fairest, noblest social and hospitable attentions: that little fool would run through the world with any one for anything or nothing. Besides, she is a wag; her interest in cities and countries is a farce, by which she keeps us in silence. But why do I look at the affair so perplexedly, so narrowly? Is not the Oberamtmann himself the most judicious, the clearest, the kindest mediator? Thou wilt tell him how thou feelest and thinkest; and he will think with thee, if not likewise feel. With thy father he has all influence. And is not the one as well as the other his daughter? What would this Antoni the Traveller with Lucinda, who is born for home, to be happy and to make happy? Let the wavering quicksilver fasten itself to the Wandering Jew: that will be a right match."

Next morning Lucidor came down, with the firm purpose of speaking with the father; and waiting on him expressly to that end, at the hour when he knew him to be disengaged. How great was his vexation, his perplexity, on learning that the Oberamtmann had been called away on business, and was not expected till the day after the morrow! Julia, on this occasion, seemed to be expressly in her travelling fit; she kept by the world-wanderer, and, with some sportive hits at domestic economy, gave up Lucidor to Lucinda. If our friend, viewing this noble maiden from a certain distance, and under one general impression, had already, with his whole heart, loved her, he failed not now in this nearest nearness to discover with double and treble vividness in detail, all that had before as a whole attracted him.

The good old friend of the family now brought himself forward, in place of the absent father: he too had lived, had loved; and was now, after many hard buffetings and bruises of life, resting at last, refreshed and cheerful, beside the friend of his youth. He enlivened the conversation; and especially expatiated on perplexities in choice of wives; relating several remarkable examples of explanations, both in time and too late. Lucinda appeared in all her splendour. She admitted: That accident, in all departments of life, and so likewise in the business of marriage, often produced the best result; yet that it was finer and prouder when one could say he owed his happiness to himself, to the silent calm conviction of his heart, to a noble purpose and a quick determination. Tears stood in Lucidor's eyes as he applauded this sentiment: directly afterwards, the two ladies went out. The old president liked well to deal in illustrative histories; and so the conversation expanded itself into details of pleasant instances, which, however, touched our hero so closely, that none but a youth of as delicate manners as his could have refrained from breaking out with his secret. He did break out, so soon as he was by himself.

"I have constrained myself!" exclaimed he: "with such perplexities I will not vex my good father: I have forborne to speak; for I see in this worthy old man the substitute of both fathers. To him will I speak; to him disclose the whole: he will surely bring it about; he has already almost spoken what I wish. Will he censure in the individual case what he praises in general? To-morrow I visit him: I must give vent to this oppression."

At breakfast, the old man was not present; last night he had spoken, it appeared, too much; had sat too long, and likewise drunk a drop or two of wine beyond his custom. Much was said in his praise; many anecdotes were related; and precisely of such sayings and doings as brought Lucidor to despair for not having forthwith applied to him. This unpleasant feeling was but aggravated, when he learned that in such attacks of disorder the good old man would often not make his re-appearance for a week.

For social converse, a country residence has many advantages; especially when the owners of it have, for a course of years, been induced, as thinking and feeling persons, to improve the natural capabilities of their environs. Such had been the good fortune of this spot. The Oberamtmann, at first unwedded, then in a long happy marriage, himself a man of fortune, and occupying a lucrative post, had, according to his own judgment and perception, according to the taste of his wife, nay at last according to the wishes and whims of his children, laid out and forwarded many larger and smaller decorations; which by degrees being skilfully con-

nected with plantations and paths, afforded to the promenader a very beautiful, continually varying, characteristic series of scenes. A pilgrimage through these, our young hosts now proposed to their guest; as in general we take pleasure in showing our improvements to a stranger, that so what has become habitual in our eyes, may appear with the charm of novelty in his, and leave with him, in permanent remembrance, its first favourable impression.

The nearest, as well as the most distant part of the grounds, was peculiarly appropriate for modest decorations, and altogether rural individualities. Fertile hills alternated with well-watered meadows; so that the whole was visible from time to time, without being flat; and if the land seemed chiefly devoted to purposes of utility, the graceful, the attractive, was by no means excluded.

To the dwelling and office-houses were united various gardens, orchards and green spaces; out of which you imperceptibly passed into a little wood, with a broad, clear carriage-road winding up and down through the midst of it. Here, in a central spot, on the most considerable elevation, there had been a hall erected, with side-chambers entering from it. On coming through the main-door, you saw in a large mirror the most favourable prospect which the country afforded; and were sure to turn round that instant, to recover yourself on the reality from the effect of this its unexpected image; for the approach was artfully enough contrived, and all that could excite surprise was carefully hid till the last moment. No one entered but felt himself pleasurably tempted to turn from the mirror to Nature, and from Nature to the mirror.

Once in motion in this fairest, brightest, longest day, our party made a spiritual campaign of it, over and through the whole. Here the daughters pointed out the evening seat of their good mother, where a stately box-tree had kept clear space all round it. A little farther on, Lucinda's place of morning-prayer was half-roguishly exhibited by Julia: close to a little brook, between poplars and alders, with meadows sloping down from it, and fields stretching upwards. It was indescribably pretty. You thought you had seen such a spot everywhere, but nowhere so impressive and so perfect in its simplicity. In return for this, the young master, also half against Julia's will, pointed out the tiny groves and child's gardens, which, close by a snug-lying mill, were now scarcely discernible: they dated from a time when Julia, perhaps in her tenth year, had taken it into her head to become a milleress; intending, after the decease of the two old occupants, to assume the management herself, and choose some brave millman for her husband.

"That was at a time," cried Julia, "when I knew nothing of towns lying on rivers, or even on the sea; nothing of Genoa, of

Naples and the like. Your worthy father, Lucidor, has converted me; of late I come seldom hither." She sat down with a roguish air, on a little bench, that was now scarcely large enough for her; under an elder-bough, which had bent deeply towards the ground: "Fie on this cowering!" cried she; then started up, and ran off with her gay brother.

The remaining pair kept up a rational conversation; and in these cases reason approaches close to the borders of feeling. Wandering over changeful, simple natural objects, to contemplate at leisure how cunning scheming man contrives to gain some profit from them; how his perception of what is laid before him, combining with the feeling of his wants, does wonders, first in rendering the world inhabitable, then in peopling it, and at last in overpeopling it: all this could here be talked of in detail. Lucinda gave account of everything; and, modest as she was, she could not hide that these pleasant and convenient combinations of distant parts by roads, had been her work, under the proposal, direction, or favour of her revered mother.

But as the longest day at last bends down to evening, our party were at last forced to think of returning; and while devising some pleasant circuit, the merry brother proposed that they should take the short road, though it commanded no fine prospects, and was even in some places more difficult to get over. "For," cried he, "you have preached all day about your decorations and reparations, and how you have improved and beautified the scene for pictorial eyes and feeling hearts: let me also have my turn."

Accordingly they now set forth over ploughed grounds, by coarse paths, nay sometimes picking their way by stepping-stones in boggy places; till at last they perceived, at some distance, a pile of machinery towering up in manifold combination. More closely examined, it turned out to be a large apparatus for sport and games, arranged not without judgment, and in a certain popular spirit. Here, fixed at suitable distances, stood a large swing-wheel, on which the ascending and the descending riders might still sit horizontally, and at their ease; other see-saws, swing-ropes, leaping-poles, bowling and nine-pins courses, and whatever can be fancied for variedly and equally employing and diverting a crowd of people gathered on a large common. "This," cried he, "is my invention, my decoration! And though my father found the money, and a shrewd fellow the brain necessary for it, yet without me, whom you often call a person of no judgment, money and brain would not have come together."

In this cheerful mood, the whole four reached home by sunset. Antoni also joined them; but the little Julia, not yet satisfied with

this unresting travel, ordered her coach, and set forth on a visit to a lady of her friends, in utter despair at not having seen her for two days. The party left behind began to feel embarrassed before they were aware; it was even mentioned in words that the father's absence distressed them. The conversation was about to stagnate, when all at once the madcap sprang from his seat, and in a few moments returned with a book, proposing to read to the company. Lucinda forbore not to inquire how this notion had occurred to him, now for the first time in a twelvemonth. "Everything occurs to me," said he, "at the proper season: this is more than you can say for yourself." He read them a series of genuine Antique Tales: such as lead man away from himself, flattering his wishes, and making him forget all those restrictions, between which, even in the happiest moments, we are still hemmed in.

"What shall I do now!" cried Lucidor, when at last he saw himself alone. "The hour presses on: in Antoni I have no trust; he is an utter stranger, I know not who he is, how he comes to be here, nor what he wants; Lucinda seems to be his object; and if so, what can I expect of him? Nothing remains for me but applying to Lucinda herself: she must know of it, she before all others. This was my first feeling: why do we stray into sidepaths and subterfuges? My first thought shall be my last, and I hope to reach my aim."

On Saturday morning, Lucidor, dressed at an early hour, was walking to and fro in his chamber; thinking and conning over his projected address to Lucinda, when he heard a sort of jestful contention before his door, and the door itself directly afterwards went up. The mad younker was shoving in a boy before him, with coffee and baked ware for the guest; he himself carried cold meats and wine. "Go thou foremost," cried the younker: "for the guest must be first served; I am used to serve myself. My friend, today I am entering somewhat early and tumultuously: but let us take our breakfast in peace; then we shall see what is to be done; for of our company there is nothing to be hoped. The little one is not yet back from her friend; they two have to pour out their hearts together every fortnight, otherwise the poor dear hearts would burst. On Saturdays, Lucinda is good for nothing; she balances her household accounts for my father; she would have had me taking share in the concern, but Heaven forbid! When I know the price of anything, no morsel of it can I relish. Guests are expected tomorrow; the old man has not yet got refitted; Antoni is gone to hunt, we will do the same."

Guns, pouches and dogs were ready, as our pair stept down into the court; and now they set forth over field and hill, shooting

at best some leveret or so, and perhaps here and there a poor indifferent undeserving bird. Meanwhile they kept talking of domestic affairs, of the household and company at present assembled in it. Antoni was mentioned, and Lucidor failed not to inquire more narrowly about him. The gay younker, with some self-complaisance, asserted, that strange as the man was, and much mystery as he made about himself, he, the gay younker, had already seen through him and through him. "Without doubt," continued he, "Antoni is the son of a rich mercantile family, whose large partnership concern fell to ruin at the very time when he, in the full vigour of youth, was preparing to take a cheerful and active hand in their great undertakings, and withal to share in their abundant profits. Dashed down from the summit of his hopes, he gathered himself together, and undertook to perform for strangers what he was no longer in a case to perform for his relatives. And so he travelled through the world; became thoroughly acquainted with it and its mutual traffickings; in the mean while not forgetting his own advantage. Unwearied diligence and tried fidelity obtained and secured for him unbounded confidence from many. Thus in all places he acquired connexions and friends; nay it is easy to see that his fortune is as widely scattered abroad as his acquaintance; and accordingly his presence is from time to time required in all quarters of the world."

These things the merry younker told in a more circumstantial and simple style, introducing many farcical observations, as if he meant to spin out his story to full length.

"How long, for instance," cried he, "has this Antoni been connected with my father! They think I see nothing, because I trouble myself about nothing; but for this very reason, I see it better, as I take no interest in it. To my father he has intrusted large sums, who again has deposited them securely and to advantage. It was but last night that he gave our old dietetic friend a casket of jewels; a finer, simpler, costlier piece of ware I never cast my eyes on, though I saw this only with a single glance, for they make a secret of it. Most probably it is to be consigned to the bride for her pleasure, satisfaction and future security. Antoni has set his heart on Lucinda! Yet when I see them together, I cannot think it a well-assorted match. The hop-skip would have suited him better; I believe, too, she would take him sooner than the elder would. Many a time I see her looking over to the old curmudgeon, so gay and sympathetic, as if she could find in her heart to spring into the coach with him, and fly off at full gallop." Lucidor collected himself: he knew not what to answer; all that he heard obtained his internal approbation. The younker pro-

ceeded: "All along the girl has had a perverted liking for old people: I believe, of a truth, she would have skipped away and wedded your father, as briskly as she would his son."

Lucidor followed his companion, over stock and stone, as it pleased the gay youth to lead him: both forgot the chase, which at any rate could not be productive. They called at a farm-house, where, being hospitably received, the one friend entertained himself with eating, drinking and tattling; the other again plunged into meditations, and projects for turning this new discovery to his own profit.

From all these narrations and disclosures, Lucidor had acquired so much confidence in Antoni, that immediately on their return he asked for him, and hastened into the garden, where he was said to be. In vain! No soul was to be seen anywhere. At last he entered the door of the great Hall; and strange enough, the setting sun, reflected from the mirror, so dazzled him, that he could not recognise the two persons, who were sitting on the sofa; though he saw distinctly that it was a lady and a man, which latter was that instant warmly kissing the hand of his companion. How great, accordingly, was Lucidor's astonishment, when, on recovering his clearness of vision, he beheld Antoni sitting by Lucinda! He was like to sink through the ground: he stood, however, as if rooted to the spot; till Lucinda, in the kindest, most unembarrassed manner, shifted a little to a side, and invited him to take a seat on her right hand. Unconsciously he obeyed her, and while she addressed him, inquiring after his present day's history, asking pardon for her absence on domestic engagements, he could scarcely hear her voice. Antoni rose, and took his leave: Lucinda, resting herself from her toil, as the others were doing, invited Lucidor to a short stroll. Walking by her side, he was silent and embarrassed; she, too, seemed ill at ease: and had he been in the slightest degree self-collected, her deep-drawn breathing must have disclosed to him that she had heartfelt sighs to suppress. She at last took her leave, as they approached the house: he on the other hand turned round at first slowly, then at a violent pace to the open country. The park was too narrow for him; he hastened through the fields, listening only to the voice of his heart, and without eyes for the beauties of this loveliest evening. When he found himself alone, and his feelings were relieving their violence in a shower of tears, he exclaimed:

"Already in my life, but never with such fierceness, have I felt the agony which now makes me altogether wretched: to see the long-wished-for happiness at length reach me; hand-in-hand and arm-in-arm unite with me; and at the same moment announce its

eternal departure! I was sitting by her, I was walking by her; her fluttering garment touched me, and I have lost her! Reckon it not over, torture not thy heart with it; be silent, and determine!"

He laid a prohibition on his lips; he held his peace, and planned and meditated, stepping over field and meadow and bush, not always by the smoothest paths. Late at night, on returning to his chamber, he gave voice to his thoughts for a moment, and cried: "Tomorrow morning I am gone; another such day I will not front."

And so, without undressing, he threw himself on the bed. Happy, healthy season of youth! He was already asleep: the fatiguing motion of the day had earned for him the sweetest rest. Out of bright morning dreams, however, the earliest sun awoke him: this was the longest day in the year; and for him it threatened to be too long. If the grace of the peaceful evening-star had passed over him unnoticed, he felt the awakening beauty of the morning only to despair. The world was lying here as glorious as ever; to his eyes it was still so; but his soul contradicted it: all this belonged to him no longer; he had lost Lucinda.

His travelling-bag was soon packed; this he was to leave behind him; he left no letter with it; a verbal message in excuse of absence from dinner, perhaps also from supper, might be left with the groom, whom at any rate he must awaken. The groom, however, was awake already: Lucidor found him in the yard, walking with large strides before the stable-door. "You do not mean to ride?" cried the usually good-natured man, with a tone of some spleen. "To you I may say it; but young master is growing worse and worse. There was he driving about far and near yesterday; you might have thought he would thank God for a Sunday to rest in. And see, if he does not come this morning before daybreak, rummages about in the stable, and while I am getting up, saddles and bridles your horse, flings himself on it, and cries: 'Do but consider the good work I am doing! This beast keeps jogging on at a staid juridical trot, I must see and rouse him into a smart life-gallop.' He said something just so, and other strange speeches besides."

Lucidor was doubly and trebly vexed: he liked the horse, as corresponding to his own character, his own mode of life; it grieved him to figure his good sensible beast in the hands of a madcap. His plan, too, was overturned; his purpose of flying to a college friend, with whom he had lived in cheerful cordial union, and in this crisis seeking refuge beside him. His old confidence had been awakened, the intervening miles were not counted; he had fancied himself already at the side of his truehearted and judicious friend, finding counsel and assuagement from his words and looks. This prospect was now cut off: yet not entirely, if he

could venture with the fresh pedestrian limbs, which still stood at his command, to set forth towards the goal.

First of all, accordingly, he struck through the park; making for the open country, and the road which was to lead him to his friend. Of his direction he was not quite certain, when looking to the left, his eye fell upon the Hermitage, which had hitherto been kept secret from him; a strange edifice, rising with grotesque joinery through bush and tree: and here, to his extreme astonishment, he observed the good old man, who for some days had been considered sick, standing in the gallery under the Chinese roof, and looking blithely through the soft morning. The friendliest salutation, the most pressing entreaties to come up, Lucidor resisted with excuses and gestures of haste. Nothing but sympathy with the good old man, who, hastening down with infirm step, seemed every moment in danger of falling to the bottom, could induce him to turn thither, and then suffer himself to be conducted up. With surprise he entered the pretty little hall: it had only three windows, turned towards the park; a most graceful prospect: the other sides were decorated, or rather covered, with hundreds of portraits, copperplate or painted, which were fixed in a certain order to the wall, and separated by coloured borders and interstices.

"I favour you, my friend, more than I do every one; this is the sanctuary in which I peacefully spend my last days. Here I recover myself from all the mistakes which society tempts me to commit: here my dietetic errors are corrected, and my old being is again restored to equilibrium."

Lucidor looked over the place; and being well read in history, he easily observed that an historical taste had presided in its arrangement.

"Above, there, in the frieze," said the old virtuoso, "you will find the names of distinguished men in the primitive ages; then those of later antiquity; yet still only their names, for how they looked would now be difficult to discover. But here, in the main field, comes my own life into play: here are the men whose names I used to hear mentioned in my boyhood. For some fifty years or so, the name of a distinguished man continues in the remembrance of the people; then it vanishes, or becomes fabulous. Though of German parentage, I was born in Holland; and for me, William of Orange, Stadtholder, and King of England, is the patriarch of all common great men and heroes.

"Now, close by William, you observe Louis Fourteenth as the person who —" How gladly would Lucidor have cut short the good old man, had it but been permitted him, as it is to us the

narrators: for the whole late and latest history of the world seemed impending; as from the portraits of Frederick the Great and his generals, towards which he was glancing, was but too clearly to be gathered.

And though the kindly young man could not but respect his old friend's lively sympathy in these things, or deny that some individual features and views in this exhibitory discourse might be interesting; yet at college he had heard the late and latest history of Europe already; and what a man has once heard, he fancies himself to know forever. Lucidor's thoughts were wandering far away; he heard not, he scarcely saw: and was just on the point, in spite of all politeness, of flinging himself out, and tumbling down the long fatal stair, when a loud clapping of hands was heard from below.

While Lucidor restrained his movement, the old man looked over through the window, and a well-known voice resounded from beneath: "Come down, for Heaven's sake, out of your historic picture-gallery, old gentleman! Conclude your fasts and humiliations, and help me to appease our young friend, when he learns it. Lucidor's horse I have ridden somewhat hard; it has lost a shoe, and I was obliged to leave the beast behind me. What will he say? He is too absurd, when one behaves absurdly."

"Come up!" said the old man, and turned in to Lucidor: "Now, what say you?" Lucidor was silent, and the wild blade entered. The discussion of the business lasted long: at length it was determined to despatch the groom forthwith, that he might seek the horse and take charge of it.

Leaving the old man, the two younkers hastened to the house; Lucidor, not quite unwillingly, submitting to this arrangement. Come of it what might, within these walls the sole wish of his heart was included. In such desperate cases, we are, at any rate, cut off from the assistance of our free will; and we feel ourselves relieved for a moment, when, from any quarter, direction and constraint takes hold of us. Yet, on entering his chamber, he found himself in the strangest mood; like a man who, having just left an apartment of an inn, is forced to return to it, by the breaking of an axle.

The gay younker fell upon the travelling-bag, unpacking it all in due order, especially selecting every article of holyday apparel, which, though only on the travelling scale, was to be found there. He forced Lucidor to put on fresh shoes and stockings; he dressed for him his clustering brown locks, and decked him at all points with his best skill. Then stepping back, and surveying our friend and his own handiwork from head to foot, he exclaimed: "Now,

then, my good fellow, you do look like a man that has some protensions to pretty damsels; and serious enough, moreover, to spy about you for a bride. Wait one moment! You shall see how I too can produce myself, when the hour strikes. This knack I learned from your military officers; the girls are always glancing at them; so I likewise have enrolled myself among a certain Soldiery; and now they look at me too, and look again, and no soul of them knows what to make of it. And so, from this looking and relooking, from this surprise and attention, a pretty enough result now and then arises; which, though it were not lasting, is worth enjoying for the moment.

"But, come along, my friend, and do the like service for me! When you have seen me case myself by piecemeal in my equipment, you will not say that wit and invention have been denied me." He now led his friend through several long spacious passages of the old castle. "I have quite nestled myself here," cried he. "Though I care not for hiding, I like to be alone; you can do no good with other people."

They were passing by the office-rooms, just as a servant came out with a patriarchal writing-apparatus, black, massive and complete; paper, too, was not forgotten.

"I know what is to be blotted here again," cried the younker: "go thy ways, and leave me the key. Take a look of the place, Lucidor; it will amuse you till I am dressed. To a friend of justice, such a spot is not odious, as to a tamer of horses." And with this, he pushed Lucidor into the hall of judgment.

Lucidor felt himself directly in a well-known and friendly element; he thought of the days when he, fixed down to business, had sat at such a table; and listening and writing, had trained himself to his art. Nor did he fail to observe, that in this case an old stately domestic Chapel had, under the change of religious ideas, been converted to the service of Themis. In the repositories he found some titles and acts already familiar to him; in these very matters he had coöperated, while labouring in the Capital. Opening a bundle of papers, there came into his hands a rescript which he himself had dictated; another, of which he had been the originator. Handwriting and paper, signet and president's signature, everything recalled to him that season of juridical effort, of youthful hope. And here, when he looked round, and saw the Oberamtmann's chair, appointed and intended for himself; so fair a place, so dignified a circle of activity, which he was now like to cast away and utterly lose, all this oppressed him doubly and trebly, as the form of Lucinda seemed to retire from him at the same time.

He turned to go out into the open air, but found himself a prisoner. His gay friend, heedlessly or roguishly, had left the door locked. Lucidor, however, did not long continue in this durance: for the other returned; apologised for his oversight, and really called forth good humour by his singular appearance. A certain audacity of colour and cut in his clothes was softened by natural taste, as even to tattooed Indians we refuse not a certain approbation. "Today," cried he, "the tedium of bygone days shall be made good to us. Worthy friends, merry friends are come; pretty girls, roguish and fond; and my father to boot; and wonder on wonder! your father too. This will be a festival truly; they are all assembled for breakfast in the parlour."

With Lucidor, at this piece of information, it was as if he were looking into deep fog; all the figures, known and unknown, which the words announced to him, assumed a spectral aspect; yet his resolution, and the consciousness of a pure heart, sustained him: and, in a few seconds, he felt himself prepared for everything. He followed his hastening friend with a steady step, firmly determined to await the issue, be what it might, and explain his own purposes, come what come might.

And yet, at the very threshold of the hall, he was struck with some alarm. In a large half circle, ranged round by the windows, he immediately descried his father with the Oberamtmann, both splendidly attired. The two sisters, Antoni, and others known and unknown, he hurried over with a glance, which was threatening to grow dim. Half wavering, he approached his father; who bade him welcome with the utmost kindness, yet in a certain style of formality which scarcely invited any trustful application. Standing before so many persons, he looked round to find a place among them for a moment: he might have arranged himself beside Lucinda; but Julia, contrary to the rigour of etiquette, made room for him, so that he was forced to step to her side. Antoni continued by Lucinda.

At this important moment, Lucidor again felt as if he were a delegate; and, steeled by his whole juridical science, he called up in his own favour the fine maxim: That we should transact affairs delegated to us by a stranger, as if they were our own; why not our own, therefore, in the same spirit? Well practised in official orations, he speedily ran over what he had to say. But the company, ranged in a formal semicircle, seemed to out-flank him. The purport of his speech he knew well; the beginning of it he could not find. At this crisis, he observed on a table, in the corner, the large ink-glass, and several clerks sitting round it: the Oberamtmann made a movement as if to solicit attention for a

speech; Lucidor wished to anticipate him; and, at that very moment, Julia pressed his hand. This threw him out of all self-possession; convinced him that all was decided, all lost for him.

With the whole of these negotiations, these family alliances, with social conventions and rules of good manners, he had now nothing more to do: he snatched his hand from Julia's, and vanished so rapidly from the room, that the company lost him unawares, and he out of doors could not find himself again.

Shrinking from the light of day, which shone down upon him in its highest splendour; avoiding the eyes of men; dreading search and pursuit, he hurried forwards, and reached the large garden-hall. Here his knees were like to fail him; he rushed in, and threw himself, utterly comfortless, upon the sofa beneath the mirror. Amid the polished arrangements of society, to be caught in such unspeakable perplexity! It dashed to and fro like waves about him and within him. His past existence was struggling with his present; it was a frightful moment.

And so he lay for a time, with his face hid in the cushion, on which last night Lucinda's arm had rested. Altogether sunk in his sorrow, he had heard no footsteps approach; feeling some one touch him, he started up, and perceived Lucinda standing by his side.

Fancying they had sent her to bring him back, had commissioned her to lead him with fit sisterly words into the assemblage to front his hated doom, he exclaimed: "You they should not have sent, Lucinda; for it was you that drove me away. I will not return. Give me, if you are capable of any pity, procure me convenience and means of flight. For, that you yourself may testify how impossible it was to bring me back, listen to the explanation of my conduct, which to you and all of them must seem insane. Hear now the oath which I have sworn in my soul, and which I incessantly repeat in words: with you only did I wish to live; with you to enjoy, to employ my days, from youth to old age, in true honourable union. And let this be as firm and sure as aught ever sworn before the altar; this which I now swear, now when I leave you, the most pitiable of all men."

He made a movement to glide past her, as she stood close before him; but she caught him softly in her arms. "What is this!" exclaimed he.

"Lucidor!" cried she, "not pitiable as you think: you are mine, I am yours; I hold you in my arms; delay not to throw your arms about me. Your father has agreed to all; Antoni marries my sister."

In astonishment he recoiled from her: "Can it be?" Lucinda

smiled and nodded; he drew back from her arms. "Let me view once more, at a distance, what is to be mine so nearly, so inseparably?" He grasped her hands: "Lucinda, are you mine?"

She answered: "Well, then, yes," the sweetest tears in the truest eyes; he clasped her to his breast, and threw his head behind hers; he hung like a shipwrecked mariner on the cliffs of the coast; the ground still shook under him. And now his enraptured eye, again opening, lighted on the mirror. He saw her there in his arms, himself clasped in hers; he looked down, and again to the image. Such emotions accompany man throughout his life. In the mirror, also, he beheld the landscape, which last night had appeared to him so baleful and ominous, now lying fairer and brighter than ever; and himself in such a posture, on such a background! Abundant recompense for all sorrows!

"We are not alone," said Lucinda; and scarcely had he recovered from his rapture, when, all decked and garlanded, a company of girls and boys came forward, carrying wreaths of flowers, and crowding the entrance of the Hall. "This is not the way," cried Lucinda: "how prettily it was arranged, and now it is all running into tumult!" A gay march sounded from a distance; and the company were seen coming on by the large road in stately procession. Lucidor hesitated to advance towards them; only on her arm did he seem certain of his steps. She stayed beside him, expecting from moment to moment the solemn scene of meeting, of thanks for pardon already given.

But by the capricious gods it was otherwise determined. The gay clanging sound of a postilion's horn, from the opposite side, seemed to throw the whole ceremony into rout. "Who can be coming?" cried Lucinda. The thought of a strange presence was frightful to Lucidor; and the carriage seemed entirely unknown to him. A double-seated, new, spick-and-span new, travelling chaise! It rolled up to the hall. A well-dressed, handsome boy sprang down; opened the door; but no one dismounted; the chaise was empty. The boy stept into it; with a dextrous touch or two he threw back the tilts; and there, in a twinkling, stood the daintiest vehicle in readiness for the gayest drive, before the eyes of the whole party, who were now advancing to the spot. Antoni, outhastening the rest, led Julia to the carriage. "Try if this machine," said he, "will please you; if you can sit in it, and over the smoothest roads, roll through the world beside me: I will lead you by no other but the smoothest; and when a strait comes, we shall know how to help ourselves. Over the mountains sumpters shall carry us, and our coach also."

"You are a dear creature!" cried Julia. The boy came forward;

and, with the quickness of a conjuror, exhibited all the conveniences, little advantages, comforts and celerities of the whole light edifice.

"On Earth I have no thanks," cried Julia; "but from this little moving Heaven, from this cloud, into which you raise me, I will heartily thank you." She had already bounded in, throwing him kind looks and a kiss of the hand. "For the present you come not hither; but there is another whom I mean to take along with me in this proof excursion; he himself has still a proof to undergo." She called to Lucidor; who, just then occupied in mute conversation with his father and father-in-law, willingly took refuge in the light vehicle; feeling an irresistible necessity to dissipate his thoughts in some way or other, though it were but for a moment. He placed himself beside her; she directed the postilion where he was to drive. Instantly they darted off, enveloped in a cloud of dust; and vanished from the eyes of the amazed spectators.

Julia fixed herself in the corner as firmly and commodiously as she could wish. "Now do you shift into that one too, good brother; so that we may look each other rightly in the face."

Lucidor. You feel my confusion, my embarrassment: I am still as if in a dream; help me out of it.

Julia. Look at these gay peasants, how kindly they salute us! You have never seen the Upper Hamlet yet, since you came hither. All good substantial people there, and all thoroughly devoted to me. No one of them so rich that you cannot, by a time, do a little kind service to him. This road, which we whirl along so smoothly, is my father's doing; another of his benefits to the community.

Lucidor. I believe it, and willingly admit it: but what have these external things to do with the perplexity of my internal feelings?

Julia. Patience a little! I will show you the riches of this world and the glory thereof. Here now we are at the top! Do but look how clear the level country lies all round us leaning against the mountains! All these villages are much, much indebted to my father; to mother and daughters too. The grounds of yon little hamlet are the border.

Lucidor. Surely you are in a very strange mood: you do not seem to be saying what you meant to say.

Julia. But now look down to the left; how beautifully all this unfolds itself! The Church, with its high lindens; the Amthaus, with its poplars, behind the village knoll! Here, too, are the garden and the park.

The postilion drove faster.

Julia. The Hall up yonder you know: it looks almost as well here, as this scene does from it. Here, at the tree, we shall stop a

moment: now in this very spot our image is reflected in the large mirror: there they see us full well, but we cannot see ourselves.—Go along, postilion! There, some little while ago, two people, I believe, were reflected at a shorter distance; and, if I am not exceedingly mistaken, to their great mutual satisfaction.

Lucidor, in ill humour, answered nothing: they went on for some time in silence, driving very hard. "Here," said Julia, "the bad road begins: a service left for you to do, some day. Before we go lower, look down once more. My mother's boxtree rises with its royal summit over all the rest. Thou wilt drive," continued she to the postilion, "down this rough road; we shall take the footpath through the dale, and so be sooner at the other side than thou." In dismounting, she cried: "Well, now, you will confess, the Wandering Jew, this restless Antoni the Traveller, can arrange his pilgrimages prettily enough for himself and his companions: it is a very beautiful and commodious carriage."

And with this she tripped away down hill: Lucidor followed her, in deep thought; she was sitting on a pleasant seat; it was Lucinda's little spot. She invited him to sit by her.

Julia. So now we are sitting here, and one is nothing to the other. Thus it was destined to be. The little Quicksilver would not suit you. Love it you could not, it was hateful to you.

Lucidor's astonishment increased.

Julia. But Lucinda, indeed! She is the paragon of all perfections; and the pretty sister was once for all cast out. I see it, the question hovers on your lips: who has told us all so accurately?

Lucidor. There is treachery in it!

Julia. Yes, truly! There has been a Traitor at work in the matter.

Lucidor. Name him.

Julia. He is soon unmasked: You! You have the praiseworthy or blameworthy custom of talking to yourself: and now, in the name of all, I must confess that in turn we have overheard you.

Lucidor (starting up). A sorry piece of hospitality, to lay snares for a stranger in this way!

Julia. By no means! We thought not of watching you, more than any other. But, you know, your bed stands in the recess of the wall; on the opposite side is another alcove, commonly employed for laying up household articles. Hither, some days before, we had shifted our old man's bed; being anxious about him in his remote Hermitage: and here, the first night, you started some such passionate soliloquy, which he next morning took his opportunity of rehearsing.

Lucidor had not the heart to interrupt her. He withdrew.

Julia (rising and following him). What a service this discovery did us all! For I will confess, if you were not positively disagreeable, the situation which awaited me was not by any means to my mind. To be Frau Oberamtmannin, what a dreadful state! To have a brave gallant husband, who is to pass judgment on the people; and, for sheer judgment, cannot get to justice! Who can please neither high nor low; and, what is worst, not even himself! I know what my poor mother suffered from the incorruptibility, the inflexibility of my father. At last, indeed, but not till her death, a certain meekness took possession of him: he seemed to suit himself to the world, to make a truce with those evils which, till then, he had vainly striven to conquer.

Lucidor (stopping short; extremely discontented with the incident; vexed at this light mode of treating it). For the sport of an evening this might pass; but to practise such a disgracing mystification day and night against an unsuspicious stranger, is not pardonable.

Julia. We are all equally deep in the crime; we all hearkened you: yet I alone pay the penalty of eaves-dropping.

Lucidor. All! So much the more unpardonable! And how could you look at me, throughout the day, without blushing, whom at night you were so contemptuously overreaching? But I see clearly with a glance, that your arrangements by day were planned to make mockery of me. A fine family! And where was your father's love of justice all this while!—And Lucinda!—

Julia. And Lucinda! What a tone was that! You meant to say, did not you, How deeply it grieved your heart to think ill of Lucinda, to rank her in a class with the rest of us?

Lucidor. I cannot understand Lucinda.

Julia. In other words, this pure noble soul, this peacefully composed nature, benevolence, goodness itself, this woman as she should be, unites with a light-minded company, with a freakish sister, a spoiled brother, and certain mysterious persons! That is incomprehensible!

Lucidor. Yes, indeed, it is incomprehensible.

Julia. Comprehend it then! Lucinda, like the rest of us, had her hands bound. Could you have seen her perplexity, how fain she would have told you all, how often she was on the very eve of doing it, you would now love her doubly and trebly, if indeed true love were not always tenfold and hundredfold of itself. I can assure you, moreover, that all of us at length thought the joke too long.

Lucidor. Why did you not end it, then?

Julia. That, too, I must explain. No sooner had my father got intelligence of your first monologue, and seen, as was easy to do, that none of his children would object to such an exchange, than he determined on visiting your father. The importance of the business gave him much anxiety. A father alone can feel the respect which is due to a father. "He must be informed of it in the first place," said mine, "that he may not in the end, when we are all agreed, be reduced to give a forced and displeased consent. I know him well; I know how any thought, any wish, any purpose cleaves to him; and I have my own fears about the issue. Julia, his maps and pictures, he has long viewed as one thing; he has it in his eye to transport all this hither, when the young pair are once settled here, and his old pupil cannot change her abode so readily; on us he is to bestow his holydays; and who knows what other kind friendly things he has projected. He must forthwith be informed what a trick Nature has played us, while yet nothing is declared, nothing is determined." And with this, he exacted from us all the most solemn promise that we should observe you, and, come what might, retain you here till his return. How this return has been protracted; what art, toil and perseverance it has cost to gain your father's consent, he himself will inform you. In short, the business is adjusted; Lucinda is yours.

And thus had the two promenaders, sharply removing from their first resting-place, then pausing by the way, then speaking, and walking slowly through the green fields, at last reached the height, where another well-levelled road received them. The carriage came whirling up: Julia in the mean while turned her friend's attention to a strange sight. The whole machinery, of which her gay brother had bragged so much, was now alive and in motion; the wheels were already heaving up and down a multitude of people; the seesaws were flying; maypoles had their climbers; and many a bold artful swing and spring over the heads of an innumerable multitude you might see ventured. The younker had set all a-going, that so the guests, after dinner, might have a gay spectacle awaiting them. "Thou wilt drive through the Nether Hamlet," cried Julia; "the people wish me well, and they shall see how well I am off."

The Hamlet was empty: the young people had all run to the swings and seesaws; old men and women, roused by the driver's horn, appeared at doors and windows; every one gave salutations and blessings, exclaiming: "O what a lovely pair!"

Julia. There, do you hear? We should have suited well enough together after all; you may rue it yet.

Lucidor. But now, dear sister!——

Julia. Ha! Now dear, when you are rid of me?

Lucidor. One single word! On you rests a heavy accusation: what did you mean by that squeeze of the hand, when you knew and felt my dreadful situation? A thing so radically wicked I have never met with in my life before.

Julia. Thank Heaven, we are now quits; now all is pardoned. I had no mind for *you*, that is certain; but that you had utterly and absolutely no mind for me, this was a thing which no young woman could forgive; and the squeeze of the hand, observe you, was for the rogue. I do confess, it was almost too roguish; and I forgive myself, because I forgive you; and so let all be forgotten and forgiven! Here is my hand.

He took it; she cried: "Here we are again! In our park again; and so in a trice we whirl through the wide world, and back too; we shall meet again."

They had reached the garden-hall; it seemed empty; the company, tired of waiting, had gone out to walk. Antoni, however, and Lucinda, came forth. Julia stepping from the carriage flew to her friend; she thanked him in a cordial embrace, and restrained not the most joyful tears. The brave man's cheeks reddened, his features looked forth unfolded; his eye glanced moist; and a fair imposing youth shone through the veil.

And so both pairs moved off to join the company, with feelings which the finest dream could not have given them.

CHAPTER LAST.

"Thus, my friends," said Lenardo, after a short preamble, "if we survey the most populous provinces and kingdoms of the firm Earth, we observe on all sides that wherever an available soil appears, it is cultivated, planted, shaped, beautified; and in the same proportion, coveted, taken into possession, fortified and defended. Hereby we bring home to our conceptions the high worth of property in land; and are obliged to consider it as the first and best acquirement that can be allotted to man. And if on closer inspection we find parental and filial love, the union of countrymen and townsmen, and therefore the universal feeling of patriotism, founded immediately on this same interest in the soil, we cannot but regard that seizing and retaining of Space, in the great or the small scale, as a thing still more important and venerable. Yes, Nature herself has so ordered it! A man born on the glebe comes by habit to belong to it; the two grow together, and

the fairest ties are spun from their union. Who is there, then, that would spitefully disturb this foundation-stone of all existence; that would blindly deny the worth and dignity of such precious and peculiar gifts of Heaven?

"And yet we may assert, that if what man possesses is of great worth, what he does and accomplishes must be of still greater. In a wide view of things, therefore, we must look on property in land as one small part of the possessions that have been given us. Of these the greatest and the most precious part consists especially in what is movable, and in what is gained by a moving life.

"Towards this quarter, we younger men are peculiarly constrained to turn; for though we had inherited from our fathers the desire of abiding and continuing, we find ourselves called by a thousand causes nowise to shut our eyes against a wider outlook and survey. Let us hasten, then, to the shore of the Ocean, and convince ourselves what boundless spaces are still lying open to activity; and confess that, by the bare thought of this, we are roused to new vigour.

"Yet, not to lose ourselves in these vast expanses, let us direct our attention to the long and large surface of so many countries and kingdoms, combined together on the face of the Earth. Here we behold great tracts of land tenanted by Nomades; whose towns are movable, whose life-supporting household goods can be transferred from place to place. We see them in the middle of the deserts, on wide green pasturages, lying as it were at anchor in their desired haven. Such movement, such wandering, becomes a habit with them, a necessity; in the end they grow to regard the surface of the world as if it were not bulwarked by mountains, were not cut asunder by streams. Have we not seen the North-east flow towards the South-west, one people driving another before it, and lordship and property altogether changed?

"From over-populous countries, a similar calamity may again, in the great circle of vicissitudes, occur more than once. What we have to dread from foreigners, it may be difficult to say; but it is curious enough, that by our own over-population, we ourselves are thronging one another in our own domains, and without waiting to be driven, are driving one another forth, passing sentence of banishment each against his fellow.

"Here now is the place and season for giving scope in our bosoms, without spleen or anger, to a love of movement; for unfettering that impatient wish which excites us to change our abode. Yet, whatever we may purpose and intend, let it be accomplished not from passion, or from any other influence of force,

but from a conviction corresponding to the wisest judgment and deliberation.

"It has been said, and over again said: Where I am well, is my country! But this consolatory saw were better worded: Where I am useful, is my country! At home, you may be useless, and the fact not instantly observed; abroad in the world, the useless man is speedily convicted. And now, if I say: Let each endeavour everywhere to be of use to himself and others, this is not a precept, or a counsel, but the utterance of life itself.

"Cast a glance over the terrestrial ball, and for the present leave the ocean out of sight; let not its hurrying fleets distract your thoughts; but fix your eye on the firm earth, and be amazed to see how it is overflowed with a swarming ant-tribe, jostling and crossing, and running to and fro forever! So was it ordained of the Lord himself, when, obstructing the Tower of Babel, he scattered the human race abroad into all the world. Let us praise his name on this account, for the blessing has extended to all generations.

"Observe now, and cheerfully, how the young, on every side, instantly get into movement. As instruction is not offered them within doors, and knocks not at their gates, they hasten forthwith to those countries and cities whither the call of science and wisdom allures them. Here, no sooner have they gained a rapid and scanty training, than they feel themselves impelled to look round in the world, whether here and there some profitable experience, applicable to their objects, may not be met with and appropriated. Let these try their fortune! We turn from them to those completed and distinguished men, those noble inquirers into Nature, who wittingly encounter every difficulty, every peril, that to the world they may lay the world open, and, through the most Impassable, pave easy roads.

"But observe also, on beaten highways, how dust on dust, in long cloudy trains, mounts up, betokening the track of commodious top-laden carriages, in which the rich, the noble, and so many others, are whirled along; whose varying purposes and dispositions Yorick has most daintily explained to us.

"These the stout craftsman, on foot, may cheerily gaze after; for whom his country has made it a duty to appropriate foreign skill, and not till this has been accomplished, to revisit his paternal hearth. In still greater numbers do traffickers and dealers meet us on our road; the little trader must not neglect, from time to time, to forsake his shop, that he may visit fairs and markets, may approach the great merchant, and increase his own small profit, by example and participation of the boundless. But yet

more restlessly do we descry cruising on horseback, singly, on all high and by ways, that multitude of persons whose business it is, in lawful wise, to make forcible pretension to our purses. Samples of all sorts, prize-catalogues, invitations to purchase, pursue us into town-houses and country-houses, and wherever we may seek refuge: diligently they assault us and surprise us; themselves offering the opportunity, which it would have entered no man's mind to seek. And what shall I say of that People which, before all others, arrogates to itself the blessing of perpetual wandering, and by its movable activity contrives to overreach the resting, and to overstep the walking? Of them we must say neither ill nor good; no good, because our League stands on its guard against them; no ill, because the wanderer, mindful of reciprocal advantage, is bound to treat with friendliness whomsoever he may meet.

"But now, above all, we must mention with peculiar affection, the whole race of artists; for they, too, are thoroughly involved in this universal movement. Does not the painter wander, with pallet and easel, from face to face; and are not his kindred labourers summoned, now this way, now that, because in all places there is something to be built and to be fashioned? More briskly, however, paces the musician on his way; for he peculiarly it is that for a new ear has provided new surprise, for a fresh mind fresh astonishment. Players, too, though they now despise the cart of Thespis, still rove about in little choirs; and their moving world, wherever they appear, is speedily enough built up. So likewise, individually, renouncing serious profitable engagements, these men delight to change place with place, according as rising talents, combined with rising wants, furnish pretext and occasion. For this success they commonly prepare themselves, by leaving no important stage in their native land untrodden.

"Nor let us forget to cast a glance over the professorial class: these, too, you find in continual motion, occupying and forsaking one chair after the other, to scatter richly abroad on every side the seeds of a hasty culture. More assiduous, however, and of wider aim, are those pious souls who disperse themselves through all quarters of the world, to bring salvation to their brethren. Others, on the contrary, are pilgriming to seek salvation for themselves: they march in hosts to consecrated, wonder-working places, there to ask and receive what was denied their souls at home.

"And if all these sorts of men surprise us less by their wandering, as for most part, without wandering, the business of their life were impossible, of those again who dedicate their diligence to the soil, we should certainly expect that they, at least, were fixed.

By no means! Even without possession, occupation is conceivable; and we behold the eager farmer forsaking the ground which for years has yielded him profit and enjoyment; impatiently he searches after similar or greater profit, be it far or near. Nay, the owner himself will abandon his new-grubbed clearage so soon as, by his cultivation, he has rendered it commodious for a less enterprising husbandman: once more he presses into the wilderness; again makes space for himself in the forests; in recompense of that first toiling, a double and treble space; on which also, it may be, he thinks not to continue.

"There we shall leave him, bickering with bears and other monsters; and turn back into the polished world, where we find the state of things no whit more stationary. Do but view any great and regulated kingdom; the ablest man is also the man who moves the oftenest; at the beck of his prince, at the order of his minister, the Serviceable is transferred from place to place. To him also our precept will apply: Everywhere endeavour to be useful, everywhere you are at home. Yet if we observe important statesmen leaving, though reluctantly, their high stations, we have reason to deplore their fate; for we can neither recognise them as emigrators nor as migrators: not as emigrators, because they forego a covetable situation without any prospect of a better even seeming to open; not as migrators, because to be useful in other places is a fortune seldom granted them.

"For the soldier, again, a life of peculiar wandering is appointed; even in peace, now this, now that post is intrusted to him; to fight, at hand or afar off for his native country, he must keep himself perpetually in motion or readiness to move; and not for immediate defence alone, but also to fulfil the remote purposes of nations and rulers, he turns his steps towards all quarters of the world; and to few of his craft is it given to find any resting-place. And as, in the soldier, courage is his first and highest quality, so this must always be considered as united with fidelity; and accordingly we find certain nations, famous for trustworthiness, called forth from their home, and serving spiritual or temporal regents as body-guards.

"Another class of persons indispensable to governments, and also of extreme mobility, we see in those negotiators, who, despatched from court to court, beleaguer princes and ministers, and overnet the whole inhabited world with their invisible threads. Of these men also, no one is certain of his place for a moment. In peace, the ablest of them are sent from country to country; in war, they march behind the army when victorious, prepare the way for it when fugitive; and thus are they appointed still to be changing

place for place; on which account, indeed, they at all times carry with them a stock of farewell cards.

"If hitherto at every step we have contrived to do ourselves some honour, declaring as we have done the most distinguished portion of active men to be our mates and fellows in destiny, there now remains for you, my beloved friends, by way of termination, a glory higher than all the rest, seeing you find yourselves united in brotherhood with princes, kings and emperors. Think first, with blessings and reverence, of the imperial wanderer Hadrian, who on foot, at the head of his army, paced out the circle of the world which was subject to him, and thus in very deed took possession of it. Think then with horror of the Conqueror, that armed Wanderer, against whom no resistance availed, no wall or bulwark could shelter armed nations. In fine, accompany with honest sympathy those hapless exiled princes, who, descending from the summit of the height, cannot even be received into the modest guild of active wanderers.

"And now while we call forth and illustrate all this to one another, no narrow despondency, no passionate perversion can rule over us. The time is past when people rushed forth at random into the wide world: by the labours of scientific travellers describing wisely and copying like artists, we have become sufficiently acquainted with the Earth, to know moderately well what is to be looked for everywhere.

"Yet for obtaining perfect information an individual will not suffice. Our Society is founded on the principle that each in his degree, for his purposes, be thoroughly informed. Has any one of us some country in his eye, towards which his wishes are tending, we endeavour to make clear to him, in special detail, what was hovering before his imagination as a whole: to afford each other a survey of the inhabited and inhabitable world, is a most pleasant and most profitable kind of conversation.

"Under this aspect, we can look upon ourselves as members of a Union belonging to the world. Simple and grand is the thought; easy is its execution by understanding and strength. Unity is all-powerful; no division, therefore, no contention among us! Let a man learn, we say, to figure himself as without permanent external relation; let him seek consistency and sequence not in circumstances but in himself; there will he find it; there let him cherish and nourish it. He who devotes himself to the most needful will in all cases advance to his purpose with greatest certainty: others again, aiming at the higher, the more delicate, require greater prudence even in the choice of their path. But let a man be attempting or treating what he will, he is not, as an individual, suffi-

cient for himself; and to an honest mind, society remains the highest want. All serviceable persons ought to be related with each other, as the building proprietor looks out for an architect, and the architect for masons and carpenters.

"How and on what principle this Union of ours has been fixed and founded, is known to all. There is no man among us, who at any moment could not to proper purpose employ his faculty of action; who is not assured that in all places, whither chance, inclination, or even passion may conduct him, he will be received, employed, assisted; nay in adverse accidents, as far as possible, refitted and indemnified.

"Two duties we have most rigorously undertaken: first, to honour every species of religious worship, for all of them are comprehended more or less directly in the Creed: secondly, in like manner to respect all forms of government; and since every one of them induces and promotes a calculated activity, to labour according to the wish and will of constituted authorities, in whatever place it may be our lot to sojourn, and for whatever time. Finally, we reckon it our duty, without pedantry or rigour, to practise and forward decorum of manners and morals, as required by that Reverence for Ourselves, which arises from the Three Reverences; whereto we universally profess our adherence; having all had the joy and good fortune, some of us from youth upwards, to be initiated likewise in the higher general Wisdom taught in certain cases by those venerable men. All this, in the solemn hour of parting, we have thought good once more to recount, to unfold, to hear and acknowledge, as also to seal with a trustful Farewell.

Keep not standing fix'd and rooted,
Briskly venture, briskly roam!
Head and hand, where'er thou foot it,
And stout heart are still at home.
In each land the sun does visit
We are gay whate'er betide;
To give space for wand'ring is it
That the world was made so wide."

GENERAL INDEX

TO THE

COLLECTED WORKS OF THOMAS CARLYLE.

GENERAL INDEX.

ABBAYE, massacres at, viii. 147; Jourgniac, Sicard, and Maton's account of doings there, 150-5. See Prison.
Abbot, Colonel, in Ireland, xi. 87, 141.
Abb's Head, St., described, xi. 178.
Aberdeen Provost, at Dunbar fight, xi. 186. See Jaffray.
Able Man, the, the born soldier of Truth and Order, xiii. 109; appointed by 'divine right' to govern, 126; methods of summoning aloft, 166. See Wisest Man.
Action the true end of Man, vi. 96, 98.
Actual, the, the true Ideal, vi. 119, 121.
Adamitism, vi. 34.
Adieu, ii. 355.
Administrative Reform, xiii. 98, 120. See Downing Street.
Adolphus, Gustavus, death of, i. 185.
Affectation, difference between, and genuine originality, ii. 10, 14; the bane of literature, 203.
Afflictions, merciful, vi. 117.
Age, admonitions of our, i. 343. See Epoch.
Agincourt, Shakspeare's battle of, vi. 267.
Agoust, Captain d', seizes two Parlementeers, vii. 80.
Aiguillon, Duke d', at Quiberon, vii. 4; account of, 4; in favour, 5; at death of Louis XV., 19.
Aintrigues, Count d', notice of, vii. 93.
Alablaster, Dr., preaches Popery, x. 50.
Albans, St., Commission of Array at, x. 107. See Army.
Albert, Prince, Saxon Line of, v. 338 (see Ernestine Line); his Horoscope and Pedigree, 361.
—— *Achilles*, Elector of Brandenburg, v. 340.
—— *Alcibiades*, v. 355.
—— the Courageous, v. 350.
Albertine Line of Saxon Princes, v. 350.
Alfieri and Schiller contrasted, i. 64.
Ali, young, Mahomet's kinsman and convert, vi. 228.
Alison, Dr., ix. 72, 186.
Allegory, the sportful shadow of earnest Faith, vi. 152, 188, 207.
Allen, Trooper, examined, x. 223; Ludlow's mistake concerning, xii. 67.
—— Adjutant-General, his account of Prayer-Meeting at Windsor, x. 263-6; disturbances by, xii. 67-70.
Allertoun House, Cromwell at, xi. 271-3.
Almacks, high Art at, ii. 194; gum-flowers of, to be made living roses of Eden, iv. 299.
Altar, of Fatherland, in Champ-de-Mars, vii. 270; petition and scene at, viii. 34; christening at, 81.
Alured, Thomas, M.P., letter by, x. 46.
—— Col. Matthew, captures Scots Committee, xi. 299; Anabaptist, cashiered, xii. 10-12; Cromwell's letter to, 11.
—— Col. John, King's Judge, xii. 12.
Alyth, Scots Committee extinguished at, xi. 299.
Ambition, ii. 236; v. 115, 158, 172, 182; vi. 63; foolish charge of, 352; laudable ambition, 354. See Love of Power.
America: see United States.
American Cousins, our, no Model Commonwealth, xiii. 43; their noblest Battle yet to fight, 44, 200.
Amiral, assassin, viii. 332; guillotined, 335.
Amps, Mr. Thomas, plotting at his house, xii. 4.
Amusements, unveracious, v. 329.
Anabaptists favoured by Cromwell, x. 176.
Anarchy or open 'Kinglessness,' xiii. 33; Constituted Anarchy, 50, 190, 215; Sorcerer's Sabbath of, 264.
Anger, ix. 142.
Anglas, Boissy d', President, First of Prairial, viii. 365.
Angoulême, Duchesse d', parts from her father, viii. 209.
Angremont, Collenot d', guillotined, viii. 133.
Animal attachments, v. 170; a wise little Blenheim cocker, 171; likeness to man, 171.
Ankarström: see Sweden.
Anselm, travelling to Rome, ix. 263.
Antichrist, xi. 108; designated by Cromwell, xii. 22, 24; Magistracy considered Antichristian, 23; Spain, 124, 152.
Antoine, St. (see Riot), to Versailles, vii. 202, 208; War-horse supper, 210; closes shops (Nanci affair), 294; at Vincennes, 328; at Jacobins, viii. 81; and Marseillese, 105; August Tenth, 115.
Antoinette, Marie, v. 11, 20, 30, 45; splendour of, vii. 27; applauded, 33; compromised by Diamond Necklace, 46; griefs of, 74, 116; her presentiments, 85; weeps, unpopular, 174; at dinner of Guards, 193; courage of, 214; Fifth October, at Versailles, 217; shows herself to mob, 221; and Louis at Tuileries,

232; and the Lorrainer, 274; and Mirabeau, 323, 334; previous to flight, viii. 7; flight from Tuileries, 9; captured, 25; and Barnave, 31; in dilemma, 59; Coblentz intrigues, 59; and Lamotte's Mémoires, 71; during Twentieth June, 89; during Tenth August, 114, 116; behaviour as captive, 122; and Princess de Lamballe, 149; in Temple Prison, 188; parting scene with King, 209; to the Conciergerie, 275; trial of, 276; on quitting Vienna, 277; guillotined, 278.
Apes, Dead-Sea, ix. 189, 240, 241.
Apologue, the age of, iii. 285.
Applauders, hired, viii. 60, 67.
Apprentices, riots of, x. 93, 96, 232, 262.
Apprenticeships, vi. 74.
Approval, rightly or wrongly given, xiii. 224, 234.
Aprons, use and significance of, vi. 25.
Arab Poets, ix. 137.
Arabia and the Arabs, vi. 220.
Ardes, Lord of, assists Ormond, xi. 54; at Wexford, 70; at Ross, 72.
Argonne Forest, occupied by Dumouriez, viii. 142; Brunswick at, 165.
Argyle, Marquis, dines with Cromwell, x. 326; Cromwell's letter to, 308; his party in 1650, xi. 220.
Aristocracy, our, a word to, iv. 177; a glimpse of Self-vision for them, v. 327; Ominous condition of, ix. 31, 39, 54; an Aristocracy a corporation of the Best and Bravest, 34; old Feudal Aristocracies, 36, 38; Aristocracy of Talent, 91; dreadfully difficult to attain, 93, 96, 258; our Phantasm-Aristocracy, 180, 204, 207, 222, 228, 240, 290, 301; duties of an Aristocracy, 203, 208, 220; Working Aristocracy, 205, 209, 282, 302; no true Aristocracy but must possess the Land, 206, 262; Nature's Aristocracies, 236; a virtual Aristocracy everywhere and everywhen, 259; the Feudal Aristocracy no imaginary one, 261, 283; a true Aristocracy, or Government by the *Best*, xiii. 119; 'Aristocracy' of Popular Suffrage, 227, 240; veritable Hierarchy of Heaven, 234. See Peerage, Hierarchy.
Aristocrats, officers in French army, vii. 284; number of, in Paris, viii. 133; seized, 137; condition in 1794, 316.
Arklow, skirmish at, xi. 84.
Arkwright, Richard, historical importance of, ix. 51.
Arles, state of, viii. 55.
Arms, smiths making, vii. 141, 143; search for, 141; at Charleville, 143; at Hôtel des Invalides, 145-7; manufacture of, 332, viii. 2; in 1794, 308; scarcity of, in 1792, 134; Danton's search for, 137.
Armstrong, Sir Thomas, notice of, xi. 84.
Army, French, after Bastille, vii. 283-8; officered by aristocrats, 284; to be disbanded, 287; demands arrears, 288, 293; general mutiny of, 289; outbreak of, 289, 294, 295, 304; Nanci military executions, 303; Royalists leave, 310; bad state of, viii. 67, 82, 140, 167 (see Prussia, Austrian); in want, 185; recruited, 230, 273; Revolutionary, 274, 292, 303; fourteen armies on foot, 305, 312, 356.
Army, the, ix. 273; Equipments of, in 1651, xi. 279.
—— King's, and Parliament's, x. 97; of Parliament in 1643, 119, 132; New Model, 158, 177; motions of in 1645, 189; too near London, 218; against Parliament, 219, 230; state of in 1647, 222; at Saffron Walden, 225 (and *App.* xii. 399-402); Agitators in, 224, 225; will not disband, 225; Rendezvous at Newmarket, 225; at Royston, 226; comes to St. Albans, 227; Manifesto and claims of, 228; Declaration against, expunged, 232; advances to London, 233; enters London, 234; Prayer-Meeting at Windsor Castle, 264; against Treaty with Charles I., 333, 337; Remonstrance, 338; at Windsor, 338; in London, St. James's, &c., 345.
Arnald: see Levellers.
Arras, guillotine at, viii. 298. See Lebon.
Array, Commission of, x. 98,—see St. Albans; in Eastern Association, 107.
Arrestment of the knaves and dastards, ix. 97, 261.
Arrests in August 1792, viii. 138.
Arsenal, attempt to burn, vii. 147.
Art, a superabundance of, i. 321; a windy gospel, 326; biographic interest in, iv. 37; necessity for veracity, v. 334; all true works of, symbolic, vi. 137; the Fine Arts a 'Worship of the Beautiful,' xiii. 268; intolerable hypocrisy of, 270; taking into fiction, 274.
Arthur Coningsby, Sterling's first Novel, i. 238, 245, 262.
Artificial, the, as contrasted with the natural, iv. 10.
Artist, German ideal of the true, ii. 48, 171; in History, iii. 173; Opera Artists, v. 336; Artists in 1651, xi. 254, 255.
Artois, M. d', ways of, vii. 27; unpopularity of, 69; memorial by, 93; fled, 158; at Coblentz, viii. 64; will not return, 70.
Arundel, John, Cromwell's letter in behalf of, xii. 421.
Ascham, Anthony, slain in Spain, xii. 152, 163.
Ashburnham, Mr., notice of, xii. 15.
Ashby-de-la-Zouch, fortified, x. 116.
Ashe, John, M.P., notice of, x. 333, 336; Cromwell's letter to, 334.
Ashton, Col., at Preston, x. 281.
—— Sir Arthur, Governor of Tredah, xi. 49; killed, 52.
Ass, the, and the moon, iii. 55.
Assemblies, French, Primary and Secondary, vii. 95.
Assembly, National, Third Estate becomes, vii. 125 (see Estate Third); to be extruded, 126; stands grouped in the rain, 127; occupies Tennis-Court, 127; scene there, 128; joined by clergy, &c., 128, 131; doings on King's speech, 129-131; ratified by King, 131; cannon pointed at, 132; regrets Necker, 144; after Bastille, 156.
—— Constituent, National, becomes, vii. 167; pedantic, Irregular Verbs, 168; what it can do, 169; Night of Pentecost, 171 (and viii. 63); Left and Right side, 172 (and 238, 239, —see Side); dull, 173; raises money, 188; on the Veto, 188; Fifth October, women, 203, 209, 212; in Paris Riding-Hall, 232; on deficit, assignats, 235; on clergy, 236; and

riot, 242; prepares for Louis's visit, 255; on Federation, 266; Anacharsis Clootz, 266, 267; eldest of men, 269; on Franklin's death, 278; on state of army, 290, 294; thanks Bouillé, 302; on Nanci affair, 303; on Emigrants, 329; on death of Mirabeau, 338; on escape of King, viii. 13; after capture of King, 31, 33; completes Constitution, 37; dissolves itself, 41; what it has done, 41.
Assembly, Legislative, First French Parliament, doings of, viii. 43-55; book of law, quarrel with King, 48; Baiser de Lamourette, 48; High Court, 70; decrees vetoed, 70; scenes in, 71; reprimands King's ministers, 72; smoked out, 73; declares war, 79, 84; Tenth June, 88; declares France in danger, 96, 100; reinstates Pétion, 99; brayed glass, 104; nonplus, Lafayette, 107, 108, 113; King and Swiss, August Tenth, 115-20; becoming defunct, 124, and 129, 130; September massacres, 156; dissolved, 171. See Convention, National.
—— General, answer Cromwell, xi. 166; his letter to, 167; not allowed to sit, 300. See Divines.
Assignats, origin of, vii. 235; false Royalist, viii. 65; forgers of, 148; coach-fare in, 360.
Associated Counties, origin of, x. 101, 110; raise an Army, 132.
Astley, Sir Bernard, taken, x. 184.
—— Sir Jacob, last of royalist generals, x. 199.
Astonishment, different quantities of, xiii. 120.
Atheism, how, melts into nothingness, iii. 76; Richter's Dream of, 163; an impossibility, iv. 116; proselyting Atheist, 229, 233; Atheism and Dupont, viii. 201; practical Atheism, ix. 186, 190.
Athenæum, copyright of the, changes hands, i. 223, 225, 238.
Attila: see Huns.
Aubriot, Sieur, after King's capture, viii. 27.
Aubry, Colonel, at Jalès, viii. 69.
Auch, M. Martin d', in Versailles Tennis-Court, vii. 128.
August Tenth (1792), viii. 108-123.
August the Strong, of the three-hundred-and-fifty-four bastards, v. 356.
Augustin, Mosstrooper, xi. 227, 251, 252.
Austria, its quarrel with France, viii. 63. See Brunswick, Duke of.
Austrian Committee, at Tuileries, viii. 61.
—— Army, invades France, viii. 136; unsuccessful there, 172; defeated at Jemappes, 191; Dumouriez escapes to, 240; repulsed, Watigny, 311.
Aviguon, Union of, viii. 40; described, 50; state of, 50; riot in church at, 52; occupied by Jourdan, 52; massacre at, 53.
Axtel, Col., regicide, xii. 69.
Aylesbury, Rupert at, x. 112.
Ayr Citadel built by Cromwell, xi. 301.
Ayscough, Sir George, notice of, xi. 40, 41, 364; his house like a ship at sea, xii. 157.

Baas, M. de, intriguer, xii. 435.
Babœuf insurrection, viii. 375.
Bacon, Nathaniel, author of Burton's Diary, xii. 212 n.
—— Roger, iii. 269.
Badness by its nature negative, iv. 60. See Evil.
Baffometus, Werner's parable of, ii. 76.
Baille, involuntary epigram of, viii. 74.
Baillie, General, at Preston fight, x. 280; perplexed, 288; surrenders, 288, 293.
—— the Covenanter, v. 223-248; Scotch Encampment on the Hill of Dunse, 233; domesticities of Kilwinning, 236; Impeachment and trial of Strafford, 239; on Scots Demands, x. 86; Apprentices in Palace-yard, 93; flies from Glasgow, xi. 223; is at Perth, 232; sees Cromwell in Glasgow, 270.
Bailly, Astronomer, account of, vii. 113; President of National Assembly, 125; Mayor of Paris, 157; receives Louis in Paris, 159; and Paris Parlement, 236; on Petition for Deposition, viii. 34; decline of, 74; in prison, 276; at Queen's trial, 276; guillotined cruelly, 290.
Baker, hanged, vii. 241.
Bakers', French in tail at, vii. 181, 315; viii. 187, 217, 360.
Balaam and his Ass, iv. 178.
Balder, the white Sungod, vi. 198, 210; x. 9.
Ballet-girls, v. 327.
Balloons invented, vii. 41; used by spies, viii. 315.
Ballot-box delusion, xiii. 208.
Balmung, the wonderful Sword, iii. 232.
Baltimore, Lord, and Maryland, xii. 65.
Bamfield, Col., spy, x. 215; xii. 202.
Bankruptcy of Imposture, xiii. 37, 134, 269.
Banks, Mr., on Cromwell, x. 13.
Bannockburn, Cromwell at, xi. 278.
Baphometic Fire-baptism, vi. 103.
Barbadoes, delinquents sent to, xii. 100.
Barbarous nations, records of, x. 4.
Barbaroux, and Marat, vii. 240; Marseilles Deputy, viii. 55; and the Rolands, 55; on Map of France, 85; demand of, to Marseilles, 86; meets Marseillese, 105; in National Convention, 164; against Robespierre, 184; cannot be heard, 193; the Girondins declining, 227; will not demit, 250; arrested, 252; and Charlotte Corday, 255; retreats to Bourdeaux, 262, 272; farewell of, 280; shoots himself, 281.
Barber, the, at Lille, viii. 172.
Barbone, Mr. Praisegod, account of, xi. 335.
Barclay of Ury, Scotch Quaker, xi. 249.
Bardy, Abbé, massacred, viii. 151.
Barebones's Parliament, xi. 335, 362.
Barentin, Keeper of Seals, vii. 125.
Barkstead, Col., a Major-General, xii. 119 n., 171 n.
Barlow, Mrs., and Charles II., xi. 71.
Barnard, Robert, Justice of Peace, x. 53, 101; his descendants, 102; Cromwell's letters to, 102, 114.
Barnardiston, Sir Nathaniel, v. 299.
Barnave, at Grenoble, vii. 82; member of Assembly, 112; one of a trio, 173; too reckless, 233; Jacobin, 252; duel with Cazalès, 318; escorts the King from Varennes, viii. 30; conciliates Queen, 31; becomes Constitutional, 32; retires to Grenoble, 78; treason, in prison, 195; guillotined, 291.
Barnet, Col. Wogan at, xi. 94.
Barnum, Yankee-, methods, v. 333.

Barras, Paul-François, in National Convention, viii. 164; commands in Thermidor, 345; appoints Napoleon in Vendémiaire, 373.
Barrère, Editor, vii. 184; at King's trial, viii. 197; peace-maker, 226, 249; levy in mass, 273; Anacreon of Guillotine, 313; gives dinner-party, plot, 340; banished, 360.
Bartholomew massacre, viii. 159.
Barton, Col., in Scotland, xi. 285.
Basing House described, x. 191; taken, 191-6.
Bastille, Linguet's Book on, vii. 45; meaning of, 103; shots fired at, 145; summoned by insurgents, 148; besieged, 149; capitulates, 152; treatment of captured, 153; Quéret-Démery, 155; demolished, key sent to Washington, 163; Heroes, 164; Electors, displaced, 182; dance on ruins of, 279.
Bastwick, Dr. John, in pillory, x. 75; his Widow provided for, xii. 303.
Bates, Dr., sent to Cromwell in Scotland, xi. 274.
Battle, the, appointed for us all, i. 195; Sterling's gallant enthusiasm, 218, 219; pain and danger shall not be shirked, 237; a doomed voyage, 260, 264; the noblest struggle, with the Church, 271; the battle's fury rages everywhere, 343; each man for himself must wage it, 363; like a true son, not like a mutinous rebel, 396, 399.
Battle, Life-, our, iv. 33; vi. 53; with Folly and Sin, 76, 78; all Battle, misunderstanding, ix. 6.
Battle-field, a, vi. 106; ix. 219. See Fighting.
Battles, nature of, vii. 196. See Valmy, Jemappes, Nerwinden, Hondschooten, Watigny, Howe.
—— Edgehill, 23d Oct. 1642, x. 100; Grantham, 13th May 1643, 118, 119; Newbury (first), 20th Sept. 1643, 134; Winceby, 11th Oct. 1643, 142; Marston Moor, 2d July 1644, 151; Cropredy, 30th June 1644, 158; Newbury (second), 27th Oct. 1644, 159; Naseby, 14th June 1645, 173, and *App.* xii. 393-395; Langport, July 1645, xii. 397; Preston, 17th Aug. 1648, x. 279, and *App.* 405; Dunbar, 3d Sept. 1650, xi. 185-193, and *App.* xii. 418; Worcester, 3d Sept. 1651, xi. 290-6.
Baxter, Richard, opinion of Edgehill battle, x. 101; unfriendly to Cromwell, xii. 7.
Bazire, of Mountain, vii. 243; viii. 46; imprisoned, 307.
Beacham, Margery, case of, xii. 112, 113.
Beard, Dr., schoolmaster, x. 27, 50, 53.
Bearn, riot at, vii. 83.
Beauharnais, in Champ-de-Mars, vii. 272; Josephine, imprisoned, viii. 287; and Napoleon, at La Cabarus's, 353.
Beaumarchais, Caron, his law-suit, vii. 35; his 'Mariage de Figaro,' 47; commissions arms from Holland, viii. 134; his distress, 139.
Beaumont, Archbishop, notice of, vii. 14.
Beaurepaire, Governor of Verdun, shoots himself, viii. 141.
Becket, ix. 257, 264.
Bed of Justice, vii. 65.
Bede, Venerable, ix. 44.
Bedford, Earl, chief of Puritans, x. 91; General of Parliament horse, 100.
Bedford, Level, x. 77; xi. 332.
Beetle, the, ii. 355.
Beginnings, iv. 108; ix. 168.
Being, the lordliest Real-Phantasmagory, v. 4; vi. 32.
Belief, i. 286; vi. 118, 119; the true god-announcing miracle, 227, 242, 293, 315; war of, 338: French Belief, vii. 117. See Religion, Scepticism.
Believing, glory of knowing and, iii. 14; mystic power of belief, iv. 22, 28, 40, 61, 242; the least spiritual belief conceivable, 233; superstitious ditto, 278.
Benefactresses, ix. 234.
Benevolence, xiii. 74; Benevolent-Platform Fever, 78, 82.
Bennet, Richard Cromwell's letter to, xii. 65.
Bentham, Jeremy, naturalised, viii. 130.
Benthamism, vi. 241, 313; Benthamee-Radicalism, ix. 93.
Berkley, Sir John, tutor to Duke of York, xii. 202.
Berline (see Fersen), towards Varennes, viii. 16-22.
Berners's, Lord, ancestor, x. 204.
Berney, Sir Richard, fined, x. 110.
Bernhard of Weimar, v. 360.
Berry, Captain, slays General Cavendish, xii. 388, 391; Major, at Preston fight, x. 288; 200*l.* voted to, 296; Colonel, a Major-General, xii. 120 n.; in favour of Kingship, 301.
Berserkir-rage, deep-hidden in the Saxon heart, ix. 19, 198.
Berthier, Commandant, at Versailles, vii. 326.
—— Intendant, fled, vii. 158; arrested, 163; massacred, 162.
Berwick summoned by Cromwell, x. 307, 311.
Besenval, Baron, Commandant of Paris, on French Finance, vii. 51; in riot of Rue St. Antoine, 102; on corruption of Guards, 133, 135; at Champ-de-Mars, 144; apparition to, 146; decamps, 156; and Louis XVI., 174.
Bethel, Major, at Bristol siege, x. 186.
Béthune, riot at, vii. 134.
Beurnonville, with Dumouriez, imprisoned, viii. 239.
Bible, the, most earnest of books, i. 391; the 'Hebrew Bible,' iii. 88; iv. 161, 245; xiii. 159, 271; a History of the primeval Church, iii. 175; Bible of World-History, infinite in meaning as the Divine Mind it emblems, iv. 244; Bible of Universal History, vi. 108, 118; ix. 258; the Bible of a Nation, the authentic Biography of its Heroic Souls, xiii. 241, 271; our 'closed Bible,' 264. See Israelitish History.
—— Dr. Walton's Polyglott, xii. 431.
Biddle, Mr., Socinian, xii. 63.
Billaud-Varennes, Jacobin, viii. 73; cruel, 145; at massacres, Sept. 1792, 157; in Salut Committee, 305; and Robespierre's Etre Suprême, 334; accuses Robespierre, 343; accused, 359; banished, 360; at Surinam, 367.
Billingsley, butcher, in Gerard's plot, xii. 13.
Bill-stickers, Paris, vii. 260, 311.
Biography, a good, almost as rare as a well-spent life, ii. 1; iii. 122. Biography, iv. 36-48; the basis of all that can interest, 37; of spar-

rows and cockchafers, 47; need of brevity, 67; the highest Gospel a Biography, 79; 'respectable' English Biographies, v. 3, 140; no heroic poem but is at bottom a Biography, 138; biographic worth of a true portrait, 330; meaning and uses of biography, vi. 45; significance of biographic facts, 123; no Biography but wraps in it a message out of Heaven, xiii. 273.
Birch, Col., at Bristol siege, x. 183.
—— Dr., prints Hammond's letters, x. 247; as an Editor, xii. 125.
Birmingham riot, viii. 63.
Bishops, pretended Scotch, x. 33; Bishops, their lands sold, 71; xi. 317, &c.; insulted, protest, twelve sent to the Tower, x. 96.
—— our, and what comes of them, xiii. 50, 150, 268; not our ugliest anomalies, 231; our *new* Souls'-Overseers, 154.
Bishopsgate, mutiny in, xi. 25.
Black dragoon, a, in every parish, i. 218; considerably silvered over, 239.
Black Monday, xi. 316.
Blackwood's Magazine, Sterling's connexion with, i. 308, 313.
Blake, Col. Robert, relieved, x. 177; in Ireland, xi. 80; as Admiral, beats the Dutch, 316, 327; in little Parliament, 335; fires the Turkish ships, xii. 105; letters from Cromwell to, 106, 114, 117, 140, 142, 155, 304; letter to Cromwell, 107; sends thirty-eight wagon-loads of silver to London, 198; beats the Spaniards at Santa Cruz, 264, 302; death of, 265, 304.
Blanc, Le, landlord at Varennes, viii. 24; family, take to woods, 141.
Bletchington House taken, x. 165, and *App.* xii. 392.
Blockheads, danger of, ix. 139.
Blood, baths of, vii. 13.
Blumine, vi. 84; her environment, 85; character, and relation to Teufelsdröckh, 86; blissful bonds rent asunder, 89; on her way to England, 94.
Bobus of Houndsditch, ix. 94, 97, 300; xiii. 232.
Bohemia, King of, dies, x. 55.
Bolivar, 'the Washington of Columbia,' v. 249; his Cavalry-Uniform, vi. 30.
Bonaparte, Napoleon, iv. 35, 108, 123; his 'Tools to him that can handle them,' our ultimate Political Evangel, v. 66, 146; Varnhagen at the Court of, 195; flung out to St. Helena, ix. 219. See Napoleon.
Bonchamps, in La Vendée War, viii. 135.
Boner, and his *Edelstein*, iii. 280; *The Frog and the Steer*, 283.
Bonnemère, Aubin, at Siege of Bastille, vii. 149, 150.
Bonpland, M., and how Dr. Francia treated him, v. 257, 292.
Books, influence of, vi. 105, 121, 304, 308; ix. 101; our modern University, Church and Parliament, vi. 306.
Bookseller-System, the, iv. 78, 208.
Borlace, Col., Cromwell's letter in behalf of, xii. 423.
Borthwick, Lord, Cromwell's Letter to, xi. 228.
Boswell, iv. 46; vi. 322; his character and gifts, iv. 54; his true Hero-worship for Johnson, 56; his *Johnsoniad*, 59; no infringement of social privacy, 65.
Boteler, Major: see Butler.
Bouillé, at Metz, vii. 281, 324; account of, 281; his troops mutinous, 288; and Salm regiment, 289; intrepidity of, 290, 293; marches on Nanci, 298; quells Nanci mutineers, 298-301; character of, 302; at Mirabeau's funeral, 339; expects fugitive King, viii. 17; would liberate King, 28; emigrates, 28.
—— Junior, asleep at Varennes, viii. 24; flies to father, 27.
Bourchier pedigree, x. 36.
Bourdeaux, priests hanged at, viii. 94; for Girondism, 243, 263.
—— Sterling at, i. 294.
Boyd, Lieut. Robert, joins with Torrijos, i. 243; at Gibraltar, 246, 247; death, 258.
—— Rev. Zachary, preaches against Cromwell, xi. 223.
Boyer, duellist, vii. 320.
Boyer-Fonfrède, notice of, vii. 262.
Bradshaw, John, presides at trial of Charles I., x. 349; in Council of State, xi. 2; President of, 7; Cromwell's letters to, 49, 126, 163, 196, 217, 264, 274, 278, 279; in Cromwell's First Parliament, xii. 17; does not sign the Recognition, 61; a rejected M.P. candidate, 154.
Bramston, Judge, notice of, x. 99.
Brandenburg, Duke of, mastered, xii. 331.
Brandly, Captain, at Tredah, xi. 50.
Brennus, reminiscence of, viii. 181.
Brest, sailors revolt, vii. 304; state of, in 1791, viii. 58; Fédérés in Paris, 104; in 1793, 292.
Bréteuil, Home-Secretary, vii. 77.
Breton Club, germ of Jacobins, vii. 82.
Bretons, deputations of, vii. 82; Girondins, viii. 262.
Brewster, Col. Humphrey, xii. 441, 444.
—— Rev. Mr., xii. 108, 109.
Brézé, Marquis de, his mode of ushering, vii. 103; and National Assembly, 126, 130; extraordinary etiquette, 130, 220.
Bribery, ix. 267.
Brick-and-Mortar Apostleship, i. 283.
Brienne, Loménie, antiprotestant, vii. 30; in Notables, 58; Controller of Finance, 61; incapacity of, 62; edicts by, 64, 71, 72; failure of, 65; arrests Paris Parlement, 67; exasperated, sick, 76; secret scheme, 77; scheme discovered, 78; arrests two Parlementeers, 80; bewildered, 84; desperate shifts by, 84; wishes for Necker, 85; dismissed, and provided for, 86; his effigy burnt, 87.
Brigands, the, origin of, vii. 100; in Paris, 100, 160; viii. 69; of Avignon, 50.
Bright, Colonel, at Preston, x. 290; notice of, 309.
Brindley, ix. 195
Briot, Nicholas, engraver, xi. 254.
Brissac, Duke de, commands Constitutional Guard, viii. 38; disbanded, 71.
Brissot, edits Moniteur, vii. 107; friend of Blacks, 237; in First Parliament, viii. 45; plans in 1792, 67; active in assembly, 73; in Jacobins, 76; at Roland's, 77; pelted in Assembly, 100; arrested, 252, 264; trial of, 279; guillotined, 280.
Bristol, Parliament loses, x. 132; storm of,

Sept. 1645, 182; Nayler's procession in, xii. 120.
British Nation, the, a new set of lessons to learn, xiii. 96, 147, 152, 161; no real concern with the Continental Anarchies, 137. See England.
British Translators, iii. 311; Critics, iv. 124.
Brittany, commotions in, vii. 12, 82, 97.
Brocksmouth and House described, xi. 180, 181.
Broghil, Lord, in Ireland, xi. 80, 82, 91, 121, 126; in Cromwell's First Parliament, xii. 17; in Committee on Kingship, 221, 228, 240.
Broglie, Marshal, against Plenary Court, vii. 83; in command, 123, 134; in office, 137; dismissed, 158.
Brook, Lord, a Puritan, x. 41.
Brotherhood with the base and foolish, xiii. 78.
Browne, Sir John, at Abingdon, x. 165; Major-Gen. of Scots, xi. 276; routed at Inverkeithing, 277.
Brühl, Henry Count von, ii. 251.
Brummel, Beau, iv. 120.
Brunout, M., among Menads, vii. 207.
Brunswick, Duke, marches on France, viii. 82, 134; advances, Proclamation, 101; at Verdun, 141; at Argonne, 165; at Valmy, 169; retreats, 171.
Bucaniering, ix. 219.
Buckingham, Duke, accused, x. 48; stabbed by Felton, 49.
—— Duke, at Kingston, x. 276.
Buckskin, the Hon. Hickory, xiii. 18.
Buffon, Mme. de, and Duke d'Orleans, vii. 73; at D'Orleans's execution, viii. 288.
Buller, Mrs., death of, i. 227.
Bunyan, John, notice of, x. 176.
Bunyan's Pilgrim's Progress, vi. 189.
Bureaucracy, xiii. 136.
Burford, Levellers at, xi. 27.
Burgess, Roger, Cromwell's letters to, x. 168; defends Farringdon, 169.
Burgoyne, Sir John, Cromwell's letter to, x. 113.
Burke on French Revolution, viii. 62.
Burleigh House, x. 122; xii. 147.
Burns, ii. 195-240; his hard conditions, 198; a true Poet-soul, 200; like a King in exile, 201; sincerity, 202; his Letters, 204; tenderness and piercing emphasis of thought, 207; the more delicate relations of things, 210; indignation, 212; *Scots wha hae, Macpherson's Farewell*, 213; *Tam O'Shanter, The Jolly Beggars*, 214; his Songs, 215; love of country, 219; passionate youth never became clear manhood, 220; his estimable Father, 221; v. 206; boyhood, and entrance into life, ii. 222; invited to Edinburgh, 224; Sir Walter Scott's reminiscence of him, 225; Excise and Farm scheme, 227; calumny, isolation, death, 229; his failure chiefly in his own heart, 234; a divine behest lay smouldering within him, 238; his kinghood and kingdom, iv. 72; a contemporary of Mirabeau, v. 85.
—— vi. 325; his birth, and humble heroic parents, 326; rustic dialect, 326; the most gifted British soul of his century, 327; resemblance to Mirabeau, 328; his sincerity, 329; his visit to Edinburgh, Lion-hunted to death, 330.
Burns, ix. 16, 37, 97, 137, 229, 291; like Apollo taken for a Neatherd, xiii. 118; his chivalrous ways, 177.
Burntisland surrenders to Cromwell, xi. 278, 283.
Burton, Rev. Henry, in pillory, x. 75.
Burton's Diary criticised, xii. 212.
Bute, Isle of, its climate and scenery, i. 196, 202.
Butler, Major, seizes Wildman, xii. 98; a Major-General, 120 n.
—— Sir Walter, Governor of Kilkenny, xi. 128; letters to Cromwell, 128, 129, 130, 134; Cromwell's letters to, 127, 129, 131, 134, 135.
Buttafuoco, Napoleon's letter to, vii. 287.
Buzot, in National Convention, viii. 163, 243; arrested, 252; retreats to Bourdeaux, 264, 272; end of, 281.
Byron's short career, ii. 52; life-weariness, 165; his manful yet unvictorious struggle, 184; far enough from faultless, 203, 231; iii. 188; sent forth as a missionary to his generation, ii. 238; poor Byron, who really had much substance in him, v. 158; ix. 191, 296.

CA-IRA, origin of, vii. 254.
Caabah, the, with its Black Stone and sacred Well, vi. 221.
Cabanis, physician to Mirabeau, vii. 337.
Cabanis's, Dr., metaphysical discoveries, iii. 103, 268.
Cabarus, Mlle., and Tallien, viii. 292; imprisoned, urgent, 339; her soirées, 353-5.
Cadiz to be attempted, xii. 141.
Caen, Girondins at, viii. 253, 264.
Cagliostro, Count, iv. 243-296; a Liar of the first magnitude, 247; singularly prosperous career, 248; birth and boyhood, 251; with a Convent-Apothecary, 253; a touch of grim Humour, 254; returns to Palermo, 255; Forgery and general Swindlery, 256; a Treasure-digging dodge, and consequent flight, 258; quack-talent, 263; marriage, and a new game opened out, 264; temporary reverses, 266; potions and love-philtres, 267; visits England, and drives a prosperous trade in the supernatural, 268; Freemasonry, 270; his gift of Tongue, 276; successes and exposures, 280; how he fleeced the Cardinal de Rohan, 284; the Diamond-Necklace business, 286; v. 18-60; again in England, iv. 288; Goethe's visit to his family at Palermo, 289; Cagliostro's Work-day ended, 294.
Cahir Castle, Cromwell's letter to Governor of, xi. 125; submits, 126.
Calendar, Earl, at Preston fight, x. 280, 284, 285, 287, 298.
—— House taken by Cromwell, xi. 276.
—— Romme's new, viii. 268, 269; comparative ground-scheme of, 269.
Calonne, M. de, Financier, character of, vii. 53; suavity and genius of, 53; his difficulties, 56, 57; at bay, 58; dismissed, 59; marriage and after-course, 60.
Calvados, for Girondism, viii. 243. See Caen.
Calvert, Dr., meets Sterling at Madeira, i.

307; a touching bond of union, 309; accompanies him to Rome, 314, 318; Sterling nurses him in sickness, 321; weather-bound at Falmouth, 345; wearing visibly weaker, 355; death, 362.
Cambon, notice of, viii. 46.
Cambridge, superiority of, i. 217.
—— plate, x. 99; fortified, 104, 105; Committee, Cromwell's letters to, 123, 129, 130, and *App.* xii. 383; royalist prisoners at, x. 146; University, Cromwell's letter to heads of Trinity Hall, 348; protected, *App.* xii. 428; Cromwell's letters to Vice-Chancellor of, 451, 452.
Camdeners, the, x. 113.
Camille Desmoulins, v. 127.
Campan, Mme., Memoirs by, vii. 21 n.
Camus, Archivist, viii. 47; in National Convention, 171; with Dumouriez, imprisoned, 239.
Canada rebellion, xiii. 140, 144.
Candeille, Mlle., Goddess of Reason, viii. 302.
Cannon, Siamese, vii. 141; wooden, viii. 135; Fever, Goethe on, 168.
Canopus, worship of, vi. 191.
Cant, i. 264; ii. 203; iv. 58, 97; v. 105; vii. 44; ix. 117; its effects and prevalence, x. 4, 62; xi. 304; thrice-baleful universe of Cant, xiii. 84, 252; *sincere* Cant, 261.
Cantwell Castle surrenders, xi. 141.
Canute, King, ix. 107.
Capel, Lord, motions of, x. 103, 299; condemned, xi. 9; dies nobly, 10.
Capital Punishments, v. 285; xiii. 84, 86, 88.
Carisbrook Castle, Charles I. confined in, x. 245.
Carlingford taken, xi 57.
Carlisle demanded by Cromwell, x. 311; Cromwell at, 329.
Carlos, Don, Schiller's, published, i. 50; critical account of, 51; scene of the King and Posa, 56; immediate and general approbation, 65; Schiller's own opinion of its worth, 182.
Carlyle first hears definitely of Sterling, i. 256; pleasantly impressed by *Arthur Coningsby*, 262; sees Sterling's Father, 269; first interview with Sterling, 272; listens unprofited to friendly admonitions, 282; high topics, 286; insists upon the good of evil, 291; a rainy walk, 293; Sterling's friendly sympathy, 302; a sad farewell, 303; a hurried escort, 314; fruitful talk in straitened circumstances, 338; the first human recognition, 340; a strange effulgence, 380; the saddest of dinners, 387; sacred possessions, 394; a commission higher than the world's, 399 See Editor.
—— Mrs., and Sterling's Mother, i. 273; Sterling's affectionate remembrance, 296; a humble imitation, 306; a gentle message, 368; love in death, 393.
Carmagnole, costume, what, viii. 292; dances in Convention, 301.
Carmarthen Committee, Cromwell's letter to, xii. 403
Carnival, the, i. 328.
Carnot, Hippolyte, notice of, viii. 46, 305; plan for Toulon, 296; discovery in Robespierre's pocket, 340.
Carpentras, against Avignon, viii. 51.
Carra, on plots for King's flight, vii. 325; in National Convention, viii. 164.
Carre, Gibby: see Ker.
Carrier, a Revolutionist, vii. 243; in National Assembly, viii. 164; Nantes noyades, 292, 297, 298; guillotined, 362.
Carstairs, Principal, a Whig, xi. 249.
—— Rev. John, at Dunbar battle, xi. 186; in Edinburgh, 238, 239; account of, 249; preaches before Cromwell, 270.
Cartaux, General, fights Girondins, viii. 260; at Toulon, 295.
Carte, Jacobite, his opinion on Tredah, xi. 56.
Cartwright, Dr., message to Cromwell, xi. 143.
Cash-payment, ix. 36, 41; not the sole relation of human beings, 195, 216, 221; love of men cannot be bought with cash, 282.
Castle, Col., notice of, x. 155; killed at Tredah, xi. 52.
Castlehaven, Earl, assists Wexford, xi. 64, 70; at Ross, 72.
Castries, Duke de, duel with Lameth, vii. 319; result of, 319.
Cathedral of Immensity, v. 269.
Cathelineau, of La Vendée, viii. 56, 68.
Catherine of Russia, Diderot's visit to, iv. 224.
Catholic Church, the old, in its terrestrial relations, xiii. 127. See Pope.
Cavaignac, Convention Representative, viii. 310.
Cavendish, General, killed, x. 124, and xii. 388, 391; account of, x. 126.
Cazalès, Royalist, vii. 111; in Constituent Assembly, 172; pathetic, 233; duel with Barnave, 318; in danger, viii. 14; emigrant, 64.
Cazotte, author of Diable Amoureux, viii. 78; seized, 138; saved, for a time, by his daughter, 149.
Cecil, Trooper, and Sindercomb, xii. 205.
Celts, the, ix. 44.
Centuries, the, lineally related to each other, ix. 101, 109.
Cercle, Social, of Fauchet, vii. 314.
Ceremonialism in 1610, x. 29.
Cerutti, his funeral oration on Mirabeau, vii. 339.
Cervantes, ii. 13; v. 144; death, x. 32.
Cevennes, revolt of, viii. 68.
Chabot, of Mountain, viii. 46; against Kings, 130; imprisoned, 307.
Chabray, Louison, at Versailles, October Fifth, vii. 207, 212.
Chactaw Indian, ix. 219.
Chalier, Jacobin, Lyons, viii. 223; executed, 260; body raised, 294.
Chaloner, M.P., a drunkard, xi. 330.
Chambon, Dr., Mayor of Paris, viii. 186; retires, 202.
Chamfort, Cynic, vii. 92; arrested, suicide, viii. 331.
Champ-de-Mars, Federation, vii. 265; preparations for, 266, 270; accelerated by patriots, 271-3; anecdotes of, 272 (see Federation); Federation-scene at, 275-80; funeral-service, Nanci, 302; riot, Patriot petition (1791), viii. 34; new Federation (1792), 99; enlisting in, 144.

Champion of England, the, 'lifted into his saddle,' ix. 180.
Champs Elysées, Menads at, vii. 199; festivities in, 279.
Chancellors, and their beaten road to the Peerage, xiii. 242.
Chancery Court to be abolished, xi. 368; Cromwell's reform of, xii. 7, 102.
—— Law-Courts, ix. 271, 274.
—— records, x. 42.
Change, the inevitable approach of, manifest everywhere, iv 16; v. 247, 361; universal law of, iv. 28, 108, 150.
Chantilly Palace, a prison, viii. 292.
Chappe's telegraph, viii. 314.
Chapt-Rastignac, Abbé de, massacred, viii. 151.
Characteristics, iv. 1-33.
Charenton, Marseillese at, viii. 105.
Charlemagne, v. 3.
Charles I., vacuous, chimerical letters of, v. 230; judicial blindness, 235; at Strafford's Trial, 241; fatally incapable of being dealt with, vi. 346; Trial of, sold in Paris, viii. 189.
—— Prince, returns from Spain, x. 38.—Charles I., failures of, 45; devices to raise money, 52; goes to Scotland, 56; wars with Scots, 82; shifts to raise an army, 83; his Council of Peers, 84; endeavours to coalesce with Puritans, 91; his difficulties, 92; favours Army-plots, 92; yields a little, 94; goes to Scotland, 94; feasted by London City, 95; attempts to seize Five Members of Parliament, 97; his Queen pawns crown-jewels, 97; attempts Hull, 97; his Commission of Array, 98; at Oxford, 111; his affairs in August 1643, 132; sends for Irish Army, 151; is completely routed, 173; his motions after Naseby battle, 177; in Wales, 198; goes to Scots Army, 199; at Holmby, 204; carried off by Joyce, 225; his manœuvring, 232; at Hampton Court, 234, 242; escapes, 243; goes to Isle of Wight, 245; at Carisbrook Castle, 245; attempts to escape, 259; is denounced, 266; last treaty with, 322; at Hurst Castle, 345; Trial of, 349; Death-warrant, 349; execution of, xi. 1; his goods, &c. to be sold, 8; xiii. 193.
Charles II., iv. 44; at Jersey, xi 71; character of, 155; with Scots Army, 164; repudiates his father's doings, 174; descended from Elizabeth Muir, 233; crowned at Scone Kirk, 244; at Perth, 22d Nov. 1650, 249; invades England, 284; at Worcester, 288; escapes from Worcester, 293; countenances assassins, xii. 4; at Middleburg, 97; his embassy to Spain, 152; quarrels with his brother, 201; designation of, by Cromwell, 336; cold reception of abroad, 356; contrasted with Cromwell, xiii. 150, 249.
Charles, Chemist, improves balloons, vii. 41.
Charleville Artillery, vii. 143.
Charter House, Cromwell and the, xii. 112, 113.
Chartism, ix. 3, 26, 32; the history of Chartism not mysterious, 54.
Chartist Notabilities undergoing their term, xiii. 69; Chartist Parliament, 204.
Chartres, grain-riot at, viii. 187.
—— Duke de: see Orleans.
Châteaubriands in French Revolution, viii. 330.
Châtelet, Achille de, advises Republic, viii. 14. See Prison.
—— the Marquise du, iii. 26; her utter shamelessness, 28; unimaginable death-bed scene, 29.
Chatham and his son Pitt, xiii. 138.
Châtillon-sur-Sèvre, insurrection at, viii. 135.
Chaumette, notice of, vii. 242; viii. 306; signs petition, 34; in governing committee, 132; at King's trial, 197; his grandmother, 198; daily demands constitution, 261; on Feast of Reason, 300, 302; arrested, jeered, 330; guillotined, 328.
Chauvelin, Marquis de, in London, viii. 42; dismissed, 213.
Cheapside: see Cross.
Cheek, Sir Hatton, and Sir Thomas Dutton, v. 321.
Chemists, French, inventions of, viii. 308, 309.
Chenaye, Baudin de la, massacred, viii. 152.
Chénier, Poet, and Mlle. Théroigne, viii. 76.
Chepstow Castle taken, x. 268.
Chepy, at La Force in September, viii. 153.
Chesterfield, Lord, Johnson's Letter to, iv. 79; predicts French Revolution, vii. 14.
Cheswick, Cromwell at, x. 312, 314.
Childhood, fresh gaze of, iii. 86, 116; happy unconsciousness of, iv. 2; happy season of, vi. 55; early influences and sports, 56.
Children, Sterling's letters to his, i. 323, 391.
China, literary governors of, vi. 311; Pontiff-Emperor of, ix. 252.
Chivalry on the wane, iii. 268, 270; gone, 279; iv. 22; v. 11.
—— of Labour, ix. 218, 282, 286, 289, 295, 301.
Choiseul, Duke, why dismissed, vii. 5.
—— Colonel Duke, assists Louis's flight, viii. 8, 17, 18, 23; too late at Varennes, 26.
Choisi, General, at Avignon, viii. 53.
Cholmely, Col., notice of, xii. 410.
Christ, the Divine Life of, ii. 182; true reverence for his sufferings and death, 183; allusion to, by Tacitus, iii. 3; a Sanctuary for all the wretched, v 31.
Christian Religion, ineffaceable record of the, iii. 47; its sacred, silent, unfathomable depths, 48; Novalis's thoughts on, 88; how it arose and spread abroad among men, 108; dissipating into Metaphysics, iv. 17.
Christian Faith, a good Mother's simple version of the, vi. 61; Temple of the, now in ruins, 118; Passive-half of, 119.
—— Love, vi. 115, 117.
Christianity, grave of, ix. 179; the Christian Law of God found difficult and inconvenient, 200; the Christian Religion not accomplished by Prize-Essays, 215, 217, 227; or by a minimum of Four-thousand-five-hundred, 300; ghastly Phantasm of Christianity, xiii. 80, 85; Christian hatred of Scoundrels, 81; so-called Christian *Clerus*, 246, 254; Christian Repentance, 256; Gathercoal's account of the Christian Church, 277. See Religion, New Testament.
Church, the dead English, distilled into life again, i. 235; Sterling's fatal attempt to find sanctuary in it, 262, 265; commended for its very indifferency, 273; found wanting, 363, 396; what it might be, ix. 31;

'Church' done by machinery, 61; the English Church, 201, 274; Church Articles, 245; what a Church-Apparatus *might* do, 260; our best-behaved of churches, xiii. 224. See Books, Law and Church.
Church, spiritual guidance, vii. 9; of Rome, decay of, 11; and philosophy, 30 (see Clergy); lands sold, 235; of Rome, dead in France, viii. 2, 6.
—— Irish Papist, Cromwell's opinion of, xi. 106-109.
Church-formulas, Sterling's battle with, i. 192; no living relation to him, 230; singular old rubrics, 231; thrashing of the straw, 298.
Church-History, a continued Holy Writ, iii. 175; Mother-Church a superannuated stepmother, iv. 22.
Church-Clothes, vi. 131; living and dead Churches, 132; the modern Church and its Newspaper-Pulpits, 154.
Church Government, Cromwell's, xii. 5, 6. See Bishops.
Cicely, Colonel, Cromwell's letter to, xii. 395.
Circumstances, man not the product of his, ii. 267; the victorious subduer, iv. 70; their inevitable influence, 228; v. 150; vi. 57.
Citizens, French, active and passive, vii. 248.
Civil War: see War.
Clairfait, Commander of Austrians, viii. 136.
Clarendon, Lord, character of, x. 62; his notice of Cromwell, 88; on Irish affairs, xi. 149.
Classicality, what meant by, i. 216.
Clavière, edits Moniteur, vii. 107; account of, 244; Finance Minister, viii. 77, 123; arrested, 251; suicide of, 291.
Claypole, Lady, her character, x. 212; and family, xi. 266; death of, xii. 367, 368.
Claypoles, the, in Cromwell's First Parliament, xii. 17.
Clayton, Colonel, Cromwell's letter in behalf of, xii. 422.
Clemence, adopts a Swiss, viii. 119.
Clergy, the, with their surplices and cossack-aprons girt on, vi. 26, 128.
—— French, in States-General, vii. 115; conciliators of orders, 121, 124; joins Third Estate, 123, 125, 126, 128; lands, national? 235, 239; power of, 236; constitution for, 236.
Clermont, flight of King through, viii. 22, 26; Prussians near, 141.
Cléry, valet, on Louis's last scene, viii. 209.
Cleveland, John, poet, apprehended, xii. 134.
Clifton, Sterling at, i. 333, 351.
Clive, Robert, ix. 52.
Clonmacnoise Manifesto, xi. 99-102.
Clonmel stormed, xi. 147.
Clootz, Anacharsis, Baron de, account of, vii. 246; collects human species, 267; disparagement of, 269; in National Convention, viii. 164; universal republic of, 186; on nullity of religion, 300; purged from the Jacobins, 321 guillotined, 323.
Clothes, not a spontaneous growth of the human animal, but an artificial device, vi. 2; analogy between the Costumes of the body and the Customs of the spirit, 21; Decoration the first purpose of Clothes, 23; what clothes have done for us, and what they threaten to do, 24, 34; fantastic garbs of the Middle Ages, 27; a simple costume, 30; tangible and mystic influences of Clothes, 30, 36; animal and human Clothing contrasted, 33; a Court-Ceremonial *minus* Clothes, 36; necessity for Clothes, 38; transparent Clothes, 40; all Emblematic things are Clothes, 43, 165; Genesis of the modern Clothes-Philosopher, 49; Character and conditions needed, 125, 127; George Fox's suit of Leather, 128; Church-Clothes, 131; Old-Clothes, 146; practical inferences, 165.
Clothes-horse, man never altogether a, iv. 118.
Cloud, St., Louis prohibited from, viii. 3.
Clovis, in the Champ-de-Mars, vii. 10.
Club, The Sterling, i. 313.
—— Electoral, at Paris, vii. 136, 154; becomes Provisional Municipality, 140; permanent for arms, &c. 146. See Representatives, Breton, Jacobin, Enraged, Cordeliers, Feuillans, Royalist.
Clubbism, nature of, vii. 313.
Clubmen, account of, x. 178; put down, 180, 181; their designs discovered, 182.
Clubs, in Paris, 1788, vii 92, 121; in 1790, 251.
Clugny, M., as Finance Minister, vii. 38.
Coaches, hackney, in 1654, xii. 7, 8.
Cobbett, William, a most brave phenomenon, v. 148, 179.
Coblentz, Royalist Emigrants at, viii. 56, 59, 64-6.
Cobourg and Dumouriez, viii. 237, 239.
Cobwebs, a world overhung with, i. 218, 261.
Cockades, green, vii. 138; tricolor, 141; black, 191, 194; national, trampled, 193, 195; white, 193.
Cockburnspath: see Copperspath.
Cockpit, the, bestowed on Cromwell, xi. 124.
Codification, the new trade of, iii. 107, 329; vi. 40.
Cœur-de-Lion, ix. 105, 151; King Richard, too, knew a man when he saw him, 159.
—— the best of Sterling's Poems, i. 363, 371, 385, 386; his own account of it, 389.
Coffinhal, Judge, delivers Henriot, viii. 344.
Coigny, Duke de, a sinecurist, vii. 51.
Coke, Chief Justice, x. 32; weeps, 47.
Colchester, Cromwell's letters to Mayor of, x. 111, 120; tumults at, 267; siege of, 276, 299.
Coleridge on Highgate Hill, a Dodona-Oracle, i. 226, 230; Sterling's assiduous attendance, 232; a magical ingredient in the wild cauldron of his mind, 237, 260, 262, 264, 271; waning influence, 290; a lesson for us all, 364; Coleridge's Writings, iii 58.
Collins's Peerage-Book, xiii. 240.
Collot, d'Herbois: see Herbois.
Colonial Office, sad experiences in the, xiii. 94; Constitutions for the Colonies on the anvil, 140, 143; our Colonies worth something to the Country, 141; new kind of Governors needed, 145.
Colonies, England's sure markets among her, ix. 278.
Columbus, royallest Sea-king of all, ix. 225.
Colvil, Lord, in Ireland, xi. 122.
Combination, value of, vi. 82, 180.
Command and obedience, xiii. 154. See Obedience.

Commerce, new Noblesse of, vii. 13.
Commissioners, Convention, like Kings, viii. 307, 309, 310.
Committee, Electoral: see Club, Electoral, Austrian.
—— of Defence, viii. 103, 236; Central, 103, 107, 111; of Watchfulness, of Public Salvation, 131, 145, 236, 273, 305, 350; Circular of, 160; of the Constitution, 179; Revolutionary, 235; of Sections, 245; Revolutionary, busy, 291.
—— interim, 1641, x. 94; Lincoln, Cromwell's letter to, 117; of Safety, 122; Cambridge, Cromwell's letters to, 123, 129, 130; of Both Kingdoms, account of, 165; of Derby House, 247; Cromwell's letters to, 331, and *App.* xii. 407; Lancashire, Cromwell's letter to, x. 282; York, Cromwell's letters to, 296, 297; of Estates, Cromwell's letters to, 310, 316, 323; xi. 222, 251; of Army, Cromwell's letter to, 253; of Customs, 365; Cromwell's letter to, 365; of Kingship. See Kingship.
Committees, Forty-four Thousand, viii. 274.
Commons, English House of, v. 287; vi. 25. See Parliament.
Commonweal, European, tendency to a, iii. 337. See Europe, European Revolution.
Commonwealth established, xi. 2; seal found, 22. See Seals.
Commune, Council General of the, viii. 123; Sovereign of France, 129, 131; enlisting, 145.
Communes of France, viii. 266.
Competition and Devil take the hindmost, ix. 213, 216; abatement of, 281.
Concealment: see Secrecy.
Conciergerie: see Prison.
Condamine, M. de la, v. 262.
Condé, Prince de, attends Louis XV., vii. 16; emigrates, 158.
—— Town surrendered, viii. 265.
Condorcet, Marquis, edits Moniteur, vii. 107; Girondist, viii. 45; prepares Address, 73; on Robespierre, 227; vanishes, 276; death of, 331.
Conference: see Hampton Court.
Conisby, Sheriff Thomas, sent prisoner to Parliament, x. 107.
Conquest, no, permanent if altogether unjust, ix. 24.
Conscience, the only safehold, iii. 179; singular forms of, iv. 235; not found in every character named human, v. 22; leaders of, vii. 11; individual conscience, ix. 48, 155, 246.
Conscious and unconscious realities, i. 261, 270. See Unconscious.
Conservatism, noble and ignoble, ix. 77, 79; John Bull a born Conservative, 197; Justice alone *capable* of being 'conserved,' 199.
Constancy the root of all excellence, iii. 68.
Constituent Assembly: see Assembly.
Constitution, our invaluable British, vi. 152; ix. 46, 49.
—— French, completed, viii. 37-41; will not march, 49, 59, 62; burst in pieces, 120. See Committee.
—— new, of 1793, viii. 266, 270. See Sieyes.
Constitutions, how built, vii. 170; the true model of, xiii. 45.
Contagion, spiritual, iii. 98; iv. 9.
Contrat Social: see Rousseau.
Convention, National, in what case to be summoned, viii. 39; demanded by some, 71; determined on, 122; coming, 124; Deputies elected, 130, 135, 163; constituted, 171; motions in, 171; work to be done, 179; hated, politeness, effervescence of, 180; on September massacres, 182; guard for, 183; try the King, 199; debate on trial, 200; invite to revolt, 201; condemn Louis, 204-7; armed Girondins in, 234; power of, 237 (see Mountain, Girondins); removes to Tuileries, 243; besieged (2d June 1793), extinction of Girondins, 250, 251; Jacobins and, 265; on forfeited property, 292; Carmagnole, Goddess of Reason, 302; awed to silence, 307; Representatives, 307; at Feast of Etre Suprême, 333, 334; to be butchered? 340; end of Robespierre, 341, 343, 345; retrospect of, 362, 363; Féraud, Germinal, Prairial, 363-6; finishes, its successor, 371.
Conversation, the phenomenon of, iv. 37, 183; sincere and insincere, 65.
Conversion, vi 120.
Conway Castle, fortified, x. 235. See Williams.
Cook, Col., at Cambridge, x. 105; at Wexford, xi. 71.
Cooke, Henry, taken in Suffolk, x. 109.
Cooper, Anthony Ashley, in Little Parliament, xi. 335; in Council of State, 367 n.; xii. 5 n.; in Cromwell's First Parliament, 17; is refused the Lady Mary Cromwell, 151 and n.; in Cromwell's Second Parliament, 154, 158; excluded, 197.
—— Fenimore, what he might have given us, v. 139.
Coote, Sir Charles, in Ireland, xi. 57, 83.
Copperspath in Scotland, xi. 162, 179.
Copyright Bill, Petition on the, v. 207.
Corday, Charlotte, account of, viii. 255; in Paris, 256; stabs Marat, 257; examined, 258; executed, 259.
Cordeliers Club, vii. 253 (see Danton); Hébert in, viii. 320; silent, 321.
Coriolanus, position of, xii. 39.
Cork House, Dublin, xi. 136.
Cornish heroism, i. 358.
Corn-Law Rhymes, and Rhymer, iv. 157-180; an earnest, truth-speaking man, 164; his bread-tax philosophy, 166; primary idea of all poetry, 169; defects of manner, 170; glimpses into the prophetic Book of Existence, 171; the poor Workman's hopeless struggle, 173; *Enoch Wray*, an inarticulate, half-audible Epic, 176.
Corn-Laws and Sliding-Scales, v. 248; unimaginable arguments for, ix. 75, 89, 188, 197; bitter indignation in every just English heart, 199; ultimate basis of, 204; mischief and danger of, 207, 212, 232; after the Corn-Laws are ended, 214, 266, 271; what William Conqueror would have thought of them, 237.
Cory, John, his letter, x. 108.
Côté Droit, &c.: see Side.
Cotton, Rev. John, character of, xi. 308, 309; Cromwell's letter to, 309.
Council of Ancients, of Five Hundred, viii. 371.
—— of State, members of, xi. 2; first meeting, 6; Cromwell's letter to, 175; interim, 333,

359; Little Parliament, 367; Cromwell's, xii. 5 n. See List.
Counties: see Associated.
Courage, true, iv. 94, 111.
Court, Chevalier de, and his dagger, vii. 330.
—— French Plenary, vii. 77, 82, 83.
Court-life, teetotum terrors of, v. 17.
Courtenay, Mr. Hugh, royalist, xii. 69.
Courtesy, due to all men, vi. 146.
Courtier, a luckless, vi. 29.
Couthon, of Mountain, in Legislative, viii. 46; in National Convention, 171; at Lyons, 294; in Salut Committee, 305; his question in Jacobins, 322; decree on plots, 335; arrested, executed, 343, 346.
Covenant, Scotch, vii. 260, 265; French, 260, 265; taken by House of Commons, 1643, x. 137. See Scots.
Covent Garden, soldiers in, x. 218.
Cowardice, xiii. 236, 260, 262.
Cowbridge, a smart little town, i. 202, 287.
Cowell, Col., killed, x. 306.
Cowper, Col., in Ulster, xii. 154.
Cox, Col., Cromwell's letters to, xii. 443, 449.
Crabbe, on British liberty, xiii. 50; our fatal Oblivion of Right and Wrong, 89; Administrative Reform, 99; Constituted Anarchy, 133; Ducal Costermongers, 156; Ballot-box, 208; Machine for doing Government, 233; so-called Christian *Clerus*, 246. See Sauerteig.
Cradock, Rev. Mr., xii. 109.
Crane, Sir Richard, slain, x. 184.
Crawford, Maj.-Gen., notice of, x. 147, 149, 150; Cromwell's letter to, 147.
Creation and Manufacture, iv. 4; what few things are *made* by man, v. 8. See Man, Invention.
Creed, every, and form of Worship, a *form* merely, ii. 109.
Crequi, Duc de, Ambassador to Cromwell, xii. 357.
Crichton, Lord Sanquhar, v. 319.
Crime, purpose and act of, viii. 146.
Criminals, what to do with our, xiii. 83, 234.
Criticism, German literary, ii. 38; the Critical Philosophy, 56; petty critics, 191. See British.
Croker's, Mr., edition of *Boswell*, iv. 49.
Cromwell, Sterling's feeling about, i. 387, 389; what Cromwell did, iv. 75; v. 246; his worth quite unrecognised, vi. 341; his hypochondria, 344, 348; early marriage and conversion; a quiet farmer, 344; his Ironsides, 346; his Speeches, 349, 361; his 'ambition,' and the like, 351; dismisses the Rump Parliament, 357; Protectorship, and Parliamentary Futilities, 359; his last days, and closing sorrows, 362; his terrible lifelong wrestle, ix. 34, 48, 85; by far our remarkablest Governor, 242.
—— significance of, to the Puritan cause, x. 10; modern reaction in favour of, 13; birth, kindred, &c. 15, 16; youth of, 18; house where born, 18; his Father's character, 19.
—— list of his Brothers and Sisters, x. 16; of his Uncles and Aunts, 20, 21 n.; of his Children, 54, 55.
—— his poverty? x. 21; related to Earl Essex, 21; his great-grandfather, 22; the 'alias Williams,' 24; his Welsh pedigree, 25; origin of the name, 26; death of his grandfather, 26; idle tales of his youth, 27; his schoolmaster, 27; admitted of Cambridge University, 31; death of his father, 34; death of his grandfather, 34; never of any Inn of Court, 35; marries Elizabeth Bourchier, 37; his uncle an M.P., 38; his hypochondria, 39; becomes Calvinist, 39; subscribes to Feoffee Fund, 41; is a Puritan, 41; visit to his royalist uncle, 43; heir to his uncle at Ely, 44; is M.P. for Huntingdon in 1628, 44; returns to Huntingdon, 49; first mention of in Commons Journals, 51; is Justice of Peace, 53; sells his estate, 53. Of his Letters and Speeches, 58; how to read them, 59.
Cromwell, his life at St. Ives, x. 67-73; stories of, an enthusiast? 73; at Ely, 74; character of by Warwick, 78; draining of Fen Country, 78, xi. 332; related to Oliver St. John, x. 79; once dissolute? 35, 81.
—— is M.P. for Cambridge, x. 83, 84, and *App.* xii. 382; delivers Lilburn's petition, x. 87; Sir P. Warwick's description of him, 88; dispute with Lord Mandevil, 89; reproved by Mr. Hyde, 89; time spent at Ely, 94; intends for New England? 95; subscribes 300*l.* to reduce Ireland, 98.
—— gets arms for Cambridge, x. 99; his soldiers on the alert, 100; is a Captain of Parliament horse, 100; at Edgehill battle, 101; his movements in 1643, 103; is Colonel, 103; his troopers at St. Albans, 107; takes Lowestoff, 109; preserves Associated Counties, 110; relieves Croyland, 115; skirmish at Grantham, 118; takes Stamford, 122; at Gainsborough fight, 123, and xii. 387; the beginning of his great fortunes, x. 127; is Governor of Isle of Ely, 132; his Ironsides, 133; nearly killed at Winceby, 143; complains of Lord Willoughby, 146; at Marston Moor, 151; proceeds with vigour, 159; complains of Earl Manchester, 159; would fire at the King in battle, 160; an incendiary? 162; besieges Farringdon, 168; is Lieutenant-General of the Army, 169; at Naseby Battle, 173; heads Schismatic Party, 177; reduces the Clubmen, 179; at Bristol, 182; on uniformity in religion, 188; famous at sieges, 189; takes Winchester, 190; his justice, 191; takes Basing, 191; his character by Mr. Peters, 195.
—— his duplicity? x. 221; his true character, 231; very busy, 240; lands voted to, 251; his Free Offer, 254; his two youngest daughters, 257, 258, 259.
—— in Wales, x. 268; goes north, 278; at Preston, 281; at Durham, 305; his justice, 317; at Berwick, 318, 320; at Seaton, and Moray House, Edinburgh, 322; feasted there, 326; at Carlisle, 329; his temper, 337; in London, 347; attends trial of Charles I., 349.
—— made one of Council of State, xi. 2; is Commander for Ireland, 15; routs Levellers, 27; at Oxford, 29; sets out for Ireland, 30; at Bristol, 35; at Dublin, 39; takes Tredah, 49; takes Ross, 76; at Cork, 91; wanted for Scotland, 95; his declara-

tion to Irish, 103; at Kilkenny, 127; returns to London, 148.
Cromwell, appointed Commander-in-Chief against Scots, xi. 156, 159; conversation with Ludlow, 156; in Scotland, 161; his generosity to the Scots, 170; encamps on Pentland Hills, 171; comments on Scots Covenant, 173; at Dunbar, 178, 179; straitened at Dunbar, 179; battle of Dunbar, 180-196; Letters to Edinburgh ministers, 203-215; in Glasgow, 223; Proclamation by, in Scotland, 227; another, on surrender of Edinburgh Castle, 242; in Edinburgh, 244; medal of him, 252-254; Chancellor of Oxford, 256, and *App.* xii. 427-430, 447; dangerously ill at Edinburgh, xi. 264, 265, 274; at church in Glasgow, 270, 271; at Allertoun House, 271-273; pursues the Scots into England, 287; Worcester battle, 290-296; comes to London, 297, 298; his government of Scotland, 299-301.
—— on future government of the State, xi. 312, 313; disbands the Rump, 329-331; his mode of public speaking, 360; in Council of State, 367 n.; made Lord Protector, 370; personal appearance of, 370.
—— removes to Whitehall, xii. 8; his First Parliament, 16, 17; difficult position of, 39, 95; accident to, in Hyde Park, 64; his Mother dies, 64.
—— appoints Major-Generals, xii. 101, 119; assists Piedmont, 104, 357-365; dines with Triers, 104; receives Swedish Ambassador, 116; interviews with George Fox, 120, 121, 369, 370; on Popery, 164.
—— fond of music, xii. 210; is offered the title of King, 215, 218; recreations whilst debating kingship. 240; refuses the title of King, 301; installed Protector, 305; unwell, 320, 325; invincible, 357; age and appearance, 367; last sickness of, 368; death-bed sayings and prayer, 368-374; dies, 3d September 1658, 375.
—— Christianity of, xiii. 82, 85, 150; his Protestant war, 138; his notion of 'voting,' 212, 214; Cromwell's Statue, 220.
—— Letters and Speeches of: see *Index* in vol. xii.
—— Mrs. Elizabeth, letters from Oliver Cromwell to, xi. 198, 265, 273; letter to Oliver Cromwell from, 247; retired to Norborough, 266.
—— Elizabeth (sister of Protector), Oliver's letter to, xii. 426.
—— Frances, and Mr. Rich, xii. 148-150; married, 151, 316.
—— Henry (son of Protector), is of Gray's Inn, x. 34; is a captain, 250; in Ireland, xi. 126, 266; in little Parliament, 325, 367 n.: in First Parliament, xii 17; in Ireland, good conduct of, 108, 109; appointed Lord Deputy, 109; Oliver Cromwell's letters to, 133, 138, 153; Mary, letters to, 137, 149.
—— Major, wounded at Bristol, x. 186.
—— Mary, her letters to Henry, xii. 137, 149; married, 151, 317.
—— Oliver (son of Protector), Cornet of horse, x. 100; death of, 153 n.
—— Oliver, Memoirs of the Protector by, xi. 146 n.
Cromwell, Richard, Protector's great-grandfather, x. 22-25.
—— Richard (son of Protector), character, x. 250; married, xi. 2; death of, 22; his Wife, 22; Cromwell's letter to his Wife, 38; Oliver's letters to, 146, and xii. 147; in First Parliament, xii. 17; his estate, 148 n.
—— Mrs. Richard, her child, xi. 160.
—— Robert (eldest son of Protector), his death in early manhood, x. 37 n.; his father's grief for, 153, xii. 368.
—— Thomas, Earl Essex, x. 19; Oliver related to, 21.
Cromwells in the Civil War, x. 43.
Crook, Capt. Unton, xii. 68; Cromwell's letter to, 68; pursues Wagstaff and Penruddock, 99.
Cropredy: see Battle.
Cross, Cheapside and Charing, destroyed, x. 120. See Paul's, St.
Croydon Races, a quarrel at, v. 318.
Croyland relieved, x. 115.
'Crucify him,' a considerable feat in the suppression of minorities, xiii. 10, 12, 53, 211. See "On' clo'."
Crusades, the, iii. 109; ix. 160.
Crussol, Marquise de, guillotined, viii. 330.
Cudworth, Dr., of Cambridge, xii. 146.
Cui bono, ii. 352.
Cuissa, massacred at La Force, viii. 151.
Curates abolished, viii. 300.
Currie's, Dr., Life of Burns, ii. 196.
Cussy, Girondin, retreats to Bourdeaux, viii. 263.
Custine, General, takes Mentz &c. viii. 176; retreats, 229; blamed, 254. 265; guillotined, 275; his son guillotined, 291.
Custom the greatest of Weavers, vi. 158; customs and morals, viii. 163; reverence for custom, ix. 197. See Habit.

DALBERG, Wolfgang Heribert von, brief account of, i. 170.
Dalbier, Col., at Basing siege, x. 192; account of him, 198; in revolt at Kingston, 276.
Dalegarth Hall, notice of, xi. 5.
D'Alembert, iv. 211.
Dalgetty, Dugald: see Turner, Sir James.
Dalhousie, Cromwell at, x. 326.
Damas, Colonel Comte de, at Clermont, viii. 22, 23; at Varennes, 27.
Dampierre, General, killed, viii. 254.
Dampmartin, Captain, at riot in Rue St. Antoine, vii. 102; on state of the Army, 286; on state of France, 312; at Avignon, viii. 53; on Marseillese, 98.
Dandoins, Capt., Flight to Varennes, viii. 18-22.
Dandy, mystic significance of the, vi. 166; dandy worship, 168; sacred books, 169; articles of faith, 170; a dandy household, 173; tragically undermined by growing Drudgery, 174; the genus dandy, ix. 170.
Danger, Scots Committee of, i. 255.
Daniel, Col., at Inverkeithing fight, xi. 278.
Dante, v. 73, 178; vi. 248; biography in his Book and Portrait, 249; his birth, education and early career, 249; love for Beatrice; unhappy marriage; banishment, 250; uncourtier-like ways, 251; death, 252; his Divine

Commedia genuinely a Song, 253; the Unseen World, as figured in the Christianity of the Middle Ages, 257; 'uses' of Dante, 259; xiii. 77.
Danton, an Earthborn, yet honestly born of Earth, v. 66; notice of, vii. 107; President of Cordeliers, 185; astir, 195, 243; and Marat, 248; served with writs, 248; in Cordeliers Club, 253; elected Councillor, 333; Mirabeau of Sansculottes, viii. 45; takes presents, 60: in Jacobins, 76; for Deposition, 95; of Committee (August Tenth), 103, 107; Minister of Justice, 123, 133; 'faire peur,' 'de l'audace,' 144; after September Massacre, 162; after Jemappes, 191; and Robespierre, 193; in Netherlands, 196; at King's trial. 204; on war, 213; rebukes Marat, 225; peace-maker, 227; 'name be blighted,' 230; and Dumouriez, 234; in Salut Committee, 236; breaks with Girondins, 241; his law of Forty sous, 273; and Revolutionary Government, 305; and Paris Municipality, 306; suspect, 321; retires to Arcis. 321; and Robespierre, 324; arrested, 325; prison thoughts, 325; trial of, 326. 327; guillotined, 328; character, 328; his notion of government, xii. 39.
David, King, v. 326; vi. 219.
—— Painter, in National Convention, viii. 164; works by, 266, 314, 333; hemlock with Robespierre. 341.
Davy, John: see Theauro.
Dawkins, Admiral, a Major-General, xii. 120n.
Dean, Col., at Preston, x. 290; in Ireland, xi. 80; General, in Scotland, 278; Major-General, at Worcester battle, 293; in Dutch War, 316.
—— Cornet, Leveller, pardoned, xi. 28.
Death, the seal and immortal consecration of Life, ii. 235; iv. 13; Eternity looking through Time, 107; if not always the greatest epoch, yet the most noticeable, 113; nourishment even in, vi. 65, 102; kingly idea of, vii. 17; eternal death, 250. See Life.
Debentures of soldiers, x. 256.
Debt, ix. 141.
Declaration of Parliament, x. 47.
—— against Army, x. 223; expunged, 232; by Cromwell, 305; by Cromwell to the Army in Ireland, xi. 41; by Cromwell to Irish, 103; by Charles Stuart against his Father, 174; by Lord General and Council of Officers, 332.
Deficit, Mirabeau on, vii. 188.
Defoe, ii. 209.
Delinquents, Staffordshire, x. 210; are searched out, 251; xi 5, 317.
Democracy, stern Avatar of, iv. 259; v. 11; Democracy, on Bunker Hill, vii. 8; spread of, in France, 36, 37, 93; true meaning of, ix. 33, 233; close of kin to Atheism, 238; walking the streets everywhere, 266; an inevitable fact of the days we live in, xiii. 35; *not* a 'kind of Government,' 39; no Nation that could ever subsist upon, 42; the essence of whatever truth is in it, that the able man be promoted in whatever rank he is found, 118, 126.
Denbigh, Earl, and Duke Hamilton, xi. 10; in Council of State, 10.
Dendy, Edward, Sergeant-at-arms, xi. 1.
Denial and Destruction, ii. 163; iii. 13, 49; iv. 81, 179, 191, 233; change from, to affirmation and re-construction, iii. 319; iv. 24.
Denis, St., Mayor of, hanged, vii. 182.
Dennington Castle, x. 159, 191.
Departments, France divided into, vii. 235.
Derby, Earl, routed at Wigan, xi. 287; taken at Worcester, 297; beheaded, 297.
Derby House: see Committee.
Desborow, Captain, at Cambridge, x. 105; Major, at Bristol siege, 185; Col., at Conference at Speaker's, xi. 311-313; in Council of State, 367 n.; xii. 5 n.; made Major-General, 100, 119 n.; on Committee of Kingship, 221; against title of King, 301; one of Cromwell's Lords, 318.
Descriptive power, ii. 208; iv. 45.
Desèze, Pleader, for Louis, viii. 199, 206.
Deshuttes, massacred, October Fifth, vii. 218.
Desilles, Capt., in Nanci, vii. 300.
Deslons, Capt., at Varennes, viii. 27; would liberate the King, 28.
Desmoulins, Camille, notice of, vii. 107; in arms at Café de Foy, 137; Editor, his title, 184; on Insurrection of Women, 197; in Cordeliers Club, 253; and Brissot, viii. 76; in National Convention, 164; on Sansculottism, 237; on plots, 246; suspect, 320; for a committee of mercy, 322; ridicules law of the suspect, 322; his Journal, 322; his wife, 325; trial of, 326, 327; guillotined, 328; widow guillotined, 328.
Despotism reconciled with Freedom, ix. 290.
Destiny, didactic, ix. 98.
Devil, internecine war with the, vi. 8, 73, 103, 113; cannot now so much as believe in him, 101.
Devil's Elect in England, xiii. 72.
D'Ewes, Sir Simonds, High-Sheriff of Suffolk, v. 297; his immaculate election affidavits, 298; Sir Simonds sat spotless for Sudbury, 311; took Notes of the Long Parliament, 312; purged out with some four or five score others, 312; value of his Ms. Notes, 313.
—— cited, x. 87, 108, 163, 336; notices of Cromwell, 98; purged by Pride, 346.
Diamond Necklace, the, v. 1-60; the various histories of those various Diamonds, 7; description of, 9; it changes hands, 43; Diamonds for sale, 48; the extraordinary 'Necklace' Trial, 51.
Dick, Sir William, notice of, x. 325.
Diderot, iv. 189-242; his Father, 195; education, 196; precarious manner of life, 200; marriage, 204; general scoundrelism, 206; authorship, 207; his letters, 210; incredible activity, 219; garbled proof-sheets, 219; free, open-handed life in Paris, 222; visits Petersburg, 224; death, 226; mental gifts, 227; a proselyting Atheist, 229; utter shamelessness and uncleanness, 234; brilliant talk, 236; literary facility, 277; neither a coward nor in any sense a brave man, 241; prisoner in Vincennes, vii. 327.
Dilettantes and Pedants, vi. 41; patrons of Literature, 78.
Dilettantism, iv. 142; ix. 107, 161, 166, 202; gracefully idle in Mayfair, 188.

Dinners, vii. 192; English public Dinners, xiii. 192.
Diogenes, vi. 129.
Directorate, feats of, viii. 375.
Discipline, Army, nature of, vii. 283, 284.
Dismal Science, the, xiii. 5; Professors of, 61, 142.
Dives, Sir Lewis, notice of, x. 182.
Divine Right of Kings, and of Squires, v. 247; vi. 333.
Divines, Westminster Assembly of, x. 86, 137, 145, 215, 216.
Divorce, new Sacrament of, xiii. 47.
Dodd, Dr., at French races, vii. 40.
Dodsworth, Captain, character of, x. 111.
Dogs, dead, floating in the Westminster region, xiii. 179.
Doll's shoes, a feat accomplished, i. 338.
Domingo, St., Insurrection in, vii. 237; viii. 56.
Do-nothing, the vulgar, contrasted with the vulgar Drudge, iv 160.
Doon Hill, Scots Army at, xi. 178.
Doppet, General, at Lyons, viii. 295.
Döring's Gallery of Weimar Authors, ii. 2.
Dorislaus, Dr., notice of, x. 239, 348.
Douai: see Parlement.
Doubt, withering influence of, ii 164; the inexhaustible material which Action fashions into Certainty, iv. 20; vi. 119. See Infidelity, Scepticism, Unbelief.
Douglas, Will, his rhymes on Cromwell, xi. 71.
Downhall, Mr., ejected, x. 70; account of, xii. 379, 380: Cromwell's letter to, 379.
Downing Street, xiii. 94-123; reform in, 97, 107; two kinds of fundamental error, 100; Abler Men in, 109, 126, 135; *one* such indispensable, 112, 119, 204; a small Project of Improvement, 114.
—— the New, xiii 124-157; what it might grow to, hard to say, 130; work enough before it, 139, 152.
Drayton, Fen, Warrant to people of, x. 104, 105.
Dresden, bombardment of, ii. 255.
Drogheda: see Tredah.
Drouet, Jean B., notice of, viii. 20; discovers Royalty in flight, 21; raises Varennes, 24; blocks the bridge, 25; defends his prize, 27; rewarded, 40; to be in Convention, 142; captured by Austrians, 311.
Drudgery contrasted with Dandyism, vi. 171; 'Communion of Drudges,' and what may come of it, 174.
Drury Lane, Cromwell lives in, x. 213.
Dryasdust Societies, x. 2 3, 6.
Dryden's cousin, xi 367 n.
Dubarry, Dame, and Louis XV., v. 10; vii. 4, 5: flight of, 19; imprisoned, viii. 287.
Dublin, Cromwell in, xi. 39; Cromwell's letter to Commissioners at, 137.
Dubois Crancé, bombards Lyons, viii. 271; takes Lyons, 294.
Duchâtel, votes, wrapt in blankets, viii. 206; at Caen, 253.
Duchesne: see Père.
Ducos, Girondin, viii. 45.
Duelling iii. 279; v 315; a picture of, vi. 110; duelling, in French Revolution, vii. 317.
Dugommier, General, at Toulon, viii. 295, 310.
Duhamel, killed by Marseillese, viii. 106.
Duke of Trumps, the, and his domestic service. xiii. 13; no Duke in England so well lodged and tended as our prisoner-scoundrels, 71; Ducal Costermongers, 156.
Dukinfield, Governor of Chester, x. 273.
Dumont, on Mirabeau, vii. 189. 336.
Dumont's *Souvenirs sur Mirabeau*, v. 69.
Dumouriez, notice by, vii 4; account of, 243; in Brittany, viii. 6; in dressing-gown at Nantes. 15; in La Vendée, 56; sent for to Paris, 67; Foreign Minister, 77; dismissed, to Army, 84; disobeys Lückner, 96; Commander-in-Chief, 124; his Army, 140; Council of War, 142; seizes Argonne Forest, 143, 165; Grand-Pré, 167; and mutineers, 167; and Marat, in Paris, 175; to Netherlands, 176; at Jemappes. 190; in Paris, 203; discontented, 212; retreats, 228; traitor? 228, 234; beaten, 234; will join the enemy, 238; arrests his arresters, 239; escapes to Austrians, 240.
Dunbar, town described, xi. 178: Cromwell at, 163, 170, 177, 178; battle of, 184-187. See Battle.
—— prisoners, sufferings of, xi. 197 n., and xii. 418, 419; in New England, xi. 309.
Duncannon, ships taken at, xi. 83.
Dunch of Pusey, John, collector of letters, xi. 3; marries Ann Mayor. 283; in Cromwell's First Parliament, xii. 17; Cromwell's letter to, 307.
Duncon's, Samuel, election affidavits, v. 300.
Dundalk, Governor of, Cromwell's letter to, xi. 48.
Dundas, Governor Walter, letter to General Whalley, xi 204; letters to, from Cromwell, 205, 208, 233, 235, 236, 238, 240, 241; his letters to Cromwell, 207, 234, 235, 237, 239, 240.
Dundee stormed by General Monk, xi. 298.
Dunkirk taken, xii. 315, 356.
Dunn, the Rev. Mr., i. 290.
Dunse Law, Scots Army at, x. 82.
Dunse, Scotch Encampment on the Hill of, v. 233.
Duperret, Girondin, draws sword in Convention, viii. 242; papers sealed, Charlotte Corday, 264.
Dupes and Impostors, ix. 28. 91; dupes, a kind of *inverse* cheats, xiii. 37.
Dupont, Deputy, Atheist, viii. 201.
Duport Adrien, in Paris Parlement, vii. 64; in Constituent Assembly, one of a trio, 173; law-reformer, 233.
Duportail, in office, vii. 324.
Durham College, xi. 261-264.
Durosoy, Royalist, guillotined, viii. 133.
Dussulx, M., on taking of Bastille, vii. 164; notice of, viii. 156; will demit, 250.
Dutch War, xi 316, 327; Treaty, xii. 8.
Dutertre, in office, vii. 324.
Dutton, Sir Thomas, and Sir Hatton Cheek, v. 321.
Duty, infinite nature of, iv. 85; v. 150; vi. 119, 207, 232, 241, 257; ix. 155. 160; duty-made-easy, iv. 241; no longer a Divine Messenger and Guide, but a false earthly Fantasm, vi. 99, 100; sceptical spiritual-paralysis, 313.

EARLE, Sir Walter, sent to Charles I., x. 208.
Economics, necessity of, ix. 141.
Edda, the Scandinavian, vi. 196.
Edelstein: see Boner.
Edgehill: see Battle.
Edgeworth, Abbé, attends Louis, viii. 209; at execution of Louis, 211.
—— Frank, account of, i. 291.
Edinburgh, riot in, x. 76; Cromwell in, 322, 326; Scots Army near, xi. 166, 176, 177; Ministers and Cromwell, 203-215, 219; Castle besieged, 219, 233-243; High Church, Cromwell in, 219; Castle surrenders, 241-243.
Editor's first acquaintance with Teufelsdröckh, and his Philosophy of Clothes, vi. 4; efforts to make known his discovery to British readers, 5: admitted into the Teufelsdröckh watchtower, 11, 19; first feels the pressure of his task, 30; his bulky Weissnichtwo Packet, 44; strenuous efforts to evolve some historic order out of such interminable documentary confusion, 47; partial success, 54, 61, 95; mysterious hints, 123, 144; astonishment and hesitation, 152; congratulations, 164; farewell, 178.
—— the, purpose to himself full of hope, ix. 99; his stipulated work, 280.
Editors in 1789, vii. 183.
Edmund, St., ix. 110; on the rim of the horizon, 154; opening the shrine of, 162.
Edmundsbury, St., ix. 107.
Education, mainly trusted with the Clergy at present, i. 292; Sterling's opinion, 336; education, real and so-called, iv. 161; how young souls are trained to *live* on *poison*, v. 265; frightful waste of faculty and labour, 326; influence of early education, vi. 57; insignificant portion depending on Schools, 62; educational Architects, 65; the inspired Thinker, 140; education, an eternal duty, ix. 59, 62; an effective Education Service possible, ix. 277; xiii. 140, 154; modern education all gone to tongue, 158; how it was in the old healthy times, 161.
Egalité, Philippe, v. 37. See Orleans, Duc d'.
Eglantine, Fabre d', in National Convention, viii. 164; assists in New Calendar, 268; imprisoned, 321.
Eighteenth Century, the prosaic, ii. 198, 235; in it all the elements of the French Revolution, iii. 16, 50; iv. 190, 210; v. 93; an era of Cant, iv. 58; Hypocrisy and Atheism dividing the world between them, 81, 228; scepticism of the, vi. 312-317, 341; ix. 40; Industrial victories of, 50.
Electing and electioneering, the meaning of, xiii. 110, 205.
Election for States-General, vii. 95.
—— the one important social act, ix. 129; electoral winnowing-machines, 131, 136.
Election, the, a mock-heroic poem by Sterling, i. 349; description; portrait of Mogg; a pretty picture, 360.
Eleven Members, the: see Members.
Elie, Capt., at siege of Bastille, vii. 151, 153; after victory, 153.
Eliot, Sir John, motion by, x. 47; dies in the Tower, 52.
Elizabeth, Princess, flight to Varennes, viii. 12; August Tenth, 116; in Temple prison, 188; guillotined, 330.
Elizabeth, Queen, i. 120; x. 50.
Elizabethan Era, vi. 261; ix. 50.
Eloquence, long-eared, how to acquire the gift of, iv. 277; a cure for unperformed eloquence, xiii. 165.
Ely, scene in Cathedral of, x. 146; fortified, 155; Charity, xii. 380, 381; Commission of peace in, 397.
Emblems, all visible things, vi. 43.
Emigrants, law against, vii. 329 (see Coblentz); errors of, viii. 65; regiment of, 166; retreat with Prussians, 174.
Emigration, iv. 30; vi. 141; ix. 64, 278.
—— first French, vii. 158, 180; second, 222, 310; viii. 33.
Empson, Lieut., in Scotland, rescues Gen. Lambert, xi. 164; character and promotion, 245, 246.
Enceladus, betrayed into sudden sneezing, xiii. 9.
Enfranchisement, and what it has led to, xiii. 15, 47, 60. See Free Men.
Engagers, the, x 311.
England declares war on France, viii. 213, 229; gains Toulon, 271.
—— Condition-of-, question, ix. 3, 10; England guilty towards Ireland, 16, 18; Eras of England, 42-53; whose the proprietorship of England, 45; two tasks assigned, 46; education of, 62; over-population, 64; England, full of wealth, yet dying of inanition, 71; the guidance of, not wise enough, 92, 282; England of the year '1200,' 105, 108, 119, 156, 261; disappearance of our English Forests, 147; this England, the practical summary of English Heroism, 173; now nearly eaten up by puffery and unfaithfulness, 183; real Hell of the English, 184; of all Nations, the stupidest in speech, the wisest in action, 193, 201; unspoken sadness, 195; conservatism, 197; Berserkir-rage, 198; a Future, wide as the world, if we have heart and heroism for it, 279.
—— in 1642, x. 99; deluded by Cant, xi. 304; under Cromwell, xii. 151.
—— and her unattainable 'Model Constitution,' xiii. 51; called 'a second time' to show the Nations how to live, 52; still contains many *Kings*, 52, 129; how the Devil provides for his own in England, 72; English veracity, fidelity, 76; what England wants, 98, 110, 139; and does *not* want, 103, 150; a strange feeling, to be at the apex of English affairs, 120; England with the largest mass of real living interests ever intrusted to a Nation, 129; means to keep her Colonies awhile yet, 141, 143; Englishmen dare not believe the truth, 149; English careers to born genius, 167; England's hope in her younger sons, 189; no longer an earnest Nation, 199, 201; time of accounts fast arriving, 238; English Peerages once authentically real, 241; the English *ramadhan*, 250; poor scantling of 'divine convictions,' 265; the History of England, the record of the Divine Appearances among us, 272; our restless gnawing ennui, the painful cry of

an imprisoned heroism, not always to lie imprisoned, 281. See British Nation.
English Character, manful style of, i. 217; stoical pococurantism, 288; wise chiefly by instinct, 375.
—— genius, x. 5; xii. 376; character of, x. 5, 45, 46, 52, 94.
Enniscorthy Castle, taken, xi. 60; surprised, 119.
Ennui, xiii. 281.
Ense's, Varnhagen von, Memoirs, v. 185-206; his peculiar qualifications, 188; visit to Jean Paul, 189; fighting at Wagram, 193; experiences at the Court of Napoleon, 195; Rahel, his Wife, a kind of spiritual queen in Germany, 199; her letters, 200; brilliant talk, 201; her death, 204.
Envy, a putrid corruption of sympathy, iv. 116.
Epics, modern, i. 93; the old Epics *believed* Histories, iv. 40; the true Epic of our Time, 176.
Episcopacy in danger, x. 95. See Church-government.
Epoch, a bewildered, i. 219, 271.
Equality (see Liberty), reign of, viii. 134.
Era, a New, began with Goethe, iv. 107, 110, 150. See Spiritual.
Erasmus, ii. 21.
Erasmus's ape, x. 95.
Ernestine Line of Saxon Princes, v. 348, 353; in its disintegrated state, 358.
Error, and how to confute it, iii. 59.
Escuyer, Patriot l', at Avignon, viii. 52.
Esmonds, the, seat of, xi. 59.
Espréménil, Duval d', notice of, vii. 64; patriot, speaker in Paris Parlement, 66, 68; with crucifix, 75; discovers Brienne's plot, 78; arrest and speech of, 78-81; turncoat, 114; in Constituent Assembly, 172; beaten by populace, 331; guillotined, viii. 329; widow, guillotined, 335.
Essex, Henry Earl of, ix. 153, 246.
—— Earl, General of Parliament Army, x. 100; discontented, 120; relieves Gloucester, 133; is defeated in Cornwall in 1644, 158; is pensioned, and dies, 163; funeral of, 213.
Estaing, Count d', notice of, vii. 191; National Colonel, 204, 207; Royalist, 209; at Queen's trial, viii. 276.
Estate, Third, in 1614, vii. 91; what it is in 1788, and will do, 92, 93; deputies to (1789), 113 (see States-General); a separate order? 120; inertia, 120; declares itself 'National Assembly,' 125.
—— Fourth, of Editors, &c. vii. 183.
Etampes: see Simoneau.
Etat, Tiers: see Estate, Third.
Eternal Melodies, and grinding discords, i. 260.
Eternity looking through Time, vi. 12, 44, 137.
Etiquette, acme of: see Brézé.
Etoile, beginning of Federation at, vii. 261.
Etons and Oxfords, with their broken crumbs of mere *speech*, xiii. 154, 187.
Eure, Lord, one of Cromwell's Lords, xii. 318.
Europe, like a set of parishes, v. 162; modern revolutionary Europe, ix. 27; overcrowded, 67. See Commonweal, Feudal Europe.
European Explosions of '1848,' xiii. 32; wars since Cromwell, 138; modern luxurious Europe, 275.
Evelyn of Wilts, Sir John, in Derby-House Committee, x. 249.
Everard, Leveller, xi. 23.
Evil, Origin of, speculations on the, iv. 19; vi. 116; in the widest sense of the word, 22; nature of, vii. 30; manfully fronted, ix. 58; no evil ever wrought its own cure, xiii. 126. See Badness, Right and Wrong.
Ewer, Colonel, takes Chepstow Castle, x. 268; presents Army Remonstrance, 338; succeeds Colonel Hammond, 345; at Tredah, xi. 54; at Kilkenny, 131, 132, 140.
Exchange, Royal, has been twice burned, x. 71.
Exeter, Bishop of, resemblance between the, and the Archbishop of Tuam, i. 321.
Exeter Hall and its Puritan mummies, i. 389; Exeter-Hall twaddle, v. 285; xiii. 3, 80, 82.
Experience, ix. 299.
Eye-service, xiii. 187.
Eyes and Spectacles, vi. 41.

FABLES, Four, ii. 353; the fourteenth century an age of Fable, iii. 284.
Fact, the smallest historical, contrasted with the grandest fictitious event, iv. 43, 61; Facts, engraved Hierograms, for which the fewest have the key, vi. 123; Fact and Semblance, ix. 80; and Fiction, 106. See Reality.
Fagan's, St., fight at, x. 268.
Fairfax, Lord, in Yorkshire, x. 110; victory by, 120; beaten, 131; besieged in Hull, 138; death of, 274.
—— Sir Thomas, serves under Earl Manchester, x. 142; General of New Model Army, 162 n.; interview with Clubmen, 178; at Bath, 206; adheres to Commons, 209; meets the King, 215; Governor of Hull, 241; in Kent, 273; becomes Lord Fairfax, 274; at trial of Charles I., 249; of Council of State, xi. 2; half Presbyterian, 95; refuses to fight the Scots, 156; gives up his Commission, 156; in Church Commission, xii. 7; in Cromwell's First Parliament, 17: Cromwell's letters to, x. 163, 170, 180, 189, 196, 206, 207, 211, 214, 217, 219, 239, 240, 253, 274, 306, 321, 337; xii. 392.
Faith, the one thing needful, vi. 99. See Believing.
Falkland, Lord, killed, x. 134.
Falmouth, Sterling at, i. 345, 352.
Falsehood, doom of, vii. 167.
Fame, as they call it, i. 194, 223; no test of merit, ii. 156; the fantastic article so called, iv. 89; ix. 170, 174. See Posterity, Popularity.
Family likenesses between Sterling and his parents, i. 200; contrasts and concordances, 269, 311, 375.
Famine in France, vii. 28, 43; in 1788-1792, 84, 123, 133, 175, 182; Louis and Assembly try to relieve, 211, 315; viii. 74 (see Bakers); in 1792, and remedy, 187; remedy by maximum, &c. 236.
—— in Ireland, xi. 78.
Fanaticism and Formula, vii. 166.
Fantasy, the true Heaven-gate or Hell-gate of man, vi. 88, 134.
Fargeau, St., Lepelletier, in National Convention, viii. 165; at King's trial, 205; assassinated, 208; burial of, 212.

Farley Mansion, xi. 318.
Fashionable Novels, vi. 169.
Fast, Monthly, xi. 350 n.
Fate, different ideas of, ii. 294; Sophocles, v. 326.
Fatherhood, vi. 52.
Fatherland: see Altar.
Fauchet, Abbé, at siege of Bastille, vii. 151; famous for Te-Deums, 181, 278; his Cercle Social, 314; in First Parliament, viii. 45; motion by, 55; strips off his insignia, 71; King's death, lamentation, 212; will demit, 250; trial of, 278.
Fauconberg, Lord, marries Mary Cromwell, xii. 151, 317; character of, 317; his letter on Cromwell's death, 375.
Fault, what we mean by a, ii. 191; his faults, not the criterion of any man, vi. 219.
Faussigny, sabre in hand, vii. 317.
Faust, Goethe's, emphatically a work of Art, ii. 116; the story a Christian mythus, 117; several attempts to body it forth, 118; Goethe's success, 119; his conception of Mephistopheles, 119; of Faust himself, 120; of Margaret, 124; the original legend, iii. 289; like a death-song of departing worlds, iv. 147.
Favras, Chevalier, executed, vii. 239.
Fawley Park for sale, xii. 9.
Feak, Anabaptist, against Cromwell, xii. 2.
Feast of Reason, viii. 301-303; of Etre Suprême, 333, 334.
Federation, becoming general, vii. 262; of Champ-de-Mars, 265; deputies to, 266, 274; human species at, 267; ceremonies of, 275-279; a new to be (1792), viii. 94; is held, 99.
Feebleness, the true misery, vi. 100.
Fell, Dr., at Oxford, xi. 256.
Felsted Free-School, x. 86, 80.
Felton, John, character and death, x. 49.
Fens, draining of the, x. 77; drained, xi. 332.
Fenton, Sir William, Commissioner at Cork, xi. 80, 91.
Fenwick, Col., besieges Hume Castle, xi. 244.
Feoffees, purchases by, x. 40; prosecuted by Laud, 41; suppressed, 57; losses of, 72.
Féraud, in National Convention, viii. 164; massacred there, 364.
Ferral, Lieut.-Gen., attacks Passage, xi. 93.
Ferrar's, Nicholas, establishment, x. 56.
Fersen, Count, viii. 8; gets berline built, 9; acts coachman (King's flight), 10-12.
Fethard Town described, xi. 121.
Fetishes, reckoned respectable, xiii. 238, 254.
Feudal Europe, old, fallen a-dozing to die, iv. 259.
Feudalism, death of, in France, vii. 105.
Feuillans, Club, vii. 253; viii. 32; denounce Jacobins, 39; decline, 74; extinguished, 74; Battalion, 83; Justices and Patriotism, 93; Directory, 94.
Fichte's notion of the Literary Man, ii. 44; vi. 301; his Philosophy, ii 58; iii. 75.
Fiction, and its kinship to *lying*, iv. 40; idle fiction intolerable to a serious soul, xiii. 274.
Fiddlestring, Mr. Hesperus, xiii. 82.
Fiennes, Nathaniel, surrenders Bristol, x. 132; in Derby-House Committee, 249; in Council of State, xii. 5 n.; Keeper of Great Seal, 103; in Committee of Kingship, 228, 234; his speech analysed, 326.
Fiesco, Verschwörning des, Schiller's tragedy of the, i. 26.
Figaro, Mariage de, vii. 47; viii. 140.
Fighting, all, an ascertainment who has the right to rule over whom, ix. 80, 261; murderous Fighting become a 'glorious Chivalry,' 218. See Battle.
Finances, bad state of, vii. 38, 51, 70, 85; how to be improved, 64, 70, 77, 235.
Finch, Speaker, his conduct, x. 51; flies, 87.
Finch, Col., in Gerard's plot, xii. 13.
Fincham, Thomas, Cromwell's letter in behalf of, xii. 427.
Fire, and vital fire, vi. 42, 104; miraculous nature of, 197.
Firebrace, Henry, notice of, x. 260.
Five Members, the, x. 96.
Flanders, how Louis XV. conquers, vii. 7.
Flandre, regiment de, at Versailles, vii. 191, 192, 206.
Fleet, revolt of, x. 278.
Fleetwood, Capt., at Cambridge, x. 105; is Lieut.-Col., 149; Lieut.-Gen. at Dunbar, xi. 191; at Worcester, 291, 293; Deputy in Ireland, 314; of Council of State, xii 5 n.; in Cromwell's First Parliament, 17; Cromwell's letters to, 325, 363; xii. 10, 110; conduct in Ireland, 108; Major-General, 119 n.; against King, 301.
Fleming, Adjutant, notice of, x. 206; killed, 267.
—— Sir Oliver, Master of Ceremonies, xi. 7.
Flesselles, Paris Provost, vii. 136, 140; shot, 154.
Fleuriot, Mayor, guillotined, viii. 347.
Fleury, Joly de, Controller of Finance, vii. 51.
Flunkey, the White, the flower of nomadic servitude, xiii. 13; flunkeys, whom no Hero-King *can* reign over, ix. 97. See Valets.
Fontaine, La, v. 189.
Fontenai, Mme., viii. 292, 339. See Cabarus.
Foolishest, the, of existing mortals, iv. 39; privilege of the foolish to be governed by the wise, xiii. 45, 54.
Force, La: see Prison.
Force, universal presence of, vi. 42.
Foreign Office, our, astonishing condition of, xiii. 95; reformed, 136.
Forests, disappearance of, ix. 147.
Formica-leo, natural history of the, iv. 223.
Forms, necessity for, vi. 339.
Formula, vii. 166; and Fanaticism destroyed, 175; essential to man, viii. 178; formulas, the very skin and muscular tissue of Man's Life, ix. 168, 170.
Fornham, battle of, ix. 110.
Forster, and French soldier, viii. 176; account of, 229.
—— John, on Cromwell, x. 15.
Fortescue, Major-Gen., in Jamaica, xii. 125; Cromwell's letter to, 130; death of, 132.
Fortuna, ii. 357.
Fortunatus's wishing Hat, vi. 159, 161.
Fouché, at Lyons, viii. 294.
Foulon, bad repute of, vii. 53; nicknamed, 71; advises grass for the People, 88; funeral of, 158; alive, judged, massacred, 180.

Fouqué, Friedrich de la Motte, parentage, life and writings. ii. 311-315.
Fouquier-Tinville: see Tinville.
Fournier, and Orleans Prisoners, viii. 160.
Fourteenth and Fifteenth Centuries, German Literature of the, iii. 264-308.
Fourth Estate, beginnings of the, iv. 87; its energetic youth, 208.
Fox, Somerset, his plot, xii. 12, 15. See Gerard, Vowel.
Foxes, the, a pleasant Quaker family, i. 346, 350, 351, 352, 355; modest *Anti*-Hudson testimonial, 359.
Fox's, George, heavenward aspirations, and earthly Independence, ii. 55; vi. 128; xii. 63; with Cromwell. 120, 121, 369, 370.
Foy, Café de, revolutionary, vii. 135, 184, 189.
France, abject, under Louis XV., vii. 6, 12-14; Kings of, 7; early history of, 8; decay of Kingship in, 11; on accession of Louis XVI, 24; and Philosophy, 25, 26; famine in, 1775, 28, 29, 43 (see Famine); state of, prior to Revolution, 30; aids America, 36: in 1788, 83; inflammable (July 1789), 138; gibbets, general overturn, 179; how to be regenerated, 240, 241; riotousness of, 321; Mirabeau and, 335; after King's flight, viii. 15; petitions against Royalty, 33; warfare of towns in, 51; Europe leagues against, 64; terror of (in Spring 1792), 69; decree of war, 79; country in danger, 96, 100; general enlisting, 100; rage of (in Autumn 1792), 127, 129; Marat's Circular, September, 160; Sansculottic, 178; declaration of war, 213; Mountain and Girondins divide, 223; communes of, 266; coalition against, 270; levy in mass, 273: prisons, in 1793, 292; one large 'committee of mercy' (in 1795), 352; state of, since the Revolution. 375, 376.
—— treaty with, xii. 104, 108, 124, 308; Cromwell's letter to King of, xii. 358.
Francia, Dr, v. 249-294; the notablest of South-American Dictators, 257; parentage and schooling, 264; perhaps the justest Advocate that ever took briefs in that distant country, 267; an unjust judge discomfited, 271; hypochondria, 273; Secretary of a Paraguay National Congress, 274; retires into privacy, 275; his personal appearance, and library, 276; gets himself declared Dictator, 278; a conspiracy detected, and forty persons executed, 279; two harvests in one season, 280; his lease of Paraguay, 282; Funeral Eulogium, 284; his message to the English Nation, 287; his 'Workman's Gallows,' 289; mode of life, 290; treatment of M. Bonpland, 292; rumoured quarrel with his father; his life of labour ended, 294.
Franklin, Ambassador to France, vii. 36; his death lamented, 278; bust in Jacobins, viii. 75.
Fraser's Magazine, vi. 5, 182.
Fraternity and Equality, viii. 285; xiii. 46, 67, 89.
Frederick August, the big King of Poland, v. 356.
—— Elector, *der Streitbare*, v. 339.
—— the Great at Dresden, ii. 252, 255; his favour for La Motte Fouqué, 312; Voltaire's visit to, iii. 25; his notion of Shakspeare, 44; a Philosophe King, iv. 216; symbolic glimpse of, vi. 49; Fritz of Prussia, xiii. 138.
Frederick the Pacific, v. 339; differences with Kunz von Kaufungen, 341; his two Children stolen and recovered, 342.
—— the Wise, who saved Luther from the Diet of Worms, v. 349.
Freedom, a higher, than freedom from oppression, iii. 117; meaning of, vii. 144.
Freemasonry, Cagliostro's, iv. 270.
Free Men, the Nobles of the World, xiii. 59, 218.
Free Press, xiii. 195.
French Donothing Aristocracy, ix. 209; the French Revolution a voice of God, though in wrath, 249, 283.
—— People, the, a kind of Messiah People, very glorious indeed, xiii. 31; bitter aggravations, 32; French Convention, 202.
—— Philosophy, — see Philosophy. Anglomania, vii 39; character of the, 47; literature, in 1784, 45, 47; Parlements, nature of, 49; Mirabeau, type of the, 108. Guards, —see Guards. Seigneurs,—see Seigneurs. Mob, character of, 196; Julius Cæsar on the, 312; Millennium, viii. 218.
—— poetry, iii. 45; philosophy, 53, 103.
—— rage against Britain, i. 370.
—— Revolution, the, not yet completed, ix. 26; French Convention, 33; Priesthood destroyed, ix. 35; Revolution compared to English, x. 221.
French Revolution, Carlyle's, published, i. 302.
Fréron, notice of, vii. 249; renegade, viii. 352; Gilt Youth of, 355.
Fréteau, at Royal Session, vii. 72; arrested, 73; liberated, 75.
Freys, the Jew brokers, vii. 244; imprisoned, viii. 307.
Friendship in the old heroic sense, ii 232; now obsolete, vi. 72; an incredible tradition, 101, 142; how it were possible, 131, 180.
Frost: see Fire.
Fugger, Anton, of Augsburg, iii. 294.
Fuller's *Ephemeris Parliamentaria*, x. 51.
Funerals, Cockney, ix. 167.
Futteral, Andreas and his Wife, vi. 49.
Future, organic filaments of the, vi. 149; the future already extant though unseen, ix. 265; England's Future, 279. See Past.

GADARENES-SWINERY, xiii. 11.
Gainsborough relieved, x. 122, 128; xii. 387.
Gallois, to La Vendée, viii. 56.
Gallows, terror of the, v. 54; Dr. Francia's 'Workman's Gallows,' 289.
Gamain, Sieur, Locksmith, informer, viii. 195.
Game, vii. 180.
Garat, Minister of Justice, viii. 207.
Gardes, Françaises, Suisses, Du Corps, &c.: see Guards.
Gathercoal's, Yankee, torch-gleams, xiii. 277.
Gazette, origin of the term, vii. 251.
Geddard village, murder at, xi. 245.
Geddes, Jenny, and her stool, x. 76.
Geese, with feathers and without, ix. 187.
Gell, Sir John, notice of, x. 116.
Generals, Major-, their office, xii. 101; names of, 119 n.; withdrawn, 198.

Genius, ever a secret to itself, iv. 4, 8; v. 155; the world's treatment of, vi. 76; what meant by, ix. 137, 297 See Original Man.
Genlis, Mme., account of, vii. 247; and D'Orleans, viii. 226; to Switzerland, 238.
Gensonné, Girondist, viii. 45; to La Vendée, 56; arrested, 252; trial of, 278.
Gentleman, modern, and meagre Pattern-Figure, v. 1. See Respectability.
George, Duke of Saxony, whom Luther thought so little of, v. 351.
George's Hill, St., Levellers at, xi. 23.
Georges-Cadoudal, in La Vendée, viii. 358.
Georget, at siege of Bastille, vii. 150.
Gérard, Farmer, Rennes deputy, vii. 112.
Gerard's plot, xii. 12; he is beheaded, 15.
Gerle, Dom, at Théot's, viii. 334.
German Literature, State of, ii. 20-65; foreign ignorance of, 22; charge of bad taste. 28; German authors not specially poor, 33; high character of German poetry, 48; charge of Mysticism, 53; Irreligion, 64; First era of German Literature, iii. 265, 317; physical science unfolds itself, 269; Didactic period, 271; Fable Literature, 284; on all hands an aspect of full progress, 292; rudiments of a new spiritual era, 319; for two centuries in the sere leaf, 143; German speculative Thought, vi. 2, 8, 17, 19, 33; historical researches, 22, 45.
—— meaning of the name, vii. 313.
Germany, Emperor of, Papist, xii. 332.
Germinal, Twelfth (First of April), 1795, viii. 360, 361.
Gerund grinding, vi. 64.
Gesta Romanorum, the, iii. 285, 287.
Ghost, an authentic, vi. 161.
Gibbons, Major, defeats Royalists, x. 277.
Gibraltar besieged, vii. 37; Cromwell's idea of, xii. 142, 154, 155.
Gibson, Bishop, on Cromwell, x. 14.
Gideon's fleece, ix. 225.
Gifted, the, ix. 295.
Gifts, patriotic, viii. 135.
Gigmanity, literary, iii. 144; iv. 129.
Gillespie, Rev. Patrick, interview with Cromwell, xi. 271.
Gin, the most authentic demon in our times, ix. 22.
Girondins, origin of term, viii. 45; in National Convention, 182; against Robespierre, 183; on King's trial, 192, 203-206; and Jacobins, 193-195; formula of, 215 (see Mountain); favourers of, 221; schemes of, 222, 233; to be seized, 232; break with Danton, 241; armed against Mountain, 242; accuse Marat, 243; departments, 243; commission of twelve, 246; commission broken, 247; arrested, 251, 276; dispersed, 254; war by, 261; retreat of eleven, 262; trial of, 278; last supper of, 279; guillotined, 280; fate in history, ix. 56.
Glamorgan, Vale of, i. 202.
Glasgow, Assembly there, x. 82; Cromwell at, xi. 223, 224, 269; riot in, 271; Glasgow Thugs, ix. 4, 22, 26.
Glencairn's rebellion in Highlands, xi. 299; xii. 10.
Gloucester besieged, x. 133; relieved by Earl Essex, 133; Cromwell's letters for defence of, xii. 439, 448, 450.
Glynn, Recorder in the Tower, x. 249 n.; Chief Justice on Committee of Kingship, xii. 233.
Gobel, Archbishop to be, vii. 233, 339; renounces religion, viii. 300; arrested, 320; guillotined, 328.
God, the Living, no cunningly-devised fable, iv. 231; judgments of, 261: God, the Unslumbering, Omnipresent, Eternal, vi. 32; God's Presence manifested to our eyes and hearts, 39; an absentee God, 99; forgetting God, ix. 177; God's Justice, 219, 248; belief in God, 243; proceeding 'to invent God,' 246.
Godlike, the, vanished from the world, iv. 24.
Goddard, Guibon, in Cromwell's First Parliament, xii. 17; his narrative of, 38, 61, 62.
Goethe's intercourse and connexion with Schiller, i. 72, 77, 96, 183: his composure amid the Kantean turmoil, 87; his reverent and stubborn Realism, 183; his last birthday, 255; Epigram, 291; Sterling's gradual recognition of his worth, 288, 309; cannot find in him what he would expect in Jean Paul, 298; looks at him, like a shying horse at a post, 304.
—— pictorial criticism, ii. 47; his Poetry, 49; Goethe. 150-194; his Autobiography, 154; unexampled reputation, 155; the Teacher and exemplar of his age, 157; *Werter*, and *Götz von Berlichingen*, 159, 164; v 161; his notions on suicide, ii. 168; *Wilhelm Meister*, 169-183; spiritual manhood, 184; singularly emblematic intellect, 185; a master of Humanity and of Poetry, 186; not a 'German Voltaire,' 188, 190; his faults, 191; Sketch of his life and works, 339-350; his prose, iii. 158; intercourse with Schiller, 198, 219; Goethe's Portrait, iv. 34; Death of Goethe, 105-112; beginning of a New Era, 107; Goethe's Works, 113-156; his greatness, 123; his *Wahrheit und Dichtung*, 126; childhood and parentage, 129; his father's hatred of the French Army, 131; beautiful Gretchen, 136; at Leipzig University, 136; studies for the Law, 138; the good Frederike, 139; Goethe's goodness and badness, 140; the German Chaos, 142; first literary productions, 144; settles in Weimar, 145; inward life as recorded in his Writings, 147; tribute from Fifteen Englishmen, 148; his spiritual significance, 155; a contemporary of Mirabeau, v. 85.
—— inspired melody, vi. 155; his 'characters,' 263; notablest of Literary Men, 302; at Argonne, viii. 168; in Prussian retreat, 173-175; at Mentz, 264; spiritual significance, ix. 253, 291; his *Mason-Lodge*, 254. See *Faust, Helena, Novelle, the Tale*, Madame de Staël.
—— *Wilhelm Meister's Apprenticeship and Travels*, xv. 1; xvi. 1.
Goffe, Major, exhorts at Windsor Castle, x. 265; is at Dunbar, xi. 191; a Major-Gen., xii. 119 n.; in favour of Kingship. 301.
Goguelat, Engineer, assists Louis's flight, viii. 8. 17-19 (see Choiseul, Colonel-Duke); intrigues, 59.
Goldsmith, ii. 162; iv. 91.
Gondran, captain of French Guard, vii. 218.
Good, no, that is possible but shall one day be

real, iv. 28; in Goodness the surest instinct for the Good, 262; growth and propagation of, vi. 61.
Good Man, the, ever a mystic creative centre of Goodness, iv. 175; the working of the good and brave endures literally forever, v. 206. See Man.
Goodman, Bishop, character of, x. 21.
Goodson, Vice-Admiral, character of, xii. 125; Cromwell's letter to, 126.
Goodwin, Robert, M.P., sent to Charles I., x. 208.
—— Rev. Thomas, preaches to Parliament, x. 18.
Goring, Lord, pardoned, xi. 9.
Gorsas, Journalist, pleads for Swiss, viii. 119; in National Convention, 164; his house broken into, 232; guillotined, first Deputy that suffers, 275.
Gossip preferable to pedantry, ix. 109; seven centuries off, 128, 131.
Gottsched, Goethe's interview with, iv. 137.
Goujon, Member of Convention, in riot of Prairial, viii. 365; suicide, 366.
Goupil, on extreme left, viii. 32.
Gouvion, Major-General, at Paris, vii. 197; flight to Varennes, viii. 8, 10, 13; death of, 82.
Government, Maurepas's, vii. 33; bad state of French, 93; real, 169; French revolutionary, viii. 305, 319; Danton on, 325.
—— true, the, showing *what to do*, iv. 260; art of governing, ix. 139, 140; Lazy Governments, 271; every Government the symbol of its People, 280.
—— Offices, who made our, xiii. 105; beautiful notion of No-Government, 133; Phantasm Governors, 191.
Grampian Hills, Charles II. flies to, xi. 221.
Grantham: see Battle.
Graphic, secret of being, iv. 45; vi. 254.
Grave, Chev. de, War-Minister, loses head, viii. 80.
Gray, ii. 162; his misconception of Norse Lore. vi. 210.
Great Men, the Fire-pillars of the world, iii. 183; iv. 69, 108, 151; and Fire-eaters, v. 146; on the Greatness of, iv. 115; v. 143; vi. 108; ix. 226. See Man, Wisdom.
Greek Dramatic Forms, i. 354; Consecration of the Flesh, iv. 245.
Greenwood, Dr., Cromwell's letters to, xi. 257, 259; xii 428.
Grégoire, Curé, notice of, vii. 115; in National Convention, viii. 163; detained in Convention, 251; and destruction of religion, 300.
Grenoble, riot at, vii. 82.
Gresham College, Cromwell's letter to Governors of, xii. 146.
Grey of Groby, Lord, in Civil War, x. 116; assists in Pride's Purge, 346; in prison, xii. 99.
—— of Wark, Lord, commands Eastern Association, x. 101.
Grievances, writ of, vii. 95.
Grillparzer's, Franz, superior merits for a playwright, ii. 272; his worst Play the *Ahnfrau*, 273; his *König Ottokars Glück und Ende*, 275.
Grimm, iv. 212.
Grimston, Harbottle, after Restoration, x. 221.
Grocers' Hall, dinner at, xi. 29.
Grove, Major, beheaded, xii. 100.
Guadet, Girondin, viii. 45; cross-questions Ministers, 73; arrested, 252; guillotined, 281.
Guards, Swiss, and French, at Réveillon riot, vii. 102; French won't fire, 130, 134; come to Palais-Royal, 135; fire on Royal-Allemand, 139; to Bastille, 142, 151, 153, 154; name changed, 155; Lafayette and, 202; National, origin of, 133; number of, 143; Body, at Versailles, October Fifth, 208; fight there, 216; fly in Château, 218; Body, and French, at Versailles, 218; National, at Nanci, 296; French, last appearance of, viii. 38; National, how commanded (1791), 43; Constitutional, dismissed, 71; Filles-St.-Thomas, 83, 105; routed, 106; Swiss, at Tuileries, 110, 116; fire, 117; ordered to cease, destroyed, 119, 120; eulogy of, 120; Departmental, for National Convention, 183.
Guildhall, scene at, x. 233.
Guillams, Capt., slain, x. 184.
Guillaume, Clerk, pursues King, viii. 21. See Drouet.
Guillotin, Doctor, summoned by Paris Parlement, vii. 99; invents the guillotine, 112; deputed to King, 205, 211; at Louis's visit to Assembly, 255.
Guillotine, invented, vii. 112; described, viii. 133; in action, 275, 287, 292; to be improved, 335; number of sufferers by, 367.
Guizot, M., criticised, x. 178 n.
Gullibility, blessings of, vi. 69.
Gunpowder, invention and benefit of, iii. 296; vi. 24, 110.
Gurth, born thrall of Cedric the Saxon, ix. 235, 261, 266.
Gustavus the Great dies, x. 55. See Sweden.
Guthry, Rev. James, interview with Cromwell, xi. 271.

HABIT, how, makes dullards of us all, vi. 34; the deepest law of human nature, ix. 168. See Custom.
Hacker, Col., at execution of Charles I., x. 8, 9; routs Mosstroopers, xi. 245, 246; Cromwell's letter to, 248.
Haddington. Cromwell at, xi. 163, 189.
Hailes, Lord, character of, xi. 269.
Half-and-halfness, iii. 188; iv. 88, 231; the one thing wholly despicable and forgettable, 246; Half-men, vi. 112.
Hall, Bishop, pamphlet of, x. 86.
Hamilton, Duke James, flies to King, x. 137; taken, 208; prepares an army, 255; his army ready, 277; defeated at Preston, taken at Uttoxeter, 279-290; escapes, and is retaken, xi. 4; condemned, 9; executed, 10.
—— Duke William, succeeds his brother, xi. 10; taken at Worcester, 295; dies, 297.
Hammond, Lieut.-Gen., summoned by Commons, x. 223; notice of, 247.
—— Col. Robert, at Bristol siege, x. 185; the King flies to, 245; character of, 246; provided for, 259; letters from Cromwell to, 248, 259, 339.
—— Dr. King's Chaplain, x. 247.
Hampden, John, v. 295; vi. 341; his coffin opened, ix. 163.

Hampden, John, his mother, x. 21; a Puritan, 41; shipmoney, 58, 73; trial of, 77; is Colonel in Parliament Army, 100; impatient, 111, 112; proposed as Lord General, 120; mortally wounded, 122; Cromwell to, on Ironsides, xii. 249.
Hampton-Court Conference, x. 28, 29. See Charles I.
Hand, Mr., Cromwell's letter to, xii. 381.
Happiness-controversy, the foolish, iii. 200; illustration of the 'Greatest-Happiness' principle, iv. 268; the whim of Happiness, vi. 116; pitiful pretensions to be happy, ix. 190; happiness of getting one's work done, 192. See Unhappy.
Hapton parishioners, letter concerning, xi. 204.
Hare, Archdeacon, and his biography of Sterling, i. 191; his testimony to Sterling's high character, 215; their opportune meeting at Bonn, 263; Sterling becomes his Curate, 264; a welcome fellow-labourer, 268.
Harley, Col., Presbyterian, x. 222, 347.
Harrington, Sir James, Cromwell's letter to, xi. 32.
—— James, author of *Oceana*, x. 260.
Harris's Life of Cromwell, x. 70 n.
Harrison, Thomas, notice of, x. 19; at Basing siege, 194; at Preston, 290; Major-General, in Scotland. xi. 286; at Conference at Speaker's, 311-313; at disbanding of Rump, 329, 330; in Council of State, 367 n.; Anabaptist, dismissed, xii. 3; and Fifth Monarchy, 25; in prison, 99, 229.
Hartfell, Lord, in Cromwell's First Parliament, xii. 17.
Hartlib, Samuel, letter on dissolution of Cromwell's Second Parliament, xii. 353.
Harvey, on Cromwell's death, xii. 368, &c.
Haselrig, Sir Arthur, one of the Five Members, x. 96; Governor of Newcastle, 320, 321; in Cromwell's First Parliament, xii. 17; opposed to Cromwell, 61; Cromwell's letters to, 179, 195, 196 n., 197 n.; xii. 418, 419; in Cromwell's Second Parliament, 158; excluded, 197; re-admitted, 317; one of Cromwell's Lords, 318; sits in the Commons, 328, 348; his death, 344 n.
Hassenfratz, in War Office, viii. 185, 190.
Hastings, Mr., for the King, x. 116.
Hat, perambulating, seven-feet high, ix. 181.
Hater, a good, still a desideratum, ii. 212.
Hatred an inverse love, iv. 116; hatred of scoundrels, the backbone of all religion, xiii. 81; divine hatred, 86.
Haverfordwest, Cromwell's letters to Mayor of, xii. 404, 405.
Haynes, Col., Deputy Major-Gen., xii. 120 n.; apprehends poet Cleveland, 134.
Hazlitt, iv. 24.
Healing Art, the, a sacred one, ix. 73.
Health, meaning and value of, v. 147, 157.
Heart, a loving, the beginning of Knowledge, iv. 46, 120.
Heath's, Carrion, *Life of Oliver Cromwell*, v. 296; x. 11, 12.
Heaven and Hell, our notions of, ix. 183; Heaven's Chancery, 217, 221.
Heavyside, the solid Englishman, xiii. 38, 240.
Hébert, Editor of Père Duchesne, vii. 311; signs petition, viii. 34 (see Père Duchesne); arrested, 247; at Queen's trial, 277; quickens Revolutionary Tribunal, 279; arrested, 320; guillotined, 323; Widow guillotined, 328.
Heeren, Professor, and his rub-a-dub style of moral-sublime, ii. 241.
Heldenbuch, the, iii. 223; specimen of the old poetry, 225; connexion with the *Nibelungen*, 228.
Helena, Goethe's, a dainty little Phantasmagoria, ii. 111; half-literal, half-parabolic style, 112; *Helena*, part of a continuation of *Faust*, 115; introductory Notice by the Author, 125; condensed elucidatory sketch of the poem, with extracts, 126-128.
Hell, Sterling's desire for earnest well-doing, were it even in, i. 273, 358; no perdition so perilous as a faithless lying spirit, 272; real Hell of a man, ix. 122; Hell of the English, 184, 281.
Helvetius's Game-Preserves, iv. 214.
Hénault, President, on Surnames, vii. 3.
Henderson, Sir John, renegade Scot, x. 115, 142.
Hengst and Horsa, iv. 187; ix. 43.
Henriot, General of National Guard, viii. 248, 250; and the Convention, 251; to deliver Robespierre, 344; seized, rescued, 344; end of, 347.
Henry II. choosing an Abbot, ix. 132; his Welsh wars, 154; on his way to the Crusades, 160; our brave Plantagenet Henry, 260.
Henry VIII., ix. 147.
Henry, Prince, death of, x. 30.
Henshaw, Major, in Gerard's plot, xii. 13.
Herbert, Philip, and James Ramsay, v. 319.
—— Col., at Bristol siege, x. 186; in Wales, 272.
—— Lord, afterwards Duke Beaufort, xi. 266, 267; in Cromwell's First Parliament, xii. 17.
Herbois, Collot d', notice of, vii. 242; in National Convention, viii. 164; at Lyons massacre, 294, 295; in Salut Committee, 305; attempt to assassinate, 332; bullied at Jacobins, 342; President, night of Thermidor, 345; accused, 359; banished, 360; at Surinam, 366.
Hercules, ix. 211, 230; Hercules-Harlequin in the Foreign Office, not pleasant to think of, xiii. 95.
Herder, iii. 158; iv. 141.
Héritier, Jerôme l', shot at Versailles, vii. 216.
Heroes, Universal-History the united biographies of, vi. 185, 206; how 'little critics' account for great men, 193; all Heroes fundamentally of the same stuff, 205, 216, 243, 271, 300, 328; Heroism possible to all, 280, 293, 316; Intellect, the primary outfit, 264; no man a hero to a *valet*-soul, 322, 341, 347; heroic poems and heroic lives, ii. 239; iii. 122; iv. 243; heroic Promised-Land, ix. 99; heroic and unheroic ages, xi. 64.
Heroine-worship, ii. 258; v. 199.
Heroisms, why, are not done now, v. 329; Puritan heroism, x. 2, 8.
Hero-worship perennial in the human bosom, iv. 58; v. 135; the only creed that can never grow obsolete, iv. 116; the cornerstone of all Society, vi. 153; and tap-root

of all Religion, 192-196, 216; perennial in man, 194, 247, 279, 337; ix. 96, 113, 163, 165, 247, 262, 293; what Heroes have done for us, 173, 183; a man's 'religion,' the *practical* Hero-worship that is in him, xiii. 237, 238, 280. See Religion.
Heterodoxy and Orthodoxy, viii 7.
Heuschrecke and his biographic documents, vi. 6; his loose, zigzag, thin-visaged character, 14; unaccustomed eloquence, and interminable documentary superfluities, 45; bewildered darkness, 180.
Hewit, Dr., plot and execution of, xii 354, 355.
Hewson, Col., at Langford House. x. 198; at Tredah, xi. 54; Governor of Dublin, 136; joins Cromwell in the South, 138, 139; one of Cromwell's Lords, xii. 318.
Heylin, lying Peter, x 55
Heyne, Life of, ii. 241-267; parentage, boyhood and extreme penury, 243; a poor incipient Gerund-grinder, 246; a school-triumph, 247; miseries of a poor scholar, 248; his edition of Tibullus, 252; first interview with Theresa Wei-s, 253; driven from Dresden by the Prussian bombardment, 255; marries, 257; his Wife s devoted courage, 257; appointed to a professorship in Göttingen, 258; his Wife's death, 261; marries again, 262; university labours, 263; death, 264.
Hierarchy of Beneficences, xiii. 224, 234; Religion the parent of social Hierarchies, 236; England once a Hierarchy, 244, 272. See Aristocracy.
Higgins, General O', Director of Chile, v. 253.
Highgate Hill, a view from, i. 231.
Hill, Dr. Thomas, Master of Trinity College, Cambridge, Cromwell's letter to, x. 245.
—— William, notice of, x. 304.
Hills, Henry, printer to Protector, xii. 70.
Hilsden House taken, x. 146.
Hinchinbrook House, x 17; sale of, 43; Charles I. at, 225.
Hippesley, Sir John, sent to Charles I., x. 208.
Hispaniola, failure of attack on, xii 122, 123.
Historians, character of good, x. 6; labour of, 10.
History, methods of writing, i. 76, 79; on History, iii. 168-177; the basis of all knowledge, 168; vain Philosophies of, 160; iv. 38; the more important part of, lost without recovery, iii. 170, 183; artists and artisans of, 173; infinity, 174; iv. 210; the history of a nation's Poetry, the essence of its entire doings, iii. 315; History the essence of innumerable Biographies, iv. 38; the true Poetry, 62; what things are called 'Histories,' 63; v. 2; on History again, iv. 181-8; the Message from the whole Past to each man, 182; Universal History the Autobiography of Mankind, 185; the grand sacred Epos, or Bible of World-History, 244; Scott's Historical Novels, 176; unspeakable value of contemporary memoirs, 229; of a sincere Portrait, 330 who is a Historical Character, 335; all-inweaving Tissue of, vi. 12; by what strange chances do we live in, 29; a perpetual Revelation, 108, 118, 155; Philosophical History, ix. 257, 258; History of Puritanism, its difficulties, x. 2-7; History of England in a strange condition, xiii. 240, 272.
Histriomastix: see Prynne.
Hitch, Rev. Mr., Cromwell's letter to, x. 145.
Hitzig's Lives of Hoffmann and Werner, ii. 67.
Hobart, Col. Sir Miles, x 115.
Hoche, Sergeant Lazare, in Bastille time, vii. 134; General against Prussia, viii. 312; pacifies La Vendée, 357.
Hodgson, Capt., character of, x. 279; in Scots War, xi. 159; narrative by, 162.
Hoffmann's quick eye and fastidious feelings, ii. 92; his life, character and writings, 321.
Hohenstauffen Emperors, last of the, iii. 266.
Hohenzollerns, the Brandenburg, and their talent for annihilating rubbish, v. 354.
Holbach, Baron d', iv. 215; his Philosophes and Philosophesses, 220.
Holborn, General, invites Cromwell to Edinburgh, x. 327; at Dunbar battle, xi. 184 n.
Holland, Earl, at Kingston, x. 276; condemned, xi. 9; executed, 10.
—— House, x. 234.
—— invaded by Prussia, 1787, vii. 70.
Hollar, Wenceslaus, taken at Basing, x. 196.
Holles, Denzil, holds down the Speaker, x. 51; imprisoned, 52; Presbyterian, 222; a leader in Parliament, 224. See Members, Eleven.
—— John, and his quarrel with Gervase Markham, v. 316.
Holmby, Charles I. at, x. 204, 215.
Home Office, William Conqueror's, xiii. 106; the Home Office our grand primary concern, 146, 151.
Home poetry, ii. 204, 217.
Homer, ii. 209; iii. 262; Homer's Iliad, vi. 137; x. 5; a Ballad *History*, xiii. 271.
Hondschooten, Battle of, viii. 310
Hooke, Alderman, notice of, xi. 158.
Hoop, Père, iv. 220.
Hope, this world emphatically the Place of, vi. 98; false shadows of, 113; vii. 32.
Hope's, Mr., Essay on the *Origin and Prospects of Man*, iv. 25
Hopton, Sir Ingram, at Winceby, x. 143.
—— Sir Ralph, character of, x. 189.
Horn's, Franz, merits as a literary historian, ii. 20.
Horse, the, his own tailor, vi. 33.
—— the, willing to work can find food and shelter, ix 16, 87; *Laissez-faire* applied to horses, 21; Goethe's thoughts about the Horse, 193; wooden, described, xi. 17; Farmer Hodge's Horses, xiii. 17; all emancipated. 48; the horse's 'vote,' 213.
Horsemanship, Guacho, v. 270
Horton, Col., defeats Welsh, x. 268; dies, xi. 77.
Hôtel des Invalides, plundered, vii. 147.
—— de Ville, after Bastille taken, vii. 153; harangues at, 157; nearly fired by women, 198; Louis in, 225.
Hotham, Capt., doings and arrest of, x. 123.
Hothams, the, executed, x. 219.
Houchard, General, unsuccessful, viii. 270, 311; guillotined, 291
Howard, Col., in Little Parliament, xi. 334; attends Cromwell to Parliament, xii. 17; Deputy Major General, 120 n; one of Cromwell's Lords, 318.
Howard, the beatified Philanthropist, xiii. 75

Howard's, Dr., Letters, xii. 113 n.
Howe, Lord, beats French navy, viii. 312.
Howel Davies, the Bucanier, ix. 219.
Howlet, Mr., tutor to Cromwell, x. 31, 32.
Hubbert, Capt., passed over, xi. 246.
Hudson's Statue, xiii. 220-248; what the Hudson-worshipers ought to have done, while they were about it, 231; Hudson's Popular Election, 228; his value as a railway-maker, 229. See Statues.
Hughes, Col, Governor of Chepstow, Cromwell's letter to, xii. 403.
Hugo, Abbot, old, feeble and improvident, ix. 115; his death, 118; difficulties with Monk Samson, 126.
Huguenin, Patriot, tocsin in heart, viii. 72; 20 June (1792), 88.
Hulin, Half-pay, at siege of Bastille, vii. 153.
Hull, Charles I. attempts, x 97; besieged, 136, 138, 144; Governors of, 241.
Hume Castle besieged, xi. 244.
Hume's scepticism, ii. 61; iii 76; iv. 108; Hume and Johnson contrasted, 102; fifteen Atheists at one cast, 229.
Humility, Christian, iii. 47; blessed are the humble, they that are *not* known, v. 206.
Humour, sensibility the essence of, ii 11, 213; finest perfection of poetic genius, iii. 208.
Hungary, King of, Papist, xii. 332.
Hungerford, Anthony, Royalist, xi. 318, 323; Cromwell's letters to, 319, 324.
—— Sir Edward, notice of, xi 318, 319.
—— Henry, notice of, xi. 318.
Huns, Attila's, long arms of, viii. 128.
Huntingdon described, x. 17.
Huntly, Marquis, for Charles II., xi. 221, 280.
Hurry, Col. Sir John, wounded at Preston, x. 286; taken with Montrose, and executed, 292 n.
Hursley described, x. 250.
Hurst Castle, Charles I. at, x. 345.
Huruge, St, Marquis, cracked, vii. 159; bull-voice, 185: imprisoned, 189; at Versailles, 206; and Pope's effigy, viii. 6; at Jacobins, 81; on King's trial, 202.
Huss, John, iii. 297.
Hutchinson and Cromwell, vi. 341, 362; Col. Hutchinson, Governor of Nottingham, x. 333.
Hyde, Mr.: see Clarendon, Lord.
—— Park, Army near, x. 234; accident to Cromwell in, xii 64.
Hypocrisy, the old true paths submerged in, i. 264; the one thing bad, 272, 292; silence far preferable, 326; duty of abhorrence, 328.

ICELAND, the home of Norse Poets, vi. 196.
Idea, society the embodiment of an, iv. 11; great men, v. 146. See Man.
Ideal good, i. 38; the Ideal exists only in the Actual, vi. 119, 121; ix. 115, 218; realised Ideals, vii. 9; ix. 38.
Idealism, iii. 73.
Idleness, misery of, i 38; in Rome, 322; doom of, ix. 13; alone without hope, 185; Idle Aristocracy, 205, 209, 228, 290; how idleness inevitably rots, xiii. 7; Black and White idleness, 24; lying in wait round all labour offices, 101; organised idleness, 139.
Idolatry, vi. 275; criminal only when insincere, 276; all idols have to fall, xiii. 231.
Igdrasil, the Life-Tree, vi. 199, 261; ix. 100, 171, 265.
Ignavia, the general Demon of, xiii. 11.
Ignorance, our Period of, ix. 258.
Ignorant, right of the, to be guided by the Wise, ix. 33.
Iliad, the, ix. 172. See Homer.
Imagination: see Fantasy.
Immortality, a glimpse of, vi. 160.
Impossibility, every genius an, till he appear, ii. 206; Mirabeau's notion of impossibilities, v. 94; Impossible not a good word to have often in the mouth, ix. 57, 85, 87; without *soul* all things impossible, 187; every noble work at first 'impossible,' 225, 229, 301. See New.
Imposture, Empire of, in flames, v. 58; statistics of, vi. 68. See Bankruptcy.
Impropriations, Lay, meaning of, x. 29. See Feoffees.
Improvisators, literary, iii. 57; v. 179.
Inchgarvie taken, xi. 278, 281.
Inchiquin, Lord, assaults Carrick, xi. 89.
Incontinence, the half of all our sins, xiii. 188.
Incumbrance, Parliamentary defining of, xi. 315, 344; xii. 288.
Independence, foolish parade of, vi. 143, 153; ix 293.
Independents and Presbyterians, x. 159, 214, 220.
Indies, West, expedition to, failed, xii. 117, 122.
Indifference, centre of, vi. 103.
Indignation, ii. 212.
Individual Responsibility, xiii. 205.
Industrialisms, English, ix. 46.
Industry, Captains of, ix 220, 231, 281, 295, 299; our Industrial Ages, 265; Captains of, xiii. 55, 61; Industry or death, 63; Industrial Regiments, 139, 152; English career of Industrialism, 167.
Infancy and Maturity, ix. 169.
Infant intuitions and acquirements, vi. 53; genius and dulness, 57.
Infidelity, iv 81.
Ingoldsby, Colonel, at Bristol siege, x. 186.
Inheritance, infinite, of every human soul, iv. 33.
Inisdal's, Count d', plot, vii. 322.
Injustice the one thing utterly intolerable, ix. 23, 25; nothing unjust can continue in this world, 30, 38, 234.
Innes, Lieut.-Col., taken, x. 293.
Insanity, strange affinity of Wisdom and, ix. 230.
Inspiration of God the only real intelligence, i. 220; the unforgivable sin to swerve from, 230, 236; Inspiration still possible, iii. 319; iv. 4, 42, 107; perennial, vi. 118, 128, 155.
Instrument of Government, the, xi. 370; xii. 1; new, 216, 265.
Insurrection, most sacred of duties, vii. 196; of Women, 187-220; of August Tenth, viii. 108-112; difficult, 112; of Paris, against Girondins (1793), 248-252; sacred right of, 103, 320, 322, 341, 344, 351, 355, 371, 373, 374; last Sansculottic, 364, 365; of Babœuf, 375; Insurrections, ix. 81. See Riot.
Intellect and Virtue, one great summary of gifts, i. 340; vi. 264, 311.

Intellect, celebrated March of, iv. 14; what might be done, with intellect *enough*, v. 230, 246; tragic consequences of insufficient, xiii. 100, 110, 113, 122, 124, 167; human Intellect the exact summary of human *Worth*, 108; how to increase the supply, 113, 114; English *beaver* intellect, 168.
Intellects, twenty-four million, awakened into action, ix. 60.
Invention, vi. 23, 97; ix. 171; human inventions, iii. 53, 108; German contributions to the general store, 296; Irish ditto, iv. 43.
Inverkeithing, battle of, xi. 276, 277; Colours taken at, xii. 425.
Inverness Citadel built by Cromwell, xi. 301.
Invisible World, the, within and about us, iii. 77; Nature the visible Garment of the invisible, vi. 33; invisible bonds, binding all men together, 36; the Visible and Invisible, 40, 133.
Ireland, tragic mismanagement of, ix. 16; Irish National character degraded, 17; England invaded by Irish destitution, 18; state of Ireland in 1649, xi. 43, 44; misrepresentation of Cromwell's doings in, 102, 115; narrative of Cromwell's campaign in, 124; a *Black* Ireland, xiii. 5; Irish and British Pauperism, 55; the Irish Giant, seeking whom he may devour, 99, 146. See Irish.
Ireton, Commissary-General, at Bristol siege, x. 183; weds Bridget Cromwell, 199; character of, 211, 227; in Ireland, xi. 36; President of Munster, 139; Deputy in Ireland, 148; dies in Ireland, 148; Cromwell's letter to, 200; character of, 314.
—— Mrs., Cromwell's letter to, x. 212; widow, married to Fleetwood, xi. 314; notice of, 364; xii. 110.
—— Alderman, in Little Parliament, xi. 335; of Customs Committee, 365.
Irish, the, Poor-Slave, vi. 171; Sans-potato, viii. 368· an Irish Widow *proving* her sisterhood, ix. 187, 234; Irish Massacre in 1641, x. 95; Charles I. sends for Army of, 151; Papists found in arms in England to be hanged, 154; Cromwell's declaration to the, xi. 103; forces go abroad, 148; Puritan settlement, 149. See Ireland; Papists.
Ironsides, Cromwell's, described, x. 133; first glimpse of, 136; Cromwell to Hampden on the, xii. 249, 250.
Irving, Death of Edward, iv. 297.
Islam, vi. 227.
Isnard, Max, notice of, vii. 262; in First Parliament, viii. 45; on Ministers, 73; to demolish Paris, 247; will demit, 250; recalled, 352.
Isolation, vi. 66; the sum-total of wretchedness, ix. 284.
Israelitish History, significance of, ii. 181; iv. 242. See Bible.
Iturbide, 'the Napoleon of Mexico,' v. 249.
Ives, St., described, x. 67, 68.

Jacob, Jean Claude, eldest of men, vii. 269.
Jacobinism, spirit of, viii. 309.
Jacobins, Society, germ of, vii. 82; Hall, described, and members, 252; Journal, &c. of, 252; daughters of, 253, 313; at Nanci, suppressed, 303; Club increases, 313; and Mirabeau, 316, 333; prospers, viii. 73; 'Lords of the Articles,' 75; extinguishes Feuillans, 75; Hall enlarged, described, 75; and Marseillese, 105; and Lavergne, 136; message to Dumouriez, 176; missionaries in Army, 191, 234; on King's trial, 193; on accusation of Robespierre, 193; against Girondins, 194, 195, 244; National Convention and, 265, 306; Popular Tribunals of, 293; Couthon's Question in, 319; purges members, 321; to become dominant, 340; locked out by Legendre, 346; begs back its keys, 351; decline of, 359; mobbed, suspended, 359; hunted down, 362.
Jacobis, the two, ii. 37; iii. 158.
Jaffray, Provost, at Dunbar battle, xi. 186; at Edinburgh, 238, 239, 249; account of, 248; a Quaker, &c., 249; in Little Parliament, 335.
Jalès, Camp of, vii. 237; Royalists at, viii. 68; destroyed, 69.
Jamaica Island taken, xii. 122.
James I., v. 319, 321; visits Hinchinbrook, x. 27; a theologian, 29; his dependence on Henry IV., 30; returns to Scotland, 33; miscalculations, 38; dies, 39; his bad reign, xiii. 242.
James, Col. John, Governor of Worcester, after the Battle, xi. 296 n.
James's, St., Fields, scene in, x. 233; House, bestowed on Cromwell, xi. 124.
Jaucourt, Chevalier, and Liberty, viii. 46.
Jay, Dame le, bookseller, vii. 249.
Jeanne d'Arc, character of, i. 121.
Jedburgh: see Geddard.
Jefferson Brick, answer to, xiii. 230.
Jemappes, battle of, viii. 190.
Jenner, Robert, M.P., notice of, x. 333; Cromwell's letter to, 334.
Jenny Geddes's stool, flight of, v. 223, 233.
Jephson, Governor of Bandon, xi. 90.
Jesuits, skill and zeal of the, iv. 197; Jesuitism sick unto death, 215; v. 266; Jesuit Georgel, 14; Jesuitism and Dame Dubarry, vii. 14; Henry IV. stabbed, x. 30; Jesuit practices in England, xii. 27; Jesuitism, xiii. 249-282; Age and Gospel of, 249; stupendous achievements, 258; how the computation quite broke down, 259; 'vivaciousness' of Jesuitism, 260; the Jesuit *Soul* nestled amongst us, 261; necessity of putting it away, 264; Jesuitism in the Fine Arts, 268, 274; celebrated 'virtues,' 276.
Jesus of Nazareth, our divinest Symbol, vi. 137, 140; the most indubitable of facts, xiii. 278. See Crucify.
Jew debts and creditors, ix. 116, 141, 143; Benedict and the tooth-forceps, 211; Jews endeavour to settle in England, xii. 135, 136.
Job, the Book of, vi. 231.
Jocelin of Brakelond, ix. 101; his Boswellean Notebook seven centuries old, 102.
Jockey: see Jokei.
John, King, ix. 105, 151.
John the Steadfast, v. 350.
—— Frederick the Magnanimous, v. 350, 353, 354, 358.
John, St., Mrs., Cromwell's letter to, x. 79.
John, St., Oliver, character of, x. 77, 300; re-

lated to Cromwell, 79; is Solicitor-General, 87; Cromwell's letters to, 136, 300; with Cromwell at Aylesbury, xi. 297; character of, 305; at Conference at Speaker's, 311-313; ambassador to Holland, 316.
Johnson, Colonel, shot, xi. 138.
Johnson's, Dr., preventive against bad biographies, ii. 1; his sound practical sense, 162; a small occurrence, iv. 45; Boswell's Life of Johnson, 49-104; his existence a Reality which he transacted *awake*, 70; poverty and sore obstruction, 71; boyish turn for royalty, 72; college mortifications, and stubborn pride, 73; his brave-hearted Wife, 75; a literary career, 76; letter to Lord Chesterfield, 79; his distracted era, and manful honesty, 81; his Parliamentary Debates, 87; tears of sacred triumph, 89; a little Circle around the Wise man, 90; the conservation of what was genuine in Toryism, 93; a brave man, 94; his clear hatred of Cant, 97; merciful, affectionate nature, 98; market-place at Uttoxeter, 99; politeness, 100; prejudices, 101; Johnson and Hume, 102.
—— difficulties, poverty, hypochondria, vi. 318; rude self-help; stands genuinely by the old formulas, 319; his noble unconscious sincerity, 320; twofold Gospel, of Prudence and hatred of Cant, 321; his Dictionary, 322; the brave old Samuel, 354; ix. 41; x. 39; Johnson's politeness, xiii. 177.
—— House in Gough Square, a visit to, iv. 88.
Johnston, Archibald, Lord Register of Scotland, account of, x. 165; xi. 268, 269; Cromwell's letter to, 267.
—— St. (Perth), surrenders, xi. 285.
Jokei, French, described, vii. 39.
Jones, Inigo, taken at Basing, x. 196.
—— Col. John, regicide, x. 238.
—— Col. Michael, occupies Dublin, x. 237; routs Irish at Dungan Hill, 237; Cromwell's letter to, 237; routs Ormond's army, xi. 36; vote in favour of, 38, 80; dies, 93.
—— Paul, equipped for America, vii. 36; at Paris, account of, 245, 267; burial of, viii. 100.
—— Col. Philip, in Council of State, xii. 5 n.; on Committee of Kingship, 257.
—— Quartermaster Samuel, notice of, x. 272.
Jonson's, Ben, war-tuck, v. 321.
Jötuns, vi. 197, 211.
Jounneau, Deputy, in Danger in September, viii. 156.
Jourdan, General, repels Austria, viii. 311.
—— Coupe-tête, at Versailles, vii. 206, 219; leader of Avignon Brigands, viii. 50; costume of, 51; supreme in Avignon, 53; massacre by, 54; flight of (cities of the South), 54; guillotined, 293.
Jourgniac: see St. Méard.
Journals (see Paris); placard, vii. 250, 311.
Joyce, Cornet, carries off the King, x. 225; Lieut.-Col., imprisoned, xii. 9.
Julien, Sieur Jean, guillotined, viii. 143.
Juliers, siege of, v. 323.
June Twentieth (1792), viii. 88.
Just, St., in National Convention, viii. 164; on King's trial, 196; in Salut Committee, 305; at Strasburg, 307; repels Prussians, 311; on Revolution, 319; in Committee-room (Thermidor), 342; his report, 342; arrested, 343.
Justice, bed of, vii. 65.
—— the basis of all things, ix. 77, 85, 155, 199; what is Justice, 80, 237; a just judge, 145; venerable Wigged-Justice began in Wild-Justice, 172; God's Justice alone strong, 219, 297; the one indispensable thing, xiii. 80, 83; unspeakably difficult of attainment, 234; voice of Justice to a repentant sinner, 256; pig-justice, 267. See Parchments.

Kabale und Liebe, Schiller's, a domestic tragedy of high merit, i. 29.
Kadijah, the good, Mahomet's first Wife, vi. 224, 228.
Kant's Philosophy, i. 86; ii. 56; iii. 73; Goethe's opinion of, i. 183; Schiller's, iii. 217.
Kaufungen, Kunz von, v. 340, 363; exasperations with Elector Frederick, 341; steals his two Sons, 342; beheaded, 345.
Kaunitz, Prince, denounces Jacobins, viii. 75.
Keats's weak-eyed sensibility, ii. 209.
Keinton fight: see Battle, Edgehill.
Kellermann, at Valmy, viii. 169.
Kelsey, Major, at Langford House, x. 198; becomes Colonel, a Major-General, xii. 119 n.
Kemble, Fanny, Sterling's admiration for, i. 227.
Kempis, Thomas à, iii. 291.
Kenrick, Col., Cromwell's letter to, x. 261.
Kent in insurrection, x. 256, 267, 273.
Kepler, xiii. 76.
Kepler's true love of wisdom, iii. 17.
Ker, Earl Somerset: see Overbury.
—— Sir Andrew, notice of, x. 314.
—— Col. Gilbert, interview with, xi. 174; at Glasgow, 218; in Scots Army, 221; Remonstrance by, 224-227, 229, 232, 233; his forces routed, 230.
Kilkenny Cats, ix. 272.
—— taken, xi. 127-136, 140, 141; Irish at, 127.
Killing no murder, xii. 210 n.
Kimber, Rev., on Cromwell, x. 14.
Kimbolton, Lord, with the Five Members, x. 96. See Mandevil, Manchester.
Kings, Nature's, and their poor dog-hutch kingdoms, iv. 72; a true man *must* tend to be King of his own world, v. 282 (see Original Man); our true King chosen for us in Heaven, vi. 152; the King a summary of all the various figures of Heroism, 332; indispensable in all movements of men, 357; primitive Kings, vii. 9; divine right of, 9; Kings and Slaves, ix. 16; the true and the sham King, 134, 139, 242; the Ablest Man, the virtual King, 243; again *be* a King, 265; the proper name of all Kings, Minister, Servant, 272; Kings everywhere, in sudden horror, *conscious* of being Playactors, xiii. 32; the true king and commander of men, 52, 54, 69; not to be dispensed with anywhere, 112, 190; true function of a king, 133, 210, 214; no King in Parliament, 195, 197, 203; Parliament an 'impossible King,' 204. See Able Man, Wisest Man, Premier.

Kingdom, a man's, vi. 74.
Kingship, decline of, in France, vii. 11. See Royalty.
Kingship, Oliver Cromwell's, xii. 215, 218, 224, 230, 240, 256, 257, 298; Committee on, 221, 228; he refuses it, 301.
Kingston, insurrection at, x. 276.
King Street, Cromwell lives in, x. 262.
Kirkcudbright, Lord, invites Cromwell to Edinburgh, x. 327.
Klingemann, Dr. August, the most indisputable of playwrights, ii. 278; his *Ahasuer*, 279; *Faust*, and his melodramatic contract with the Devil, 280.
Klopstock, ii. 36: iii. 158; his Allegory of *The Two Muses*, 331.
—— naturalised, viii. 130.
Knaves, given a world of, what must come of it, iv. 32.
Know thyself, iv. 244; and what thou canst work at, vi. 101: ix. 223.
Knox, John, one of the truest of the true, v. 150; Wilkie's picture of, a worthless failure, 334; Knox's influence on Scotland, vi. 293; the bravest of Scotchmen, 294; his unassuming career; sent to the French Galleys, 295; vii. 303; his colloquies with Queen Mary, vi. 296; vein of drollery; a brother to high and to low; his death, 298.
Knyvett, Thomas, taken at Lowestoff, x. 109; Cromwell's letter to, 204.
Koran, the, vi. 233.
Korff, Baroness de, in flight to Varennes, viii. 9; is Dame de Tourzel, 12.
Kotzebue, August von, a warning to all playwrights, ii. 271; iii. 330, 332; v. 144.
Kurisees, Irish, go abroad, xi. 148; in Piedmont, xii. 103.

Labour, and free Effort, iv. 22; infinite significance of, 244; sacredness of, vi. 139; to be King of this Earth, ix. 203; Organisation of, 222, 233, 271; perennial nobleness and sacredness in, 223; true Organisation of, xiii. 8, 55; only the Noble labour willingly with their whole strength, 9. See Chivalry, Industry, Work, Working Classes.
Lacroix, of Mountain, viii. 46.
Ladies taken at Naseby, x. 175; at Basing House, 194.
Lafarge, President of Jacobins, Mme. Lavergne and, viii. 136.
Lafayette, bust of, erected, vii. 37, 157; against Calonne, 58; demands by, in Notables, 63; Cromwell-Grandison, 114; Bastille time, Vice-President of National Assembly, 145, 156; General of National Guard, 157; resigns and reaccepts, 163; Scipio-Americanus, 182; thanked, rewarded, 189; French Guards and, 201: to Versailles, 202; at Versailles, Fifth October, 213; swears the Guards, 221; Feuillant, 253; on abolition of Titles, 268; at Champ-de-Mars Federation, 276, 278: at De Castries' riot, 319; character of, 321; in Day of Poniards, 328; difficult position of, 331; at King's going to St Cloud, viii. 3; resigns and reaccepts, 4; at flight from Tuileries, 10; after escape of King, 13; on Petition for Deposition, 34; moves for amnesty, 40; resigns, 43; decline of, 74; doubtful against Jacobins, 82, 85, 96; fruitless journey to Paris, 92; to be accused? 99; flies to Holland, 124.
Laflotte, prison-plot, informer, viii. 327, 336.
La Force: see Prison.
Lais, Sieur, Jacobin, with Louis Philippe, vii. 253.
Laissez-faire, ix. 13; applied to horses, 21; as good as done its part in many provinces, 31, 67; when a reasonable cry, 32, 213; general breakdown of, 215, 216.
Lakenheath eels, ix 120.
Lally, death of, vii. 68. See Tollendal.
Lamaism, Grand, vi. 188.
Lamarche, guillotined, viii. 289.
Lamarck's, Mirabeau sick at, vii. 336.
Lamartine, M. de, at Hôtel-de-Ville, xiii. 33.
Lamballe, Princess de, to England, viii. 16; intrigues for Royalists, 61, 78; at La Force, 139; massacred, 149.
Lambert, General, described, x. 227; in the North, 273; at Edinburgh, 320, 325, 329; at Pontefract, 347; Major-General in Scots War, xi. 159; skirmishes with the Scots, 163, 164; at Dunbar battle, 184, 191; routs Colonel Ker, 229, 230; at Glasgow, 271; routs General Browne at Inverkeithing, 277, 278; at Worcester battle, 291; in the Highlands, 299; of Council of State, xii. 5 n; in Cromwell's First Parliament, 17; a Major-General of counties, 120 n; against title of King, 301; dismissed, 301.
Lambesc, Prince, attacks Bust-procession (July 1789), vii. 138.
Lameth, in Constituent Assembly, one of a trio, vii 173; brothers, notice of, 233; Jacobins, 252; Charles, duel with Duke de Castries, 319; brothers become constitutional, viii. 32; Theodore, in First Parliament, 46.
Lammermoor Hills, described, xi. 178; Scots Army at, 179.
Lamoignon, Keeper of Seals, vii. 59, 71, 76; dismissed, 88; effigy burned, and death of, 89.
Lamotte-Valois, the Countess de, iv. 286; her pedigree, birth, character and career, v. 21-57; vii. 46; in the Salpêtrière, 55, 74; Memoirs burned, viii. 71; in London, 138; M. de, in prison, 138, 151.
Lamourette, Abbé, kiss of, viii. 48; guillotined, 294.
Landlords, past and present, ix. 111; Landowning, 204; who the Land belongs to, 206; the mission of a Land Aristocracy a *sacred* one, 262, 290.
Land-owning, trade of, vi. 78.
Langdale, Sir Marmaduke, joins Scots, x. 273; escapes, 333
Langley, Colchester Captain, x. 111.
Langport, Battle of, xii. 397.
Language, the Garment of Thought, vi. 43; dead Vocables, 64.
Lanjuinais Girondin, skirts torn, viii. 250; arrested, 252; recalled, 352.
Lanterne, death by the, vii. 161, 162.
Lapérouse, voyage of, vii 37.
Laporte, Intendant, guillotined, viii. 133.
Larivière, Justice, imprisoned, viii. 93.
Larochejaquelin in La Vendée, viii. 135; death of, 358.

Lasource accuses Danton, viii. 241; president, and Marat, 244; arrested, 252; condemned, his saying, 279.
Latour-Maubourg, notice of, viii. 30.
Laud, William, Archdeacon of Huntingdon, x. 31; finds no religion in Scotland, 34; persecutions by, 41: inclined to Popery, 50, Parliament intends to accuse, 51; accompanies Charles I. to Scotland, 56: roots out Feoffees, 57; is in the Tower, 87, 96; beheaded, 219.
Lauderdale, Earl, taken at Worcester, xi. 295; incident to, in London, 297; notice of, 297.
Laughern, Major-Gen., revolts, x. 267; condemned to death, xi. 11.
—— Lieut.-Col., shot, xi. 138.
Laughter, worth of true, v. 329; significance of, vi. 20; ix. 188.
Launay, Marquis de, Governor of Bastille, vii. 145; besieged, 148; unassisted, 151; to blow up Bastille, 152, 153; massacred, 154.
Lavater and Cagliostro, iv. 279.
Lavergne surrenders Longwi, viii. 135, 136.
Lavoisier, Chemist, guillotined, viii. 330.
Law, Martial, in Paris, vii. 241; viii. 35; Book of the, 47.
—— gradual growth of, ix. 172; the Maker's Laws, 248; Law-Reform, xi. 315, 316, 321, 368; Law and Church, angry basilisks of, xiii. 171; injustice decreed by a 'law,' 252; Lawyers, 242, 267. See Chancery.
Laws and regulations of the Universe, how decipher the, xiii. 41, 87; such laws do verily exist, silent, but inflexibly sure, 182; not to be decided by our paltry 'votings,' 205; in the way of abatement, of oblivion, neither gods nor men prevail, 245. See Universe.
Lawrence, Col. Henry, of Council of State, xii. 5 n.
Lawyers, their influence on the Revolution, vii. 13; number of, in Tiers Etat, 113; in Parliament First, viii. 45.
Lazare, Maison de St., plundered, vii. 141.
Lea Hamlet described, x. 126.
Lebas, at Strasburg, viii. 307; arrested, 343.
Lebon, Priest, in National Convention, viii. 164; at Arras, 298; guillotined, 362.
Lebrun, forger of Assignats, viii. 65.
Lechapelier, Deputy, and Insurrection of Women, vii. 200
Lecointre, National Major, vii. 192, 207; will not duel, 194; active, 209; in First Parliament, viii. 47.
Lecturers, running, described, x. 40, 72.
Lefèvre, Abbé, distributes powder, vii 154; in procession, 157; nearly hanged, 198.
Legendre, Butcher, in danger, viii. 83; at Tuileries riot, 88; in National Convention, 164; against Girondins, 250; for Danton, 325; locks out Jacobins, 346; in First of Prairial, 365.
Legislation: see Assembly.
Legislative interference, ix. 276.
Lehunt, Col., commissioned, x. 276.
Leicester taken and retaken, x. 171, 177.
Leith Citadel built by Cromwell, xi. 301.
Leland's Itinerary, x. 24.
Leming-rat, the, xiii. 210.
Lemon, Mr., classified Records, xi. 7.
Lenfant Abbé, on Protestant claims, vii. 75; massacred, viii. 151.
Lenthall, Hon. William, Speaker, Cromwell's letters to, x. 176, 182, 191, 197, 243, 269, 277, 288, 318, 326, 327; xi. 32, 40, 50, 57, 59, 76, 81, 87, 92, 120, 138, 158, 187, 230, 243, 260, 262, 276 283, 284, 293, 294; xii. 387, 400, 401, 410; Conference at his house, xi. 310-313; unseated, 330; in Cromwell's First Parliament, xii. 17 37; against Law Reform, 102; on Committee of Kingship, 228, 236; one of Cromwell's Lords, 318.
Leo X. the elegant Pagan Pope, vi. 283.
Leopold of Anhalt-Dessau, v. 359.
Lepelletier: see St. Fargeau. Section, for Convention, viii. 361, 365; revolt of, in Vendémiaire, 372-374.
Lesley, Alexander, Fieldmarshal, at Dunse Law, x 82; Earl of Leven, enters England with Scots Army in 1644, 146; at Marston Moor, 151; cannonades the Hamilton Engagers from Edinburgh Castle, 299; entertains Cromwell at dinner, 326; at Alyth, and sent to the Tower, xi. 299.
—— General David, extinguishes Montrose, x. 198; at head of Kirk Party, 299; General of Scots, xi. 166, 276; his caution, 170; letter to Cromwell, 171; Cromwell's letters to, 172, 248; and the English soldier at Dunbar, 182.
—— Ludovic, Governor of Berwick, Cromwell's letter to, x. 307.
Lessing, ii. 36.
L'Estrange, Roger, x. 137.
Letter-writing, conventional, v. 164; *subjective*, 200; veracious, 228; vacuous and inane, 230.
Lettres-de-Cachet, and Parlement of Paris, vii. 73.
Levasseur, in National Convention, viii. 164; Convention Representative, in tide-water, 310.
Levellers described, x. 242; Arnald shot, 245; remarks on, xi. 22-24; routed at Burford, 27.
Leven, Earl of: see Lesley, Alexander.
Leverett, Capt., Cromwell's letter to, xii. 442.
Liancourt, Duke de, Liberal, vii. 114; not a Revolt, but a Revolution, 156; Royalist, in Normandy, viii. 94.
Libberton, Lord, killed at Dunbar, xi. 192.
Liberty and Equality, vi. 280, 337; vii. 248; tree of, 279; viii. 86, 99; and Equality, 79; Statue of, 267; true meaning of liberty, ix. 235, 239; liberty of the people, x. 63; British liberty, xiii. 50. See Enfranchisement.
Lies, Philosophism on, vii. 13; to be extinguished, how, 32; a double power of, 44; their doom, 178; 'damned' lies, xiii. 134; every lie accursed, and the parent of curses, 149; diagnosis of a lie, and a liar, 180; benevolent plan of reform, 186; subtle quintessence of lying, 262.
Lieschen, vi. 14.
Life, a means to an end, iv. 3; infinite mystery of, 243; v. 4. See Man.
—— Human, picture of, vi. 12, 92, 104, 114; life-purpose, 81; speculative mystery of, 101, 146, 162; the most important transaction in, 103; nothingness of, 111, 113; the Life to come, ix. 200, 250; Life never a May-game for men, 233, 296.

Light, the beginning of all Creation, vi. 120; light or *lightning*, a choice, xiii. 123, 167.
Ligne, Prince de, death of, viii. 166.
Lilburn, Col. Robert, in Lancashire, x. 274; routs Earl Derby, xi. 287; and Bear Park, 260; deputy Major-General, xii. 120 n.
—— John, account of, x. 87; his brothers, 210; accuses Cromwell, 249; his pamphlets, xi. 17; death of, xii. 315, 316.
Lille, city, besieged, viii. 172.
—— Colonel Rouget de, Marseillese Hymn, viii. 98.
Lincoln Committee, Cromwell's letter to, x. 117.
Lincolnshire in 1643, x. 114, 115, 142-144.
Linguet, his 'Bastille Unveiled,' vii. 45; returns, 107; irascible, viii. 72.
Lion: see Soirées.
Lisle, Lord Viscount, in Council of State, xi. 12, 367 n.; xii. 5 n.
—— Mr., in Council of State, xi. 12; Keeper of Great Seal, xii. 102; at Installation, 306.
—— Sir George, shot, x. 299.
List of Cromwell family, x. 16, 20, 54; of the Eleven Members, 231 n.; of officers slain at Tredah, xi. 58; of Little Parliament, 334, 335; of Council of State, 1653, 367 n.; 1654, xii. 5 n.; of Cromwell's First Parliament, 17; of Major-Generals, 119, 120 n.; of Cromwell's estates, 148 n.; of Cromwell's Lords, 318.
Literary life, temptations, perils and heroisms of a, i. 35, 84, 155; Literary Men, a perpetual priesthood, ii. 44; iii. 1, 114, 188, 336; iv. 207; desirable to pay them by the quantity they *do not* write, v. 138; Literary Heroes, vi. 300; Literary Men in China, 311. See Newspaper-Editors.
Literature a chaotic haven, i. 223; and last resource, 285, 299, 302; real and sham, 311; influence of literature, iii. 1, 336; diseased self-consciousness, iv. 18; froth and substance, 46; v. 261; domain of Belief, iv. 190; literary shampooings, v. 161, 175; flesh-flies, 168; extempore writing, 177; *subjective* writing, 200; chaotic condition of literature, vi. 303; not our heaviest evil, 312; influence on the Revolution, vii. 13; in France, in 1781-87, 45, 47, 74; noble and ignoble literature, ix. 151; true and sham, xiii. 155, 188; our crowded portal of, 172; highest problem of, 241, 268. See Read.
Liturgies, ix. 171; such as no God *can* hear, xiii. 239.
Liverpool, ix. 122.
Livingston, Rev. James, notice of, by Cromwell, xi. 232; his descendants, 233.
Llanblethian, a pleasant little Welsh village, i. 202, 203.
Lloyd, Capt., sent to Generals Blake and Montague, xii. 141.
Loadstar, a, in the eternal sky, ix. 99.
Loan, Successive, scheme of, vii. 71.
Locke and his followers, ii. 60; paved the way for banishing Religion from the world, 162; iii. 104; wrote his *Essay* in a Dutch garret, ii. 236; Tomb of, x. 78.
Lockhart, Sterling's admiring estimate of, i. 371; his Life of Burns, 195; of Scott, v. 138.
—— William, Ensign, x. 218; Col., wounded at Preston, 287; Ambassador to France, xii. 202; notice of, 309, 310; commands at Dunkirk, 315; one of Cromwell's Lords, 318; Cromwell's letters to, 310, 312, 362. See Sewster.
Lockier, Rev., preaches at Cromwell's Installation, xi. 370.
Lockyer, Trooper, shot, xi. 25.
Loftus, Sir Arthur, notice of, xi. 86.
Logic, the rushlight of, iii. 112; logic and its limits, iv. 4, 230; v. 63; Logic-mortar and wordy Air-castles, vi. 32; underground workshop of Logic, 40, 135; logical futilities, ix. 194, 197. See Metaphysics.
Loiserolles, General, guillotined for his son, viii. 345.
London City petitions for Parliament, x. 84; for reform of Bishops, 85, 96; helps Long Parliament to raise army, 98; fortified, 1643, 120; armies fitted out by, 158; petitions for peace, 213; new militia ordinance, 224; shops shut, 133, 232, 233; averse to Cromwell party, 262; lends money, xi. 19; Preacher recommended to, xii. 13; Cromwell entertained by, 50; will resist Cromwell's enemies, 354.
Longwi, surrendered, viii. 134-136; fugitives at Paris, 136.
Lope de Vega, v. 144.
Lords of the Articles, Jacobins, as, viii. 306.
Lorraine, Fédérés and the Queen, vii. 274; state of (in 1790), 291.
Loudon, Chancellor, in danger, x. 82; Cromwell's letter to, 312; character of, 315.
Louis XIV., l'état c'est moi, vii. 9; booted in Parlement, 71; pursues Louvois with tongs, viii. 181.
Louis XV., ungodly age of, iii. 50; iv. 191, 217; v. 13; vi. 100; his '*amende honorable* to God,' 16; origin of his surname, vii. 3; last illness of, 3, 14, 15, 16, 19; dismisses Dame Dubarry, 5; Choiseul, 5; was wounded, has small-pox, 5, 14; his mode of conquest, 7; impoverishes France, 14; his daughters, 15; on death, 17; on ministerial capacity, 19; death of (10th May 1744), 21; burial of, 22.
Louis XVI., at his accession, vii. 21; good measures of, 25; temper and pursuits of, 26; his Queen (see Antoinette); difficulties of, 33, 76; commences governing, 50; and Notables, 61; holds Royal Session, 71-73; receives States-General Deputies, 104; in States-General procession, 105, 116; speech to States-General, 117; National Assembly, 129; unwise policy of, 131; dismisses Necker, 137; apprised of the Revolution, 156; conciliatory, visits Assembly, 156; Bastille, visits Paris, 158; deserted, will fly, 174, 191; languid, 192; at Dinner of Guards, 193; deposition of, proposed, 201; October Fifth, women deputies, 207; to fly or not? 209, 211; grants the acceptance, 212; Paris propositions to, 214; in the Château tumult (Oct. 6), 219; appears to mob, 220; will go to Paris, 221; his wisest course, 222; procession to Paris, 223-225; review of his position, 229; lodged at Tuileries, 230; Restorer of French Liberty, 231; no hunting, locksmith, 231; schemes, 255; visits Assembly, 255; Federation, 272, 274, 276; Hereditary Representative, 331; viii. 5;

will fly, vii. 322; and D'Inisdal's plot, 322; his Aunts fly, 325; Mirabeau, 333; useless, 334; indecision of, viii. 1; ill of catarrh, 3; prepares for St. Cloud, 3; hindered by populace, 4; effect should he escape, 4; prepares for flight, his circular, 8; flies, 9; letter to Assembly, 13; manner of flight, 16; loiters by the way, 17-19; detected by Drouet, 21; near Varennes, 24; captured at Varennes, 25; indecision there, 25-27; return to Paris, 29; reception there, 30; to be deposed? 31, 33; reinstated, 37; reception of Legislative, 48; position of, 59; proposes war, with tears, 79; vetoes, dissolves Roland Ministry, 84; in riot of Twentieth June, 88; and Pétion, 93, 110; at Federation, with cuirass, 99; declared forfeited, 107, 122; last levee of, 107; Tenth August, 114, 116; quits Tuileries for Assembly, 116; in Assembly, 121; sent to Temple prison, 123; in Temple, 188; to be tried, 191, 196; and the Locksmith Gamain, 195; at the bar, 197; his will, 199; condemned, 203-207; parting scene, 209; execution of, 210-212; his son, 330.

Louis-Philippe (King of the French) Jacobin door-keeper, vii. 253; at Valmy, viii. 170; bravery at Jemappes, 191; and sister, 238; with Dumouriez to Austrians, 240; to Switzerland, 240; teaches Mathematics, 288.

Louis-Philippism the scorn of the world, xiii. 32.

Loustalot, Editor, vii. 183, 249.

Louvet, his 'Chevalier de Faublas,' vii. 48; his 'Sentinelles,' 249; and Robespierre, viii. 76; in National Convention, 164; Girondin, accuses Robespierre, 193, 227; arrested, 252; retreats (one of Eleven) to Bourdeaux, 263, 272; escape of, 280; recalled, 352.

Love the beginning of all things, iv. 46, 120; what we emphatically name Love, vi. 82; pyrotechnic phenomena of, 83, 135; not altogether a Delirium, 88; how possible, in its highest form, 115, 131, 180; method of Love, to command Scoundrels, xiii. 71.

—— Rev. Christopher, notice of, x. 150; xi. 19; his treason, 274; condemned, 276; executed, 287.

—— Dr., Cromwell's letter to, xi. 11.

Lowestoff, affair at, x. 107

Lowry, John, notice of, xi. 33, 34; xii. 383.

Loyalty to Beelzebub, xiii. 260.

Loyola, Ignatius, xiii 249; a man not good by nature, 254; on the walls of Pampeluna; agonies of new-birth, 255; highest pitch of the prurient-heroic; war against Almighty God, 257. See Jesuitism.

Lucas, Sir Charles, shot, x. 299.

Lückner, Supreme General, vii. 282; viii. 82; and Dumouriez, 96; guillotined, 291.

Ludicrous, feeling and instances of the, vi. 29, 110.

Ludlow, General, Memoirs of Cromwell, x. 13; Cromwell's remark to, 224; notes Cromwell's ill success, 262; at trial of Charles I., 349; of Council of State, xi. 2; Deputy of Ireland, 148; Cromwell's conversation with, 156; and Cromwell, scene with, 313; Republican, lives in Essex, xii. 136, 372.

Lumsden, Col., killed at Dunbar, xi. 192.

Lunéville, Inspector Malseigne at, vii. 296.

Lunsford, Col., described, x. 96.

Luther's prose a half-battle, iii. 158; his love of music and poetry, 178; before the Diet of Worms, 179; his Psalm, 179; his Life the latest prophecy of the Eternal, v. 348; birth and parentage, vi. 280; hardship and rigorous Necessity; death of Alexis; becomes monk, 281; his religious despair; finds a Bible; deliverance from darkness, 282; Rome; Tetzel, 283; burns the Pope's Bull, 284; at the Diet of Worms, 285; King of the Reformation, 288; 'Duke Georges nine days running,' 289; his little daughter's deathbed; his solitary Patmos, 290; his Portrait, 291.

Lux, Adam, on death of Charlotte Corday, viii. 259; guillotined, 287.

Luxembourg, forges at, viii. 273; Palace, a prison, 292.

Lydcot, Col., at Inverkeithing fight, xi. 278.

Lyttelton, Lord, his running off with Great Seal, xi. 255.

Lyons, Federation at, vii. 263; disorders in, viii. 223; Chalier, Jacobin, executed at, 260; bombarded, powder-tower of, 271; captured, 294; massacres at, 294.

MACE of the Commons, the, a bauble, xi. 330.

Machinery, age of, iii. 100; iv. 228; supernatural, 41. See Mechanical.

—— exporting, ix. 212.

Mackworth, Col., in Council of State, xii. 5 n.; account of, 151 n.

Macpherson, ii. 213.

Madeira, its beautiful climate and scenery, i. 303, 306.

Magi, Oriental, books of the, iv. 245.

Magna Charta, vi. 165; ix. 46.

Magnetic vellum, the, vii. 259.

Mahomet, v. 282; ix. 294; birth, boyhood, and youth, vi. 223; marries Kadijah, 224; quiet, unambitious life, 225; divine commission, 226; the good Kadijah believes him; Seid; young Ali, 228; offences, and sore struggles, 229; flight from Mecca; being driven to take the sword, he uses it, 230; the *Koran*, 233; a veritable Hero, 238; Seid's death, 238; freedom from Cant, 239; Infinite nature of Duty, 241.

Maid of Orleans, Schiller's, i. 121; scenes, showing Joanna, Talbot, Lionel and others, 125.

Maids, old and young, Richter's appeal to, iii. 162.

Maidston, John, on Cromwell, x. 13, 337.

Maidstone fight, x. 273.

Maillie, Deputy, on trial of Louis, viii. 191.

Maillard, Usher, at siege of Bastille, vii. 151, 152; Insurrection of women, drum, Champs Elysées, 198, 199; entering Versailles, 205; addresses National Assembly there, 205; signs Déchéance petition, viii. 34; in September Massacres, 147.

Maillé, Camp-Marshal, at Tuileries, viii. 109, 110; massacred at La Force, 153.

Mailly, Marshal, one of Four Generals (1790), vii. 282.

Maine, Zachary, notice of, xii. 427.

Mainwaring censured, x. 50.

Major-Generals, the, xii. 101, 176-178, 187; list of, 119, 120 n.; abolished, 198, 213.
Majorities, blockhead, xiii. 217, 230.
Malesherbes, M. de, in King's Council, vii. 69; remark by, 73; defends Louis, viii. 199, 206; Louis returns money to, 210; guillotined, 330.
Maleverer, Col., Cromwell's letter in behalf of his Family, xii. 420.
Malevrier, Lord, Royalist, xii. 99.
Malseigne, Army Inspector, at Nanci, vii. 294-296; imprisoned, 297; liberated, 300.
Malthus's over-population panic, vi. 138; ix. 65.
Mammon not a god at all, ix. 123; Gospel of Mammonism, 183, 217; Working Mammonism better than Idle Dilettantism, 185, 188, 231; getting itself strangled, 212; fall of Mammon, 281, 299; Mammon like Fire, 295. See Economics.
Man the clearest symbol of the Divinity, iv. 117; the *life* of every man a Poem, and Revelation of Infinity, 243; v. 4; Man, by nature *naked*, vi. 2, 34, 37; essentially a Tool-using animal, 24; the true Shekinah, 39; a divine Emblem, 43, 133, 135, 146, 162; two men alone honourable, 139; rights and mights of Man, vii. 171, 177; viii. 63; Man the Missionary of Order, ix. 142, 247; sacredness of the human Body, 166; a born Soldier, 218; a God-created Soul, 249. See Good, Great, Microcosm, Original Man, Thinking Man.
Manasseh Ben Israel, learned Jew, xii 135.
Manchester, its squalor and despair not forever inseparable from it, ix. 50; once organic, a blessing instead of an affliction, 64; Manchester Insurrection, 81; poor Manchester operatives, 83, 108; Manchester in the twelfth century, 122; even sooty Manchester built on the infinite Abysses, 247.
—— Earl, Sergeant-Major of Associated Counties, x. 132; and Gen. Crawford, 147, 149; to reform Cambridge University, 147; quarrels with Cromwell, 159, 160; one of Cromwell's Lords, xii. 318.
Mandat, Commander of Guards (August 1792), viii. 109; death of, 113.
Mandevil, Lord, dispute with Cromwell, x. 89. See Manchester, Earl.
Manége, Salle de, Constituent Assembly occupies, vii. 232.
Manhood, ii. 223.
Manning, Mr., spy, xii. 100, 171.
—— Mrs., dying game, xiii 77.
Manton, Mr., preaches at Installation, xii. 306.
Manuel, Jacobin, slow-sure, viii. 73; in August Tenth, 114; in Governing Committee, 132; haranguing at La Force, 153; in National Convention, 164; dubs D'Orleans, 165; motions in National Convention, 171; vote at King's trial, 205; in prison, 276; guillotined, 291.
Marat, Jean Paul, horseleech to D'Artois vii. 40; notice of, 107; against violence, 136; at siege of Bastille, 151; summoned by Constituent, not to be gagged, 183; astir, 195; how to regenerate France, 240, 312; police and, 247; on abolition of titles, 268; would gibbet Mirabeau, 311; bust in Jacobins, viii. 75; concealed in cellars, 104; pulls tocsin rope, 111; in seat of honour, 132, 145; signs Circular, 160; elected to Convention, 164; and Dumouriez, 176; oaths by, in Convention, 181; first appearance in Convention, pistol, 183; against Roland, 203; on sufferings of People, 218; and Girondins, 224; arrested, 243; returns in triumph, 244; fall of Girondins, 251; sick, his residence, 256; and Charlotte Corday, 257; honours to, 257, 359.
Marat, Company of, viii. 292.
Mardike taken, xii. 313.
Maréchal, Atheist, Calendar by, viii. 268.
Maréchale, the Lady, on nobility, vii. 12.
Maria Stuart, Schiller's tragedy of, i. 119.
Marie Antoinette: see Antoinette.
Marie, St: see Miomandre.
Marriage-law, strange state of the, in Germany, ii. 99; the Marriage-covenant, iv. 233; Marriage-contracts, ix. 286, 288; Marriage by the month, xiii. 16.
Mars, Champ de: see Champ.
Marseilles, Brigands at, vii. 133; on Déchéance, the bar of iron, viii. 33 (see Barbaroux, Rebecqui); for Girondism, 243, 254, 260; guillotine at, 293.
Marseillese, March, and Hymn of, viii. 97, 98, 133, 190; at Charenton, 105; at Paris, 106; Filles-St. Thomas and, 105; barracks, 107; August Tenth, 112, 117-120.
Marston Moor: see Battle
Marten, Henry, M P., of Council of State, ix. 2; character of, 305; a lewd liver, 330; in Chepstow Castle, xiii. 218.
Martin General San, and his march over the Andes, v. 251.
Martyn, Sir Thomas, of Cambridge Committee, x. 105.
Mary, Queen, and Knox, vi. 296.
Maryland and Virginia, differences between, xii. 65; Cromwell's letter to Commissioners of, 118.
Masham Family, notice of, x. 78.
—— Sir William, in Cromwell's First Parliament, xii. 17.
Mass, Cromwell on the, xi. 112.
Massacre, Avignon, viii. 53; September, 146-158; number slain in, 158; corpse's hand, 158; compared to Bartholomew, 159; Convention on, 182. See Orleans, Nantes, Lyons.
Massey, Gen., how to be employed, x. 206; forces disbanded, 209; character of, 209; enlists soldiers, 233; purged by Pride, 347; with Scots, xi. 276; wounded at Worcester, 291.
Master, eye of the, ix. 141; Mastership and Servantship, the only deliverance from Tyranny and Slavery, xiii. 12, 15, 24.
Mathews, Col, delinquent, x. 335, 336.
Maton, Advocate, his 'Resurrection' (September), viii. 151.
Mauconseil, section, on forfeiture of King, viii. 107; on Girondins, 232.
Maupeou, under Louis XV., vii. 4, 5; and Dame Dubarry, 5.
Maurepas, Prime Minister, character of, vii. 26; government of, 33; death of, 50.
Maurice, Prince, quits England, x. 200; drowned, xi. 81.

Maurice, Rev. F. D., a Cambridge companion of Sterling's, i. 218; joins him in Athenæum adventure, 224, 225; divergence of opinion, but kindly trustful union of hearts, 289, 388, 394; marries Sterling's sister-in-law, 300.
Maurice's, Mrs., affectionate solicitude for Sterling and his orphan family, i. 384, 388, 394.
Maury, Abbé, character of, vii. 115; in Constituent Assembly, 172; seized emigrating, 223; dogmatic, 233, 239; efforts fruitless, 317; made Cardinal, viii. 42; and d'Artois at Coblentz, 64.
Maxwell, James, and his insolent sardonic ways, v. 319
Mayflower, sailing of the, vi. 292; ix. 48.
Maynard, Mr., one of Cromwell's Lords, xii. 318.
Mayor, Richard, Esq., character of, x. 250; letters from Cromwell to, xi. 5, 8, 9, 13, 16, 18, 19, 20, 34, 36, 79, 144, 160, 199, 281; xii. 8; in Little Parliament, xi. 335; of Customs Committee, 365; in Council of State, 367 n.; xii. 5 n.
Mazarin, Giulio, Cardinal, policy of, xii. 201; Cromwell's letters to, 202, 432, 434, 435; his opinion of Cromwell, 313.
Méard, St., Jourgniac de, in prison, viii. 138; his 'Agony' at La Force, 150-155.
Meat-jack, a disconsolate, ix. 192.
Mecca, vi. 222.
Mechanical Philosophy, ii. 162; its inevitable Atheism, iv. 230. See Machinery.
Mechanism disturbing labour, ix. 21.
Méda, Robespierre's death and, viii. 347 n.
Medea-caldron, the, v. 281.
Medicine, profession of, xiii. 170.
Meditation, iv. 4. See Silence.
Meg, Muckle, in Edinburgh Castle, xi. 243 n.
Members, the Five, x. 96; the Eleven, 220; accused by Army, 231; list of, 231 n.; last appearance of, 233.
Memmay, M., of Quincey, explosion of rustics, vii. 179.
Memoirs, value of, if honest, iv. 189; v. 186, 188, 229.
Memory, no wise, without wise Oblivion, iv. 185; v. 313; the strange alchemy of, 230, 246.
Menads, the, vii. 195-198, 224.
Mendelsohn, author of *Phædon*, ii. 37.
Menehould, St., alarms at, viii. 18, 20, 22; Prussians at, 168.
Menou, General, arrested, viii. 372.
Mentz, occupied by French, viii. 176; siege of, 254, 357; surrender of, Goethe describes, 264.
Menus, Hall of the, vii 104.
Merchant Princes of Germany, iii. 293.
Mercier, on Paris revolting, vii. 133; Editor, 184; the September Massacre, viii. 158; in National Convention, 164; King's trial, 205, 206; dancing (in 1795), 354; workmen dining, 369.
Mercifulness, true, iv. 98.
Merlin, of Douai, Law of Suspect, viii. 274.
—— of Thionville, in Mountain, viii. 46; irascible, 72; at Mentz, 265.
Méry: see St Méry.
—— St., Moreau de, 3000 orders, vii. 155; prostrated, viii. 106.
Mesmer, Dr., glance at, vii. 42.
Messina, Bride of, Schiller's, i. 134.
Metaphors the stuff of Language, vi. 43.
Metaphysics, the disease of, perennial, iv. 19; the forerunner of good, 30; inexpressibly unproductive, vi. 32, 36.
Methodism, ix. 117, 122, 161.
Metra, the Newsman, vii. 250.
Metropolis, importance of a, viii. 261.
Metz, Bouillé at, vii. 281; troops mutinous at, 288.
Meudon tannery, viii. 317.
Michael Angelo, house of, i. 319.
Microcosm, Man a, or epitomised mirror of the Universe, iv. 59, 192. See Man.
Midas, ix. 71, 75.
Middle Ages, represented by Dante and Shakspeare. vi. 257, 258, 260.
Middleton, Gen., at Preston fight, x. 280; for Charles II, xi. 224; Rebellion in Highlands, 299; xii. 10.
Might and Right, their intrinsic identity, i. 340; ix. 7, 29, 44, 219. See Rights.
Mildmay, Sir Henry, quarrels with Lord Wharton, x. 302.
Millennium, French idea of, xiii 218.
Militia, Ordinance of, x. 98; new, 224.
Mill's, John, friendship for Sterling, i. 256, 262; introduces him to Carlyle, 272; has charge of the London and Westminster Review, 313; with Sterling, in Italy, 331; inserts his Article on *Carlyle*, 340; with Sterling at Falmouth, 347; his work on *Logic*, 371.
Millocracy, our Giant, ix. 180.
Milton, ii 236; v. 178; vi. 100; *mute* Miltons, v. 149; Milton's 'wages,' ix. 85.
—— State Papers criticised, x. 58; xi. 360 n.
—— John, his burial, entry of, x. 37; pamphlets by, 86; appointed Latin Secretary, xi. 12; Sir H. Vane friend of, 306; blind, xii. 5, 104; letter by, 358.
Ministers of Edinburgh and Cromwell, xi. 203-215.
Minnesingers: see Swabian Era.
Minorities, down to minority of one, xiii. 10, 214.
Miomandre de Ste. Marie, Bodyguard (October Fifth), vii. 217; left for dead, revives, 218; rewarded, 322.
Mirabeau, v 61-118; by far the best-gifted of all the notables of the French Revolution, 68; his Father, the tough choleric old Friend of Men, 73; the Mirabeaus from Florence, 73; a notable kindred, exempt from blockheads, but liable to blackguards, 74; talent for choosing Wives, 75; gruff courtiership, 76; at the Battle of Cassano, 77; of the whole strange kindred, no stranger figure than the Friend of Men, 78; his literary and other gifts and eccentricities, 79; his domestic difficulties, and Rhadamanthine struggles, 82: birth of Gabriel Honoré, last of the Mirabeaus, 84; education, the scientific paternal hand *versus* Nature and others, 85; sent to boarding-school, 87; banished to Saintes; fresh misdemeanors; *Lettre de Cachet* and the Isle of Ré, 89; fighting in Corsica, 91; the old Marquis's critical survey of his strange offspring. 92; the General Overturn, 93; the one man who might have saved

France, 94; marriage, 96; banished to Manosque, 97; in the castle of If; a stolen visit from his Brother, 99; at Pontarlier, 101; Mirabeau and Sophie Monnier escape into Holland, 103; in the castle of Vincennes, 106; before the Besançon and Aix Parlements, 108; the world's esteem now quite against him, 110; States-General, his flinging-up of the handful of dust, 113; deputy for Aix, 114; victory and death, 115.
Mirabeau, his pamphlets, vii. 55; the Notables, 57; Lettres-de-Cachet against, 57; expelled by the Provence Noblesse, 98; cloth-shop, 98; is deputy for Aix, 99; king of Frenchmen, 108, family of, 108; wanderings of, 109; his future course, 110; groaned at, in Assembly, 121; his newspaper suppressed, 123; silences Usher de Brézé, 130; at Bastille ruins, 163; on Robespierre, 173; fame of, 173; on French deficit, 188; populace, on veto, 189; Mounier, October Fifth, 201; insight of, defends veto, 233; courage, revenue of, 234; saleable? 234; and Danton, on Constitution, 243; his female bookseller, 249; at Jacobins, 252; his countship, 268; on state of Army, 287; Marat would gibbet, 312; his power in France, 316; on D'Orleans, 316; on duelling, 318; interview with Queen, 323; speech on emigrants (the 'trente voix'), 329; in Council, 333; his plans for France, 333; probable career of, 335; sickens, yet works, 335, 336; last appearance in Assembly, 336; anxiety of populace for, 337; last sayings of, 337; death of, 338; public funeral of, 339; burial-place of, 339; character of, 340, 341; last of Mirabeaus, 342; bust in Jacobins, viii. 75; bust demolished, 195; his remains turned out of the Pantheon, 359.
—— Marquis, on the state of France in 1775, vii. 29; and his son, 45; his death, 145.
—— the younger, nicknamed Tonneau, vii. 114; in Constituent Assembly, breaks his sword, 131, 172; death of, 343.
Miracles, the age of, now and ever, iv. 32; significance of, vi. 156, 160.
Miranda, General, attempts Holland, viii. 228.
Miroménil, Keeper of Seals, vii. 59.
Misery not so much the cause as the effect of Immorality, iv. 261; all Misery the fruit of unwisdom, ix. 91; strength, that has not yet found its way, 296. See Wretchedness.
Mitchell, Col., Cromwell's letter to, xii. 432.
Mitton, Col., in Wales, x. 235.
Mobs, on, vii. 196.
Model, New, of the Army, x. 158, 162 n., 171, 173, 177.
Model Prisons, xiii. 65-93; a London prison of the model kind, 68.
Moderation, and other fine names, iii. 188. See Half-and-halfness.
Moffat, the African Missionary, i. 372.
Moleville, Bertrand de, Historian, vii 82; viii. 58; minister, his plan, 59; frivolous policy of, 60; and D'Orleans, 60; jesuitic, 73; in despair, 108; concealed, 133.
Moloch, our modern, xiii. 188.
Momoro, Bookseller, agrarian, viii. 131; arrested, 320; guillotined, 323; his Wife Goddess of Reason, 303.
Monarchy, Fifth, described, xii. 25; plot, 228.
Money, doomed to possess, xiii. 183.
Monge, Mathematician, in office, viii. 123; assists in new Calendar, 268
Moniteur, Editors of the, vii. 107, 184, 249.
Monk, Col. George, in the Tower, x. 151; in Ireland, 238; in Scots War, xi. 159, 184, 191; at Edinburgh, 241; made Lieut.-General of Ordnance, 269; sent to Stirling, 285; storms Dundee, 298; puts down rebellion in the Highlands, 299; xii. 10; in Dutch War, xi. 316, 327; Army mutinous, xii. 67.
Monks, ancient and modern, ix. 104; the old monks not without secularity, 117, 122; insurrection of monks, 148.
Monmouth-Street, and its "Ou' clo' " Angels of Doom, vi. 148.
Monopoly of soap, &c., x. 52.
Monro, Gen., in Scots Army, x. 277; his motions, 300; rejected at Edinburgh, 307.
Monsabert, G. de, President of Paris Parlement, vii. 77; arrested, 79-81.
Montagu, Dr., censured, x. 50.
Montague family, x 44.
—— Lord, a Puritan, x. 41.
—— (Earl of Sandwich), Colonel of the Parliament foot, x. 170; at Bristol siege, 183, 184; receives King at Hinchinbrook, 226; in Little Parliament, xi. 334; of Customs Committee, 365; in Council of State, 367 n.; xii. 5 n.; in Cromwell's First Parliament, 17; made Admiral, 124; Cromwell's letters to, 140, 142, 155, 306, 308, 314; on Committee of Kingship, 221; assists the French, 265, 306, 309; at Installation, 306; one of Cromwell's Lords, 318.
Montaigne's House, i. 296; Sterling's Essay, 313.
Montélimart, covenant sworn at, vii 261.
Montesquiou, General, takes Savoy, viii. 176.
Montgaillard, on Queen captive, viii. 122; on September Massacres, 157; on Paris ladies, 354.
Montgolfier invents balloons, vii. 41.
Montgomery, Col. Robert, notice of, x. 326; Major-General in Scots Army, xi. 164, 165, 231 n., 252.
Montmartre, trenches at, viii. 134.
Montmorin, War-Secretary, vii. 70; his brother killed at La Force, viii. 149.
Montrose, the Hero-Cavalier, vi. 357.
—— Earl, in Scots Army, x. 83; routed in Scotland, 198; taken and executed, xi. 155.
Moonshine, bottled, and illusory Churches, i. 260; diseased developments, 264; more perilous than any perdition, 272.
Moore, Dr., at attack of Tuileries, viii. 118; at La Force, 149.
Morality, ix. 197.
Morande, De, newspaper by, vii. 45; will return, 107; in prison, viii. 138.
Moray House, Edinburgh, Cromwell at, x. 322.
Mordington, Cromwell at, x. 315, 318; xi. 161; incident at, 162.
Morellet, Philosophe, vii. 183.
More's, Hannah, anti-German trumpet-blast, iii 309.
Morgan, Mr., to be taken, x. 270, 271.
Moritz, Elector, and his superior jockeyship, v. 352.

Morris, Governor of Pontefract Castle, x. 330; Cromwell's letter to, 330.
Morrison's Pill, ix. 88; men's 'Religion' a kind of, 247.
Moses, the Hebrew outlaw, iii. 2; Moses and the Dwellers by the Dead Sea, ix. 189.
Mosstroopers, Watt and Augustin, xi. 227; routed by Col. Hacker, 245.
Mother's, a, religious influence, vi. 61.
Motive-Millwrights, vi. 135.
Moucheton, M. de, of King's Body-guard, vii. 208.
Moudon, Abbé, confessor to Louis XV., vii. 15, 19.
Mounier at Grenoble, vii. 82; proposes Tennis-Court oath, 128; October Fifth, President of Constituent Assembly, 201; deputed to King, 204; dilemma of, on return, 212; emigrates, 222.
Mountain, members of the, viii. 46; re-elected in National Convention, 163; Gironde and, 219-222; favourers of the, 221; vulnerable points of, 224; prevails, 227; Danton, Duperret, 242; after Gironde dispersed, 254; in labour, 260.
Mountain scenery, vi. 93.
Mulgrave, Earl, x. 304; in Council of State, xii. 5 n.; one of Cromwell's Lords, 318.
Müllner, Dr., supreme over playwrights, ii. 287; his Newspaper qualifications, 296.
Müller, Friedrich, ii. 118.
—— General, invades Spain, viii. 310.
Mungo Park, ix. 234.
Municipality of Paris, to be abolished, viii. 351. See Paris.
Munster for Parliament, xi. 94.
Murat, in Vendémiaire revolt, viii. 373.
Musäus, Johann August, his life and writings, ii. 306; his *Volksmährchen*, 308; moral and intellectual character, 309; his *Dumb Love*, xiv. 3; *Libussa*, 53; *Melechsala*, 90.
Music, Luther's love of, iii. 178; the divinest of all the utterances allowed to man, v. 325; condemned to madness, 329; all deep things musical, vi. 247; musical Entertainment at Cromwell's, xii. 210.
Musselburgh, Cromwell at, xi. 163, 164, 170, 177; Cromwell's Army in, 269.
Mutiny, military, nature of, vii. 283.
Mystery, deep significance of, iv. 13; mystical and intellectual enjoyment of an object, 210, 296; all-pervading domain of mystery, vi. 41.
Mysticism, ii. 53; iii. 72, 97.
Mythologies, the old, once Philosophies, iv. 40. See Pan, Sphinx.

Naigeon's Life of Diderot, iv. 193.
Nakedness and hypocritical Clothing, vi. 34, 38; a naked Court-Ceremonial, 36; a naked Duke addressing a naked House of Lords, 37.
Names, inextricable confusion of Saxon princely, v. 347; Mirabeau's expressive Nicknames, 112; significance and influence of names, vi. 53, 159.
Nanci, revolt at, vii. 237, 292, 294, 296; town described, 292; deputation imprisoned, 294; deputation of mutineers, 298; state of mutineers in, 299, 300; Bouillé's fight, 301; Paris thereupon, 302; military executions at, 303; Assembly Commissioners, 304.
Nantes, after King's flight, viii. 15; massacres at, 292; noyades, 298; prisoners to Paris, 338, 350.
Naples, Sterling at, i. 367; eminent ignorance of the Neapolitans, 369.
Napoleon, and his Political Evangel, vi. 109; a portentous mixture of Quack and Hero, 363; his instinct for the practical, 364; his democratic *faith*, and heart-hatred for anarchy, 365; apostatised from his old faith in Facts, and took to believing in Semblances, 366; this Napoleonism was *unjust*, and could not last, 367.
—— Bonaparte, studying mathematics, vii. 84; pamphlet by, 287; democratic in Corsica, 322; August Tenth, viii. 118; under General Cartaux, 260; at Toulon, 271, 295-297; was pupil of Pichegru, 312; Josephine and, at La Cabarus's, 353, 354; Vendémiaire, 373, 374.
Narbonne, Louis de, assists flight of King's Aunts, vii. 326; to be War-Minister, viii. 61; demands by, 67; secreted, 134; escapes, 137.
Narratives, difference between mere, and the broad actual History, iii 172; grand source of our modern fictions, 285; mimic Biographies, iv. 39; narrative, the staple of speech, 183.
Naseby described, x. 173, and *App.* xii. 393. See Battle.
National Assembly: see Assembly.
National characteristics, ii. 22, 194, 217; v. 150; suffering, ii. 261.
National misery, the result of national misguidance, ix. 92.
Nationality, ix. 169.
Nature, not dead matter, but the living mysterious Garment of the Unseen, iii. 78; iv. 3; v. 4, 46; Book of, iii. 174; v. 266; successive Revelations, 176; the God-written Apocalypse of Nature, vi. 31, 39; not an Aggregate but a Whole, 42, 94, 150, 157; Nature alone antique, 63; sympathy with, 92, 109; the 'Living Garment of God,' 115; Laws of Nature, 156; Nature, all one great Miracle, 190, 236, 290; a righteous Umpire, 231; statue of, viii. 266; Nature, not dead, but alive and miraculous, ix. 92.
Navigation Act, xi. 316.
Navy, Louis XV. on French, vii. 37; French, rots, viii. 58.
Nawaub, Europe one big ugly, xiii. 275.
Nayler, James, worshiped, xii. 63, 120; punished, 213, 214.
Neal, on Cromwell, xii. 146.
Necessity, brightened into Duty, vi. 60; submission to, ix. 7, 24.
Necker, and finance, account of, vii. 38; dismissed, 39; refuses Brienne, 85; recalled, 87; difficulty as to States-General, 94; reconvokes Notables, 94; opinion of himself, 106; popular, 130; dismissed, 137; recalled, 158; returns in glory, 180; his plans, 188; getting unpopular, 236; departs, with difficulty, 303.
Necklace, Diamond, vii. 46, 55, 74.
Needlewomen, Distressed, xiii. 14, 49.

Negro Slaves, the, unfit for freedom, i. 250; devotion to a good Master, 254; Negro Slavery and White Nomadism, ix. 287; our Negro population up to the ears in pumpkins, xiii. 2; need to be 'emancipated' from their indolence, 6, 21, 79; the Negro, alone of wild men, can live among men civilised, 8; *injustices* of Negro Slavery, 9; how to abolish them, 17, 23; Black *Adscripti glebæ*, 25. See Slavery.
Neile, Bishop, and Popery, x. 50; Parliament about to accuse, 51.
Neot's, St., fight at, x. 277.
Nerwinden, battle of, viii. 234.
Nessus'-shirt, our poisoned, xiii. 150.
Netherlands, wars in the, v. 321; occupied by French, viii. 191.
New, growth of the, ix. 35; New Eras, 42; all *new* things strange and unexpected, 50; our heavy-laden long-eared New Era, xiii. 36, 63, 65.
New Testament, ix. 217, 297.
New Year's Day, when: see Year.
Newark, designs on, x. 116, 119.
Newbury: see Battle.
Newcastle, Earl, helps the King, x. 97; his Popish Army, 115; besieges Hull, 136, 138; retires disgusted, 154.
—— Mayor of, Cromwell's letter to, xii. 199.
Newhall estate, xii. 147.
Newman, Francis, Sterling's high esteem for, i. 234.
Newmarket rendezvous: see Army.
Newport, Negotiations at, x. 322, 333.
Newspaper-Editors, the Mendicant Friars of these days, iii. 114; vi. 27, 154; their unwearied straw-thrashing, v. 179. See Fourth Estate.
Newspapers in 1789, vii. 184; in 1790, 247-251, 311, 324.
Nibelungen Lied, the, iii. 220-263; an old German Epos of singular poetic interest, 233; extracts, and condensed sketch of the Poem, 236; antiquarian researches into its origin, 257.
Nicholas, Capt., at Chepstow, x. 272.
—— St., Thomas, Cromwell's letter to, x. 338; account of, 339.
Nièvre-Chol, Mayor of Lyons, viii. 223.
Nigger Question, the, xiii. 1-28.
Night-Moth, Tragedy of the, ii. 351.
Nineteenth Century, our poor, and its indestructible Romance, v 4; at once destitute of faith and terrified at scepticism, 155, 160; an age all calculated for strangling of heroisms, 329; intellect of the, xiii 124. See Present Time, European Revolution.
Nobility, *Ig-*, ii. 233; xiii. 9, 185, 280
Nobleness, old, may become a new reality, iii. 117; meaning of nobleness, ix. 210; Noble, young, true education of the, xiii. 162. See Aristocracy.
Nobles, state of the, under Louis XV., vii. 11; new, 13; join Third Estate, 131; Emigrant, errors of, viii. 65.
Noble's Memoirs criticised, x. 12.
Nomadism, xiii. 13, 15; uglier than slavery, 60.
Norham, situation of, x. 318
Norman Nobles, ix. 24; Normans and Saxons originally of one stock, 45.
North, Sir Dudley, Cromwell's letter to, xii. 397.
—— Mr. Henry, of Mildenhall, v. 299.
Northern Archæology, iii. 220.
Norton, Col. Richard, serves under Earl Manchester, x. 132; notice of, 250, 256; Cromwell's letters to, 250, 255, 257; purged by Pride, xi. 3; in Little Parliament, 335; in Council of State, 367 n.
Notables, Calonne's convocation of, vii. 55; assembled, 22d Feb. 1787, 56; members of, 56; organed out, 62; effects of dismissal of, 62; reconvoked (6th November 1788), 94; dismissed again, 94.
Nothingness of life, vi. 111.
Nottingham, Charles I. erects his standard at, x. 93; xi. 288.
Nova Scotia occupied for Cromwell, xii. 442.
Novalis's perplexity with *Wilhelm Meister*, ii. 175; iii. 87; speculations on French Philosophy, 53; Novalis, 57-97; parentage and youth, 63; death of his first love, 65; literary labours, 70; illness and death, 71; his Idealism, 77; extracts from his *Lehrlinge zu Sais*, &c., 79; Philosophic Fragments, 85; *Hymns to the Night*, and *Heinrich von Ofterdingen*, 89; intellectual and moral characteristics, 95; on Man, vi. 192; Belief, 227, 228; Shakspeare, 265.
Novelle, translated from Goethe, iv. 303-315.
Novels, Fashionable, iv. 39; partially living, 42; what they must come to, 190, Scott's Historical Novels, v. 176.
Noy, Attorney, conduct of, in 1632, x. 56; his advancement, death, and dissection, 57, 58.
Noyades, Nantes, viii. 297.

Oath of the Tennis-Court, vii. 128; National, 256, 276.
Obedience, the lesson of, vi. 60, 152; ix. 56, 139; xiii. 154; true and false, 260, 276.
Oblivion, the dark page on which Memory writes, iv. 185; a still resting place, ix. 174; Oblivion and remembrance, x. 6. See Memory.
O'Bryen, Barnabas, notice of, xi. 31.
Obscene wit, iv. 222.
O'Connell on the wings of blarney, i. 377.
October Fifth (1789), vii. 197-200.
Odin, the first Norse 'man of genius,' vi. 200; historic rumours and guesses, 201; how he came to be deified, 203; invented 'runes,' 204; Hero, Prophet, God, 205.
Officers, one hundred, remonstrate with Cromwell on Kingship, xii. 217; petition of, on Kingship, 298.
Ogé, condemned, viii 57.
Okey, Col., taken at Bristol siege, x. 184; at Inverkeithing fight, xi. 278; Republican, xii. 12.
Olaf, King, and Thor, vi. 214.
Old age, reverence for, xiii. 34.
Old-clothes, heaps of, i. 193.
Oldenburg, Duke, his present to Cromwell, xii. 64.
Oliva, the Demoiselle d', v. 38.
O'Neil, Henry, joins Ormond, xi. 77.
—— Hugh, Governor of Clonmel xi. 148.
—— Owen Roe, character of, xi. 56.

Onslow, Sir Richard, in Kingship Committee, xii. 257.
Onyx Ring, the, Sterling's Tale of, i. 288, 307; still worth reading, 309.
Opera, the, v. 325-329; Opera, xiii. 275.
Oratory and Rhetoric, iv. 5.
Order to Keeper of St James's Library, xi. 7.
—— : see Estate, Third.
Ordinance, Self-denying, x. 158, 162.
—— of Militia : see Militia.
Ordinances of Cromwell, xii. 5, 6.
Organising, what may be done by, ix. 274, 282.
Original Man, difficulty of understanding an, ii. 189, 191, 206; iii. 57, 183; v. 61, 117, 198; the world's injustice, ii. 240; iii. 2; iv 75; uses of, 108, 110, 112, 122; v. 286; no one with absolutely *no* originality, iv. 67; an original Scoundrel, 246; the world's wealth consists solely in its original men, and what they do for it, v. 62; the original man, the *sincere* man, vi. 219, 279. See Man.
Originality, ix. 171. See Path-making.
Orleans, a Duke d', in Louis XV.'s sick-room, vii. 16; another, disbelieves in death, 17.
—— High Court at, viii. 70; prisoners, massacred at Versailles, 160-162.
—— Philippe (Egalité), Duc d', *Duke de Chartres* (till 1785), vii. 56; waits on Dauphin, Father, with Louis XV., 16; not Admiral, 37; wealth, debauchery, Palais-Royal buildings, 40, 41; balloons, 41; in Notables (*Duke d'Orleans* now), 56; looks of, Bed-of-Justice (1787), 72, 73; arrested, 73; liberated, 75; pseudo-author, 93; in States-General Procession, 114; joins Third Estate, 131; his party, in Constituent Assembly, 172; Fifth October and, 223; shunned in England, 247; to be Regent? Mirabeau, 316; cash gone, how, 316; use of, in Revolution, 317; accused by Royalists, 331; at Court, insulted, viii. 60; in National Convention (*Egalité* henceforth), 165; decline of, in Convention, 191, 225; vote on King's trial, 205, 207; at King's execution, 211; arrested, imprisoned, 241; condemned, 287; politeness and execution, 288; his son,—see Louis Philippe.
Ormesson, d', Controller of Finance, vii. 51; his Uncle, on States General, 65, 75.
Ormond, Earl, Irish levied by, x. 208; character of, 237; strong in Ireland, xi. 6; routed by Jones, 36; at Wexford, 70; at Ross, 72; plotting in England, xii. 326, 348, 353.
Orpheus, vi. 161.
Orthodoxy and Heterodoxy, viii. 7.
Oswestry, Cromwell's letter to, xii. 448.
Otes, described, x. 78.
Otley, Col., at disbanding of Rump, xi. 331.
Ou' clo', the fateful Hebrew Prophecy, xiii. 53, 86, 89, 276. See Monmouth Street.
Ouse river, x. 69.
Overbury poisoned, x. 32.
Over-population, vi. 138; ix. 64; 'preventive check,' 65; infanticide, 66; Emigration, 67.
Over-production, charge of, ix. 203, 228.
Overton, Col, Governor of Hull, x 241; in Scots War, xi. 159, 191; at Inverkeithing, 276, 278; Republican, xii. 12; sent to the Tower, 67.
—— Richard, a Leveller, xi. 18.
Owen, Col, Sir John, in Wales, x. 235; delinquent, 333, 335.
—— Dr. in Cromwell's First Parliament, xii. 17; preaches to Second Parliament, 158.
Own, conservation of a man's, vi. 122.
Oxford, Charles I. at, x. 111; surrendered, 199; Cromwell, &c., feasted at, xi. 29.
—— University reformed, xi. 256; Cromwell Chancellor of, 256; Cromwell and, xii. 429, 447.
—— : see Eton.

PACHE, Swiss, account of, vii. 244; Minister of War, viii. 185; Mayor, 247; dismissed, reinstated, 248; imprisoned, 329.
Pack, Sir Christopher, motion by, xii. 216.
Packer, Lieut.-Col., notice of, x. 147, 149.
Paganism, Scandinavian, vi. 187; not mere Allegory, 188; Nature-worship, 190, 207; Hero-worship, 192; creed of our fathers, 196, 211, 213; Impersonation of the visible workings of Nature, 197; contrasted with Greek Paganism, 199; first Norse Thinker, 200; main practical Belief; indispensable to be brave, 208; hearty, homely, rugged Mythology; Balder, Thor, 210; Consecration of Valour, 215.
Paine, 'Common Sense,' vii. 244; that there be a Republic (1791), viii. 14; naturalised, 130; in National Convention, 164; escapes guillotine, 345.
Palais-Royal, change in, use of, vii. 41; spouting at, 124, 133, 158, 189.
Pamphlets on Civil War, King's, x. 2, 3, 86.
Pan, the ancient symbol of, iv. 59.
—— Mallet du, solicits for Louis, viii. 59.
Pandarus Dogdraught, ix. 263, 269.
Pandora's box, vii. 238.
Panis, Advocate, in Governing Committee, viii. 132; and Beaumarchais, 139; confidant of Danton, 145.
Pantheism, i. 286.
Pantheon, first occupant of, vii. 339.
Paoli, General, friend of Napoleon, vii. 322.
Paper, Age of, uses of, vii. 24.
—— blotting-, not in use, x. 214 n.
—— Rag-, invention of, iii. 297.
Papist Army, Newcastle's, x. 115.
—— Monuments destroyed, x. 120.
Papists, to be hanged, x. 154; cruelties in Ireland, xi. 69, 102; against Protestants, xii. 331, 332
Paradise, the dream of, iv. 21; Paradise and Fig-leaves, vi. 22; prospective Paradises, 82, 89; Paradise to all-and-sundry, xiii. 78, 89.
Paraguay and its people, v. 268.
Parchments, venerable and not venerable, ix. 205, 211.
Parens, Curate, renounces religion, viii 300.
Pâris, friend of Danton, viii. 324.
—— Guardsman, assassinates Lepelletier, viii. 208.
Paris, origin of city, vii. 8; police in 1750, 12 (see Parlement); ship Ville-de-Paris, 36, 37; riot at Palais-de-Justice, 68; beautified (in 1788), 77; election (1789), 96; troops called to, 122; military preparations in, 132; July Fourteenth, cry for arms, 139, 146; search for arms, 141; Bailly, mayor of, 157; trade-strikes in, 185; Lafayette patrols, 190; Oc-

tober Fifth, propositions to Louis, 214; illuminated, 215, 256; Louis in, 225; foreigners flock to, 244; Journals, 249, 250, 311, 324; bill-stickers, 250, 311; undermined, 270, 327; after Champ-de-Mars Federation, 278; on Nanci affair, 302; on death of Mirabeau, 338; on flight to Varennes, viii. 13-15; on King's return, 30; Directory suspends Pétion, 93; enlisting (1792), 100, 144; on forfeiture of King, 107; Sections, rising of, 109 (see Sections); August Tenth, prepares for insurrection, 109-111; Municipality, supplanted, 111; statues torn down, King and Queen to prison, 123; Prisons (see Prisons); September (1792), 157; names printed on house-door, 235; in insurrection, Girondins (May 1793), 248, 249; Municipality in red night-caps, 306; brotherly supper, 331; like a Mahlstrom (Thermidor), 346; Sections to be abolished, 351; brightened up (1795), 352-354; Gilt Youth, 355.

Parker, Mr., Cromwell's letter to, xi. 332.

—— Sir Philip, v. 299.

Parlement of Paris, reëstablished, vii. 25; patriotic, 49, 66; on registering Edicts, 64; against Taxation, 65, 66; remonstrates, at Versailles, 65; arrested, 67; origin of, 67; nature of, corrupt, 67; at Troyes, yields, 69, 70; Royal Session in, 71, 73; how to be tamed, 77; oath and declaration of, 78; firmness of, 78-81; scene in, and dismissal of, 81; reinstated, 88; unpopular, 92; summons Dr. Guillotin, 99; abolished, 236.

—— Douai, alone registers Edicts, vii. 82.

Parlements, Provincial, adhere to Paris, vii. 67, 73; rebellious, 75, 81; exiled, 82; grand deputations of, 83; reinstated, 88; abolished, 235.

Parliament, Long, an Election to the, v. 295-314; Samuel Duncon's affidavits concerning the election for Suffolk, 300; 'short and true relation' of the same by Sir Symonds D'Ewes, 306; his valuable notes of the Long Parliament, 313. See Commons, &c.

—— Third, of Charles I., x. 44; is Puritan, 45; its Petition of Right, 45; doings of, 46; Alured's letter about, 46; prorogued, 49; dissolved, 51; holds down the Speaker, 51; conduct after, 52; Short, summoned 1640, 83; dissolved, 83; Long, summoned 3d Nov. 1640, 84; sketch of, 84; votes against Bishops, 85; secures the Militia, 92; grand Petition of, 95; Charles I. attempts to seize Five Members, 96; goes to City for refuge, 97; how it raises army, 98; affairs in July 1643, 132; takes the Scots covenant, Sept. 1643, 137; affairs in 1644, 158; disagreement of Generals, 159; affairs prosper, 200; new Members elected (Recruiters), 200; Army turns on it, 219, 220; declares against Army, 223; votes lands to Cromwell, 252; number of Members in 1648, 256 (see Members); purged by Pride, 346 (see Rump); new one to be elected, xi. 307, 321; difficulties in choosing, 327; Little, summons for, 333; members of, 334, 335; meets 4th July 1653, 335; failure of, 363; doings and resignation of, 367-369; First Protectorate, assembles 3d Sept. 1654, xii. 16-18; unsuccessful, 37; signs the Recognition, 61; doings of, 62, 63; dissolved, 94; Second Protectorate, assembles 17th Sept. 1656, 158; doings in Sindercomb's plot, 206; doings of, 211-213; offers Cromwell title of King, 216, &c.; presses him to accept the title, 224, 225; second session of, 317; the two Houses disagree, 328; dissolved, 353.

Parliaments, superseded by Books, vi. 307; Cromwell's Parliaments, 357; insufficiency of Parliament, ix. 5; Parliament during the last century, 39; fighting by Parliamentary Eloquence, 49; Parliamentary Radicalism, 54; Parliament and the Courts of Westminster, 77, 271; a Parliament starting with a lie in its mouth, 267; modern recipe of Parliament, xiii. 39; the English Parliament once a Council of Actual Rulers, 51, 191, 201; now an enormous National Palaver, 103, 175, 194; what it has done for us, 121; kind of men sent there, 135, 199; Parliamentary career, 171; Parliamentary bagpipes, 178, 185. Parliaments, 190-219; origin of our English Parliaments, 191; the Long Parliament, 193, 201; position of Parliament become false and impossible, 194; with a Free Press, the real function of Parliament goes on everywhere, continually, 195; Adviser of the Sovereign, or Sovereign itself, 197, 203; Newspaper Reporters, in a Parliament and Nation no longer in earnest, 198; the French Convention all in deadly earnest, 202; Chartist Parliament, 204; a Parliament indispensable, 208; Condensed Folly of Nations, 209.

—— First French: see Assembly, Legislative.

Pascal and Novalis, resemblances between, iii. 96.

Pass, form of, in 1649, xi. 4.

Passivity and Activity, vi. 60, 98.

Past, the, the fountain of all Knowledge, iii. 173; iv. 181; the true Past never dies, 29; v. 246; sacred interest of, iv. 45, 61; the Past inextricably linked with the Present, vi. 104; forever extant, 159; the whole Past the possession of the Present, 215.

—— Present, and Future, viii. 189; ix. 99, 257, 265, 279.

Path-making, ix. 168.

Patrons of genius, and convivial Mecœnases, ii. 228; patronage twice cursed, 232; ditto twice *blessed*, iv. 78.

Paul and Virginia, by St. Pierre, vii. 48.

Paul's, St., Cross described, x. 50; Cathedral, a horseguard, xi. 25.

Pauperism, iv. 173; what to do with Paupers, vi. 140; our Irish and British Paupers, xiii. 55; address to, 57; Pauperism, our Social Sin grown manifest, 147, 152.

Peace, keeping the, the function of a policeman, xiii. 131; something more sacred than 'peace,' 236.

Peace-Era, the much-predicted, vi. 107.

Peak, Sir Robert, taken at Basing, x. 198.

Peasant Saint, the, vi. 140.

Pedantry, ix. 107; the Pedant, xiii. 102.

Peel and Wellington, Edward Sterling's admiration of, i. 374, 377; note of thanks from Sir Robert Peel, 370; Sir Robert Peel the one likely or possible Reformer of Downing Street, xiii. 97; his 'eleventh hour,' 156.

Peerage, the English, past and present, xiii. 241. See Aristocracy.
Pelham, and the Whole Duty of Dandies, vi. 170.
Peltier, Royalist Pamphleteer, viii. 137.
Pembroke besieged by Cromwell, x. 268, 277.
—— Earl, sent to Charles I., x. 208; Chancellor of Oxford, xi. 256.
Penn, Admiral, sails with the fleet, xii. 65; sent to the Tower, 117, 122-124.
—— Quaker, xii. 122.
Penruddock, Col., in arms, xii. 99; beheaded, 100.
Peoples'-Books, iii. 308.
Père Duchesne, Editor of, vii. 311; viii. 223.
Pereyra, Walloon, account of, vii. 244; imprisoned, viii. 321.
Periodical Windmills, iii. 102.
Permanence the first condition of all fruitfulness, ix. 286, 288; xiii. 15.
Perruques blondes, viii. 316.
Perseverance, law of, vi. 145.
Person, mystery of a, vi. 39, 80, 82, 146.
Perth surrenders, xi. 285.
Peterborough, Earl, notice of, x. 31.
Peterloo, ix. 83.
Peter's, St., in masquerade, i. 329.
Peters, Rev. Hugh, chaplain of train, x. 170; secretary to Cromwell, 190; his narrative of Basing, 193; at Putney, 234; at Pembroke, 268; in Ireland, xi. 36; Cromwell to be King, 298.
Pétion, account of, vii. 112; Dutch-built, 233; and D'Espréménil, 331; to be mayor, 333; Varennes, meets King, viii. 30; and Royalty, 31, 110; at close of Assembly, 41; in London, 42; Mayor of Paris, 73; in Twentieth June, 89; suspended, 93; reinstated, 99; welcomes Marseillese, 105; August Tenth, in Tuileries, 109; rebukes Septemberers, 156; in National Convention, 163; declines mayorship, 186; and his violin, 232; against Mountain, 242; retreat of, to Bourdeaux, 262-272; end of, 281.
—— National-Pique, christening of, viii. 81.
Petition, of famishing French (in 1775), vii. 28; at Fatherland's altar, viii. 33-35; of the Eight Thousand, 83; of washerwomen, 217.
—— of Right, x. 45; altered, 50; London, 85, 224; Buckinghamshire, 94; Surrey, 273; of Officers, xi. 321; and Advice of Parliament, xii. 216, 297, 298, 302, 305.
Petitions, on capture of King, viii. 33; for deposition, &c., 107.
Phayr, Col., at execution of Charles I., x. 349; at Cork, xi. 80; Cromwell's letter to, xii. 417.
Phélippeaux, purged out of the Jacobins, viii. 321.
Philanthropy, indiscriminate, xiii. 66; threatening to drown human society as in deluges, 78.
Philosopher in office, vii. 25.
Philosophes, the French, iv. 189, 209; vii. 25, 26, 247.
Philosophies, Cause-and-Effect, vi. 21.
Philosophische Briefe, character of Schiller's, i. 41.
Philosophism, influence of, on Revolution, vii. 13; what it has done with Church, 30; with Religion, 47; disappointment on succeeding, 247.
Philosophy teaching by Experience, iii. 169; iv. 38. See Kant.
Phœnix Death-Birth, vi. 145, 149, 164.
Phosphorus, Werner's parable of, ii. 83.
Piccadilly, derivation of, xii. 297 n.
Pichegru, General, notice of, viii. 312; in Germinal, 361.
Pickering, Col., at Bristol siege, x. 185; at Basing, 191; his death and funeral, xii. 395.
—— Sir Gilbert, in Council of State, xi. 367 n.; xii. 5 n.
Piedmont, persecution in, xii. 103, 107, 108, 357.
Pierpoint, Mr., x. 301; Cromwell at his house, xi. 288; and Cromwell on Kingship, xii. 240.
Pierre's, St., 'Paul and Virginia,' vii. 48.
Pig-Philosophy, xiii. 266.
Pikes, fabricated,—see Arms; Feast of, vii. 279; in 1793, viii. 266, 267.
Pilate, ix. 81.
Pilgrimage of Grace in 1536, x. 22.
Pilnitz, Convention at, viii. 64.
Pin, Latour du, War-Minister, vii. 294, 303; dismissed, 324.
Pinchbeck invented by Prince Rupert, xi. 81.
Pinkerton's stories of Cromwell, value of, xi. 224.
Pitt, against France, viii. 64; and Girondins, 218; inflexible, 357.
Pity, ix. 113.
Placard Journals, vii. 249.
Plague, Army escapes, in 1645, x. 187.
Plate fleet, prize of, xii. 198.
Playwrights, German and English, ii. 268; tricks of the trade, 273, 278, 290.
Pleasure, personal, iii. 51, 115, 202.
Plenary Court: see Court.
Plot, Gunpowder, x. 30; of Army, 84, 92; Waller's, 127; by Rev. C. Love, &c., xi. 273; Anabaptist, xii. 2, 3; Royalist, 4, 12, 97, 316, 327, 354; various Republican, 12, 76-81; Gerard's, 12, 15; in the North, 67; Penruddock's, 99; Sexby's, 152; Sindercomb's, 204; Venner's, 228; Hewitt and Slingsby's, 354, 355.
Plots, of King's flight, vii. 191 (and 322, 324, 325; viii. 9-12); various, of Aristocrats (October Fifth), 194, 205; Royalist, of Favras and others, 239, 318-320 (cartels, Twelve bullies from Switzerland), 322 (D'Inisdal Will-o'-wisp), 323 (Mirabeau and Queen), 328-330 (poniards), viii. 29, 59 (Mallet-du-Pan), Narbonne's, 61; traces of, in Armoire de Fer, 195; against Girondins, 232; Desmoulins on, 246; by Pitt? 321, 332; prison, 329, 335, 336, 337.
Plugson of Undershot, ix. 216, 231.
Poet, the, and Prophet, vi. 244, 259, 267; xiii. 268, 271.
Poetic culture, ii. 30, 42, 171, 206.
Poetry or Prose? a parting of the ways for Sterling, i. 342, 349; Poetry, 359, 385, 397; the true end of Poetry, ii. 50, 204, 237; iii. 87, 187, 315, 336; v. 326; English and German poetry mutually illustrative, ii. 51; Poetry can never die, 65; not a mere stimulant, 163, 193; iii. 113; our theories and genetic histories of, 267; poetry as Apologue, 285;

what implied by a nation's Poetry, 315; Epic, iv. 40; present condition of, 157; the *life* of each man a Poem, 243; Poetry and Prose, distinction of, vi. 246, 252.
Polignac, Duke de, a sinecurist, vii. 51; dismissed, 158; at Bâle, 175; younger, in Ham, 175.
Politeness, Johnson's, iv. 100; who invented politeness, xiii. 176.
Political Economy, and its small 'law of God,' xiii. 62. See Dismal Science.
Politics, English, restless whirl of, i. 320; a social mine below, 331.
—— and Religion in 1642, x. 102.
Pomfret: see Pontefract.
Pompeii and its Fresco Paintings, i. 369.
Pompignan, President of National Assembly, vii. 144.
Poniards, Royalist, vii. 323; Day of, 330, 331.
Pontefract, Cromwell at, x. 329, 330.
Poor-Law Amendment Act, ix. 11, 12; laudable as a *half*-truth, damnable as a whole, 13; whoever will not work ought not to live, 16.
Pope, the, a glance at, through Sterling's eyes, i. 326; a lie in livery, 327; candid confession about him, 336; Pope Pius VI. excommunicates Talleyrand, viii. 6; effigy of, burned, 6; the old Pope, with stuffed devotional rump, ix. 178; Pope Alexander VII., Cromwell's opinion of, xii. 171; a Reforming Pope, and his huge *un*reformable Popedom, xiii. 30.
Popery, vi. 287; in 1623, x. 38; images of, destroyed, 120; Cromwell on, xi. 107; Cromwell to suppress, 113.
Popish States, War with, xii. 162-167.
Popularity and Originality, ii. 189; iii. 119, 170; v. 144; fell poison of popular applause, iv. 299; v. 158. See Fame.
Portraits, Project of a National Exhibition of Scottish, v. 330-337.
Portuguese Treaty, xii. 8, 16; Ambassador's brother, 16; King, 142-145.
Posterity, appealing to, ix. 245. See Fame.
Potter's Wheel, significance of the, ix. 223.
Potts, Sir John, letter to, x. 108.
Poverty, the lot of many poets and wise men, ii. 235; advantages from, 237; iii. 135, 137; vi. 261; Christian-Orthodoxy's dread of, iv. 52.
Powel, Presbyterian-Royalist Colonel, x. 267; xi. 11.
—— Anabaptist, against Cromwell, xii. 2.
Power, love of, v. 282; xi. 371. See Ambition.
Powick, possessed by the Scots, xi. 291, 293.
Pownel, Major, at Preston fight, x. 281.
Poyer, Col., his doings in Wales, x. 267, 269; shot, xi. 11.
Poyntz, Gen., enlists soldiers, x. 233; slashes the mob, 233.
Practice, the Man of, ix. 194.
Prairial First to Third (May 20-22) 1795, viii. 364-367.
Prayer, faithful unspoken, ix. 248; praying *by Working*, 251.
Prayer-meeting, Windsor Castle, 1648, x. 263, &c.
Prayers for the Parliament Army, x. 169; an English troop interrupted at, xi. 176; Cromwell's last, xii. 373.
Preachers, triers of: see Triers.
Preaching, Cromwell on, xi. 210, 246; xii. 283.
Précy, siege of, Lyons, viii. 271, 293.
Premier, what a wise, might do, ix. 273; mad methods of choosing a Premier, xiii. 103, 169; a more unbeautiful class never raked out of the ooze, 129; one wise Premier the beginning of all good, 135. See King, Windbag.
Presbyterianism, Charles I. averse to, x. 151; and schism, 177; adopted by Parliament, 216; overthrown, 234. See Independents.
Present Time, the, iii. 99; iv. 14, 21; in pangs of travail with the New, 24; the Present the living sum-total of the whole Past, 29, 115. See Nineteenth Century, Past.
—— the, xiii. 29-64.
Presentation, Cromwell's, to Rectory of Houghton Conquest, xi. 436.
Preston: see Battle.
—— Dr., fame of, x. 40.
Pride, Col., summoned by Commons, x. 223; at Preston battle, 287; purges the Commons, 346; v. 312; in Scots War, xi. 159, 191; would hang up the Lawyers' gowns, 192 n.; one of Cromwell's Lords, xii. 318.
Priest and Philosopher, old healthy identity of, iii. 176; iv. 12; the true Priest a kind of Prophet, vi. 271; ix. 259.
Priesthood, costumes thrown off (Bishop Torné), viii. 71; costumes in Carmagnole, 301. See Religion.
Priests, dissident, fustigated, viii. 2; marry in France, 70; Anti-national, hanged, 94; thirty killed near the Abbaye, 147; number slain in September Massacre, 158; to rescue Louis, 207; drowned at Nantes, 297; four hundred at anchor, 338.
Priesthoods, ix. 35.
Priestley, Dr., riot against, viii. 63; naturalised, 130; elected to National Convention, 164.
Prince, Thomas, Leveller, xi. 18.
Printing, invention of, iii. 297; vi. 307.
Prinzenraub, the, v. 338-363.
Prison, Abbaye, refractory Members sent to, viii. 71; Temple, Louis sent to, 123; Abbaye, Priests killed near, 147 (see Abbaye); La Force, massacres at, 147, 151-153; at Châtelet, and Conciergerie, 147-149.
Prisons, Paris, in Bastille time, vii. 142; full (August 1792), viii. 139; number of, in Paris and France, 292; state of, in Terror, 336-338; thinned after Terror, 350.
Private judgment, vi. 278.
Procession of States-General Deputies, vii. 105; of Necker and D'Orleans busts, 138; of Louis to Paris (October), 223-225; again, after Varennes, viii. 30; of Black Breeches, 86-89; of Louis to trial, 197; at Constitution of 1793, 267.
Proclamation by Cromwell, 1648, x. 315; after Dunbar fight, xi. 187; Edinburgh, 216.
Professions, the learned, hateful not lovable i. 221.
Progress of the Species, vi. 273.
Proly, Jacobin missionary, viii 234.
Property, vi. 122; ix. 36; none eternal but God the Maker's, 45.
Prophecy, and prodigies, vii. 258.

Prose, good, better than bad Rhyme, iv. 179. See Poetry.
Proselytising, vi. 5, 180.
Protestantism, modern, ii. 100; Protestantism the root of Modern European History, vi. 277; not dead yet, 287; its living fruit, 292, 335; Protestantism, proper and *im*proper, xiii. 259.
Protestants emancipated, vii. 71, 75.
Protestation of Commons, 1641, x. 93, and *App.* xii. 382-384.
Provence Noblesse, expel Mirabeau, vii. 98.
Prudhomme, Editor, vii. 249; on assassins, 320; turncoat, viii. 299; on Cavaignac, 310n.
Prussia, Fritz of, vii. 222; against France, viii. 63 (see Brunswick, Duke); army of, ravages France, 134, 135; King of, and French Princes, 170.
Prussian Monarchy, founder of, xii. 331 n.
Prynne, W., first appearance of, x. 55; his Histriomastix, 55; in pillory in 1633, 57; again in 1637, 75; speech in pillory, 75; purged by Pride, 348; assists Dr. Hewit, xii. 355.
Public Opinion, Force of, iii. 51, 115.
Publishing Societies, and what they might do towards a real History of England, v. 314.
Puffery, the deluge of, iv. 209; ix. 181.
Puisaye, Girondin General, viii. 254, 261; at Quiberon, 358.
Purgatory, noble Catholic conception of, vi. 256.
Puritan Sermons, x. 7; history, 10; demands at Hampton-Court Conference, 29; characteristic, 40; leaders, 41.
Puritanism founded by Knox, vi. 291; true beginning of America, 292; the one epoch of Scotland, 293; Theocracy, 298; Puritanism in England, 338, 340, 355; ix. 48; giving way to decent Formalism, 200; Puritanism, our last heroism, x 2; faded, 7; Dryasdust on, 8; nature of, 62.
Puritans, English and Scots, x. 84; become formidable, 91.
Puseyisms, i. 237, 271; ix. 161, 300; xiii. 149, 172.
Putney Church, Army-meeting at, x. 234.
Putrescence and Social Decay, iv. 260.
Pym, John, M.P., a Puritan, v. 295; x. 41; speech by, 47; lives at Chelsea, 94.

Quackery, portentous age of, iv. 259; dishonesty the raw material alike of Quackery and Dupery, 262; deception and self-deception, 278, 283; Quackery originates nothing, vi. 187, 217; age of, 315; Quacks and Dupes, 347; vii. 340; ix. 27; Quacks and sham-heroes, 90, 135, 181, 186, 244. See Bankruptcy.
Quakerism, germ of, xi. 24.
Quaker's, a manufacturing, care for his workmen, ix. 287, 299.
Quakers, first Scotch, xi. 249. See Nayler, Fox, Penn.
Queen of Charles I, doings by, x. 116.
Quéret-Démery, prisoner in Bastille, vii. 155.
Queries to Edinburgh clergy, xi. 213; of Scotch Western Army, 225.
Quiberon, debarkation at, viii. 358.
Quietest, the Greatest by nature also the, v. 155. See Silence, Wholeness.

Rabaut, St., Etienne, French Reformer, vii. 112; in Commission of Twelve, viii. 244; hides between two walls, 264; guillotined, 291.
Radicalism, Sterling's early, i. 218, 229; tottering for him, and threatening to crumble, 239; fallen to wreck, 260; the opposite extreme, 271; Speculative Radicalism, vi. 8, 17, 38; Parliamentary, ix. 54; Paralytic, 58.
Ragland Castle besieged, x. 206; surrenders, 200.
Ragnarök, vi. 213.
Rahel Varnhagen von Ense: see Ense.
Railways, how, are shifting all towns of Britain into new places, xiii. 229; stupendous railway miracles, 237.
Rainsborough, Col., at Bristol siege, x. 183; deserted by the Fleet, 278; assassinated, 330.
Raleigh's, Sir Walter, fine mantle, vi. 29; his execution, x. 36.
—— History, Cromwell's opinion of, xi. 146.
Ramadhan, the English, xiii. 250.
Ram-dass the Hindoo man-god, v. 146.
Ramsay, Rev Robert, preaches before Cromwell, xi. 270.
Rawlins, Captain of Parliament horse, x. 170.
Raynal, Abbé, Philosophe, vii 45; his letter to Constituent Assembly, 183.
Read, what it is to, an author, ii. 114, 191; iii. 57, 94; v. 230.
Ready-Reckoner, strange state of our, ix. 198.
Reality, deep significance of, iv. 40, 44, 190, 295; v. 5, 46, 325; the Real always respectable, xiii. 247.
Reason, Goddess of, viii. 302, 303. See Feast.
Rebecqui, of Marseilles, viii. 55; in National Convention, 164; against Robespierre ('*Moi*'), 184; retires, 223; drowns himself, 260.
Recruiters, new Members of Parliament, x. 201.
Redbank, fight at, x. 287. See Preston.
Reding, Swiss, massacred, viii. 150.
Reece, Mr., Sterling's early schoolmaster, i. 207, 209.
Reform, iii. 118; not joyous but grievous, v. 281; like Charity, must begin at home, ix. 97; poor old Genius of Reform, xiii. 81. See Administrative Reform, Downing Street.
—— Ministries, Benthamee, ix. 56.
Reformation, era of the, iii. 272; in Scotland, iv. 64.
Reformer, the true, vi. 271; x. 63.
Reid, Dr., iii. 74.
Religion cannot be made up of doubts, i. 265, 272; utilitarian Religion, ii 163; iii. 113; heroic idea of, 236; self-conscious, iv. 17; dead letter and living spirit of Religion, vi. 71; weaving new Vestures, 132. 168; a man's Religion the chief fact with regard to him, 186; based on Hero worship, 193; propagating by the sword. 230; cannot succeed by being 'easy,' 237; Christian Religion and French Revolution. viii. 284; abolished (Curé Parens, Revolutionary Army), 299-302; Clootz on, 300; a new, 302, 333; how teach Religion, ix. 61; Religion, a great heaven-high Unquestionability, 117, 122, 160; our religion gone, 177; all true Work,

Religion, 226; foolish craving for a 'new religion,' 245, 250; Inner Light of a man's soul, 246; not the many things a man tries to believe, but the few he cannot doubt, xiii. 264; foolish clamour for a 'new religion,' 279. See Christian, Prayer, Worship.
Remonstrance, against Buckingham, x. 48; against Laud, 51; and Petition of Ministers, 85; Grand, of Long Parliament, 95; of Scotch Western Army, xi. 224, 229, 232.
Remy, Cornet, at Clermont, viii. 23.
Rénault, Cécile, to assassinate Robespierre, viii. 332; guillotined, 335.
Réné, King, bequeathed Avignon to Pope, viii. 50.
Renner, the: see Hugo von Trimburg.
Rennes, riot in, vii. 83.
Renunciation, the beginning of Life, iii. 67; one harmonious element of the Highest, iv. 236.
Renwick, last of Cameronians, viii. 219.
Repaire, Tardivet du, Bodyguard (Fifth October), vii. 217; rewarded, 322.
Repentance, sacredness of, xiii. 255.
Representation, double, of Tiers Etat, vii. 94.
Representative, Hereditary, vii. 321. See Louis.
Representatives, Paris, Town, vii. 182 (see Club, Electoral). Convention: see Commissioners.
Republic of Literature, ii. 152. See Literary Men, Literature.
—— French, first mention of, viii. 16; first year of, 163, 268; established, 171, 177; universal (Clootz's), 186; Girondin, 233; one and indivisible, 241; its triumphs, 356-358.
Republics, ancient and modern, xiii. 42.
Resolutioner, Protester, xi. 233, 250.
Respectability, iv. 247; baleful influence of, v. 2, 140; how generated, 54. See Gigmanity.
Resson, Sieur, reports Lafayette to Jacobins, viii. 92.
Réveillon, first balloon at house of, vii. 41; house beset, destroyed, 101, 102.
Revenge, ix. 23; mournful twaddle about, xiii. 84; sacred duty of, 88.
Reverence, worth of, ii. 179; not sycophancy, iv. 60, 175; need of enlightenment, 120; reverence for the Highest, in ourselves and in others, 243; early growth of, vi. 61; indispensability of, 153; our want of reverence, xiii. 12, 223.
Reviewers, duty of, ii. 298; what is called 'reviewing,' iii. 60; iv. 19; the trade well-nigh done, iii. 313; Smelfungus's despair, iv. 157. See Read.
Revolt, Paris in, vii. 141; of Gardes Françaises, 142; becomes Revolution, 156; military, what, 284; of Lepelletier section, 372-374.
Revolution, a European, rapidly proceeding, iv. 122. See Commonweal, Europe.
—— English, our great, v. 229, 295; Civil-War Pamphlets, 296, 297; Pride's purge, 312.
—— French, meaning of the, iii. 117; masses of Quackism set fire to, iv. 262; a greater work never done by men so small, v. 64; the Event of these modern ages, 119; vi. 333, 335, 363.
—— —— Parliamentary History of the, v. 119-134; Thiers's History, Mignet's, and others, 120; curious collections of revolutionary books, pamphlets, &c., 124; death of Foulon, 125; the Palais-Royal; white and black Cockades; Insurrection of Women, 128; the Jacobins' Club, in its early days of moral-sublime, 130; the September Massacre, 132.
Revolution, French, causes of the, vii. 13, 30, 46, 76; Lord Chesterfield on the, 14; not a Revolt, 156; meaning of the term, 165; whence it grew, 167; general commencement of, 177; editors, 183; prosperous characters in, 248; Philosophes and, 247; state of army in, 285; progress of, 309, 315; duelling in, 318; Republic decided on, viii. 14; European powers and, 63-65; Royalist opinion of, 65; Cardinal movements in, 129; Danton and the, 162; changes produced by the, 177; and Atheism, 201; effect of King's death on, 215, 216; Girondin idea of, 222, 233; suspicion in, 246; like Saturn, 281; Terror and, 283; and Christian religion, 284; Revolutionary Committees, 235, 275, 291; Government doings in, 314; Robespierre, essential to, 349; end of, 374.
—— the South-American, and set of revolutions, v. 249.
Revolutionary Horologe, i. 240.
Reward and punishment, xiii. 85, 89.
Reynard the Fox, Apologue of, iii. 264; Researches into its origin, 298; analysis of, 302; extract, showing the language of our old Saxon Fatherland, 306.
Reynolds, Col., at Ferns, xi. 59; surprises Carrick, 88, 89; in Cromwell's First Parliament, xii. 17; assists the French, 265, 305, 309; death of, 315.
Rhadamanthus's post long vacant, i. 380.
Rheims, in September Massacre, viii. 160.
Ribble Bridge, fight at, x. 285. See Preston.
Rich, Col., in Scotland, xi. 285, 286.
—— Mr., and Frances Cromwell, xii. 148-151, 316; death of, 366.
Richard I.: see Cœur-de-Lion.
Richardson, ii. 209.
Richelieu, at death of Louis XV., vii. 16, 20; death of, 90.
Richmond, Duke, present to, x. 245.
Richter, Jean Paul Friedrich, ii. 1-19; leading events of his life, 5; his multifarious works, 7; extract from *Quintus Fixlein*, 18; poverty, 237; brief sketch of his life and writings, 331; J. P. F. Richter again, iii. 119-167; his peculiar style, 120; a true literary man, heroic and devout, 122; interesting fragment of Autobiography, 124; birth and pedigree, 125; his good Father and early home, 126; self-vision, 130; education and extreme poverty, 131; his first productions, 136; this too a Spartan Boy, 139; his Costume Controversy, 140; dares to be poor, 143; triumphant success of *Hesperus*, 148; his marriage, 150; unwearied diligence, 151; blindness and death, 153; intellectual and literary character, 154: extracts, 158; on Daughter-full houses, 161; his vast Imagination, 162; his Dream of Atheism, 163; review of De Staël's 'Allemagne,' 341; Varnhagen's pleasant visit to, v. 189; his power, &c., vi. 19, 191; his *Schmelzle's Journey to*

Flätz, xiv. 237; *Life of Quintus Fixlein*, 284.
Ridicule not the test of truth, iii. 13.
Right and Wrong, vi. 241, 257; *infinitely* different, iv. 85, 236; the question of, only the second question, 248; silent awful sense of, xiii. 67, 280; dim oblivion of, 89. See Evil.
Rights and Mights, ix. 23; the final 'rights' of man an abstruse inquiry, 29. See Might.
Riot, Paris, in May 1750, vii. 12. Corn-law (in 1775), 28; at Palais-de-Justice (1787), 68 (see Grenoble, Bearn, Rennes); triumphs, 88, 89; of Rue St. Antoine, 101, 103; of July 14th (1789), and Bastille, 138-156; at Strasburg, 179; Paris, on the veto, 189; Versailles Château, October Fifth (1789), 197-220; uses of, to National Assembly, 242; Paris, on Nanci affair, 302; at De Castries' Hotel, no theft, 319; on flight of King's Aunts, 326; at Vincennes, 328; on King's proposed journey to St. Cloud, viii. 3; in Champ-de-Mars, with sharp shot, 35; Avignon,—see Avignon; Birmingham,—see Birmingham; Paris, Twentieth June (1792), 88; August Tenth (1792), 109-123; Grain, 186; Paris, at Théâtre de la Nation, 202; selling sugar, 217; of Thermidor (1794), 342-347; of Germinal (1795), 361; of Prairial, 364; final, of Vendémiaire, 372, 376.
Riots: see Apprentices.
Riouffe, Girondin, viii. 262; to Bourdeaux, 262; in prison, 272; on death of Girondins, 279; on Madame Roland, 289.
Riquettis, the, vii. 108: see Mirabeau.
Rivarol, staff of genius, viii. 60.
Robber-Towers and Free-Towns of Germany, iii. 292.
Robbers, the, Schiller's play of, i. 13; not an immoral work, 20; consequences to its author of its publication, 20; remodelled for the stage, 172.
Robert de Montfort, ix. 154.
Robertson's History of Scotland, iv. 64.
Robespierre, Augustin, decreed accused, viii. 343; fall of, guillotined, 346, 347.
—— Maximilien, account of, vii. 111; derided in Constituent Assembly, 173; Jacobin, 252 (viii. 306); incorruptible, on tip of left, 316; elected public accuser, 333; after King's flight, viii. 15; at close of Assembly, 41; at Arras, position of, 42; plans in 1792, 67; chief priest of Jacobins, 76; invisible on August Tenth, 111; reappears, 132; on September Massacre, 158; in National Convention, 163; accused by Girondins, 184; accused by Louvet, 193; acquitted, 193; on Mirabeau's bust, 195; King's trial, 196, 205; Condorcet on, 227; at Queen's trial, 277; in Salut Committee, 305; and Paris Municipality, 306; embraces Danton, 321; Desmoulins and, 322; and Danton, 324; Danton on, at trial, 327; his three scoundrels, 326; supreme, 329; to be assassinated, 332; at Feast of Etre Suprême, 333, 334; apocalyptic, Théot, 334, 338; on Couthon's plot-decree, 335; reserved, 339; his schemes, 339; fails in Convention, 340; applauded at Jacobins, 341; accused, 343; rescued, 344; at Townhall, declared out of law, 345; half-killed, 347; guillotined, 347; essential to Revolution, 349. Mahomet Robespierre's scraggiest of prophetic discourses, v. 64; an atrabiliar Formula of a man, nearly two years Autocrat of France, 65; once an Advocate in Arras, 285.
Robinson, Luke, sent to Charles I., x. 208; turncoat, xii. 327.
—— Rev. Mr., Cromwell's letter to, xi. 3.
Rochambeau, one of Four Generals, vii. 282; retires, viii. 82.
Roche-Aymon, Grand Almoner of Louis XV., vii. 15, 20.
Rochefoucault, Duke de la, Liberal, vii. 114; President of Directory, viii. 94; killed, 160.
Rochester, Earl: see Wilmot.
Rœderer, Syndic, Feuillant, viii. 86; 'Chronicle of Fifty Days,' 87; on Fédérés Ammunition, 109; dilemma at Tuileries (August Tenth), 110, 115.
Roghill, xi. 120.
Rohan, Prince Cardinal de, and Cagliostro, iv. 284; what he was, v. 12; how he bore his dismissal from Court, and what came of it, 17-59; vii. 46.
Rokewood, Mr., ix. 103.
Roland of Roncesvalles, v. 3.
—— M., notice of, vii. 263; in Paris, viii. 55; Minister (no buckles), 77; letter, and dismissal of, 84; recalled, 123; decline of, 130; on September Massacres, 156; and Pache, 185; doings of, 186; resigns, 212; fled, 252; suicide of, 290.
—— Madame, notice of, at Lyons, vii. 263; narrative by, 264; in Paris, after King's flight, viii. 15; and Barbaroux, 55; public dinners and business, 77; character of, 78; misgivings of, 186; accused, 202; Girondin declining, 227; arrested, 252; in prison, condemned, 289; guillotined, 289.
Rolf, Major, accused, x. 302.
Roman Augurs, Cicero's, xiii. 150.
—— Conquests, ix. 24, 196; Romans out, English in, 43.
—— Emperors, era of the, iii. 50.
Romance, Translations from German, Preface to, ii. 303; the age of Romance can never cease, v. 1; none ever seemed romantic to itself, 3.
Rome, Sterling at, i. 321, 326; a tour to, in the twelfth century, ix. 125.
Romme, in National Convention, viii. 164; in Caen prison, 255; his new Calendar, 268, 269; in riot of Prairial (1795), 365; suicide, 366.
Romœuf, pursues the King, viii. 16; at Varennes, 28.
Ronsin, General of Revolutionary Army, viii. 292, 303; arrested, 320; guillotined, 323.
Rooksby, Major, killed at Dunbar, xi. 192.
Rosière, Thuriot de la, summons Bastille, vii. 148; in First Parliament, viii. 47; in National Convention, 200; President at Robespierre's fall, 343.
Ross Town, besieged, xi. 71; taken, 76.
Rossignol, in September massacre, viii. 152; in La Vendée, 292.
Rothes, Earl, taken at Worcester, xi. 295.
Rouse, Francis, Translator of the Psalms, x. 81; in Little Parliament, xi. 335; Speaker of Little Parliament, 369; of Council of

State, xii. 5 n.; in Cromwell's First Parliament, 17; one of Cromwell's Lords, 318
Rousseau, iii. 18, 39; iv. 40, 211; v. 267; not a strong man; his Portrait; egoism, vi. 323; his passionate appeals, 324; his Books, like himself, unhealthy; the Evangelist of the French Revolution, 325; ix. 41; his Contrat Social, vii. 43; Gospel according to, 257 (and viii. 41, 284); burial-place of, 339; statue decreed to, viii. 4C.
Roux, M., 'Histoire Parlementaire,' viii. 284.
Rowe, Scoutmaster, character of, x. 309.
Royalists, Club of, extinguished, vii. 254; named 'blacks,' 318; duelling, 317-320; plot for King's flight (see Plot); pomards, 323, 330; staff of genius of, viii. 60, 67; preparations at Coblentz, 64.
Royalty, signs of, demolished, viii. 14, 122; abolished in France, 171.
Royou, editor of 'Ami du Roi,' viii. 66.
Royston, Rendezvous: see Army.
Ruamps, Deputy, against Couthon, viii. 335.
Rudolf of Hapsburg, iii. 266.
Ruhl, notice of, viii. 47; in riot of Prairial, 365; suicide, 366.
Rump, doings of the, xi. 305-307; must be dissolved, 328; dismissed by Cromwell, 330.
Rupert, Prince, his father dies, x. 55; plunderings of, in 1643, 103; nicknamed Robber, 133; relieves York, 151; routed at Marston Moor, 151; at Worcester, 1645, 164; at Naseby battle, 173; at Bristol, 182; manner of his leaving Bristol, 188; quits England, 200; in Irish seas, xi. 81.
Rushworth, John, in danger at Naseby, x. 175; Cromwell's letter to, 209; with Cromwell in Scotland, xi. 159; reporter of Cromwell's Speech, xii. 347.
Rushworthian chaos, x. 8, 46; xi. 159.
Russel, Francis, Henry Cromwell's father-in-law, x. 154, 256; purged by Pride, xi. 3.
Russians, the silent, worth something, ix. 194, 196; the Czar of Russia, 211.

SA, Don Pantaleon, beheaded, xii. 16.
Sabatier de Cabre, at Royal Session, vii. 72; arrested, 73; liberated, 75.
Sachs, Hans, a literary contemporary of Luther, ii. 25.
Sadler, Adjutant, in Ireland, xi. 141.
—— John, Cromwell's letter to, offering him Chief Justiceship in Munster, xii. 415.
Saffron Walden: see Army.
Sahara, desert, viii. 129.
Saint-Simonian Portent, the, i. 226, 297.
Saints, living Communion of, vi. 151, 155; Saints and Sinners, ix. 112.
Salisbury, Levellers at, xi. 26; insurrection at, xii. 99.
Salles, Deputy, guillotined, viii. 280.
Salm, regiment, at Nanci, vii. 289.
Saltpetre, digging for, viii. 309.
Salut Publique: see Committee.
Sam-Slicks, vagrant, ix. 289.
Samson, Monk, teacher of the Novices, ix. 118; his parentage, dream, and dedication to St. Edmund, 124; sent to Rome, 125; home tribulations, 126; silence and wariness, 128; though a servant of servants, his words all tell, 130; elected Abbot, 134; arrival at St. Edmundsbury, 135; getting to work, 138, 140; his favour for 'fit men,' 143; not unmindful of kindness, 144; a just clear-hearted man, 145; hospitality and stoicism, 146; troubles and triumphs, 147; in Parliament, 151; practical devotion, 156; Bishop of Ely outwitted, 157; King Richard withstood, 158; zealous interest in the Crusades, 160; a glimpse of the Body of St. Edmund, 163; the culminating point of his existence, 167.
Sanitary Reform, ix. 276.
Sansculottism, apparition of, vii. 166; effects of, 180; growth of, 230, 241; at work, 238; origin of term, 323; and Royalty viii. 88; above theft, 157; a fact, 163. French Nation and, 178; Revolutionary Tribunal and, 236; how it lives, 237; consummated, 283, 286, 298, 309; fall of, 349; last rising of, 363-366; death of, 367.
Santa Cruz, Blake beats Spanish at, xii. 264.
Santerre, Brewer, notice of, vii. 107; at siege of Bastille, 151; at Tuileries, 323: June Twentieth, viii. 88; meets Marseillese, 105; Commander of Guards, 114; how to relieve famine, 187; at King's trial, 197; at King's execution, 210; fails in La Vendée, 270; St. Antoine disarmed, 366.
Sarcasm, the panoply of, vi. 80.
Sartor Resartus, Sterling's letter on, i. 274; genesis of, vi. 5; its purpose, 163.
Satan, Milton's, ii 238.
Satanas, the true, that now is, ix. 260.
Saturn or Chronos, vi. 79.
Sauerteig on the significance of Reality, iv. 40; Life, 243; National suffering, 261; Reforming a Nation, v. 261; the Eras of England, ix. 42; Nature, 92; our reverence for Death and for Life, 167; the real Hell of the English, 184; fashionable Wits, 188; symbolic influences of Washing, 251; Pig-Philosophy, xiii. 266.
Saunders, Col., notice of, x. 270; Cromwell's letter to, 271; in Scotland, xi. 280, 285.
Sausse, Procureur of Varennes, viii 25; scene at his house, 27; flies from Prussians, 141.
Savage, the aboriginal, vi. 23.
Savonnières, M. de, Bodyguard (October Fifth), temper gives way, vii 208.
Savoy occupied by French, viii. 176.
—— Duke, persecutor, xii. 103.
Saxe, Maréchal de, v. 357.
Saxon Heptarchy, the, iv. 187; ix. 44, 80; Saxon character, 19; Race, 42-53.
Saxony, Kings of, v. 354, 355.
Say and Sele, Lord, a Puritan, x. 41; in Church Commission, xii. 7.
Scarecrow, significance of the, vi. 37.
Sceptical goose-cackle, vi. 41.
Scepticism, so rife in our day, i. 195; the *sourness* of the new fruit of growing Knowledge, iv. 30; the Sceptic's viaticum, 226: Scepticism, a spiritual paralysis, vi. 312-317, 341. See Doubt.
Schiller, Friedrich, born in Würtemberg, i. 5; character and circumstances of his parents, 5, 6; boyish caprices and aspirations, 6; intended for the clerical profession, 7; first poetry, 8; the Duke of Würtemberg's School, 9; intolerable constraint, 9-12; publication

of the *Robbers*, 13, 18; consequent persecution, 20; is encouraged by Dalberg, 23; escapes from Stuttgard, 24; finds refuge at Bauerbach, 25; settles in Manheim, 32; his lofty striving, 37; removes to Leipzig, 46; proposal of marriage, 47; goes to Dresden, 50; crowned with laurels, but without a home, 65; lyrical productions, 66; tires of fiction, 68; habits at Dresden, 70; visits Weimar, 71; meets the Fräulein Lengefeld, 72; first acquaintance with Goethe, 72; appointed Professor of History at Jena, 78; marriage, 78; study of History, 79; sickness, 83; influence of Kant, 86; epic projects, 93; returns to the Drama, 94; connexion with Goethe, 96; visits his parents, 98; removes to Weimar, 118; enthusiastic reception of the *Maid of Orleans*, 132; his last sickness and death, 146; his personal aspect and mental gifts, 148; his Letters, 170; specimen of his historical style, 185; his ideal of the true Artist, ii. 43; his perfection of pomp-prose, iii. 158: Schiller, 182-219; Correspondence with Goethe, 184; his cosmopolitanism, 186; his high aims, 188; literary life and struggles, 189; connexion with Goethe, 198; illness and quiet heroism, 199; his character, and mode of life, 203; intellectual gifts, 206; contrast between the *Robbers* and the *Maid of Orleans*, 211; *Song of the Alps*, 216; his philosophy, 217. See Madame de Staël.
Schlegel, Friedrich, iv. 24.
Schleiermacher, v. 189.
Schnüspel, the distinguished Novelist, ix. 113.
School-education, insignificance of, v. 62, 64; tin-kettle terrors and incitements, 63; need of Soul-Architects, 65.
Schoolmasters, when useful, xiii. 162.
Schubart, Daniel, account of, i. 161, 179.
Science, the Torch of, vi. 1; the Scientific Head, 40.
Scot of Scotstarvet, notice of, x. 315; xi. 249 n.
Scotch metaphysics, ii. 60; iii. 103 (see Mechanical Philosophy); national character, v. 150, 319.
—— Covenanters, ix. 245.
Scotland, awakened into life by Knox, vi. 293; destitution in, ix. 72; united to England, xi. 300.
Scots Committee of Estates, Cromwell's letters to, x. 310, 316, 323; xi. 222, 251; extinguished at Alyth, 299
—— affairs in 1637, x. 76; Covenant, 76; affairs in 1639, 82; motions of their Army, 83; Declaration and proceedings of, in England, 83; demands, 86; assist English Parliament, 137; Army enters England, 1644, 146; at Marston Moor, 151, 152; Commissioners and Cromwell, 162; Army returns home, 204; Negotiations concluded, 213; proclaim Charles II, xi. 71; assist Charles II., 95; their Covenant in 1650, 153, 154, 220, 221; call in Charles II., 155; prepare to repel Cromwell, 162; Army skirmishes with Cromwell, 164, 165; Army, how officered, 166; their poverty, &c., described, 170; their Covenant commented on by Cromwell, 172; skirmish with Cromwell, 175; routed at Dunbar, 185, 186; Clergy and Cromwell, 203-215; Committee of Estates, Cromwell's letters to, x. 310, 316, 323; xi. 222, 251; divisions among 220, 232; at Stirling, levying forces, &c., 244; entrenched at Torwood, 276; invade England, 284, 287; routed at Worcester, 290-296; Cromwell's opinion of, xii. 342.
Scott, Major Thomas, report by, xi. 2; Cromwell's letter to, 80; Republican, xii. 7; does not sign the Recognition, 61; in Cromwell's Second Parliament, 158, 348; excluded, 197; death of, 327.
—— Sir Walter, v. 135-184; great man, or not a great man, 143; one of the *healthiest* of men, 147, 157; an old Borderer, in new vesture, 148; early environment, 149; infancy and young-manhood, 151; Metrical Romances, and worldly prosperity, 156, 160; his connexion with the Ballantynes, 158; influence of Goethe, 161; the Author of Waverley, 163; not much as a Letter-writer, 164: dinner with the Prince Regent, 164: birtheve of a Waverley Novel, 166; life at Abbotsford, 167; literary value of the Waverley Novels, 173; extempore writing, 177; bankruptcy, 181; a lonely, brave, impoverished man, 182; on the Apennines, ix. 289.
Scoundrel *is* scoundrel, xiii 70, 74; not to be commanded by mere 'love,' 71; Supreme Scoundrel, 234; Hero and Scoundrel now almost indistinguishable, 244; significance of Scoundrelism, v. 53.
Scoutmaster, office of: see Rowe.
Scroope, Col., pursues Scots, x. 294.
Seakings, the old, and Saxon Pirates, xiii. 107.
Seals, Great, new, &c., xi. 254, 255. See Commonwealth.
Séchelles. Hérault de, in National Convention, viii. 179; hat on, leads Convention out, 251; and new Feast of Pikes, 266; arrested, 324; guillotined, 328.
Secrecy, benignant efficacies of, vi. 133; the Open Secret, 244.
Sections, of Paris, viii. 231; denounce Girondins, 244; Committee of, 245, 247, 273. See Paris.
Sedan Municipals, and Lafayette, viii. 124.
Sedgwick, Major-Gen., in Jamaica, xii. 125; in America, 442; death of, 132.
Seid, Mahomet's slave and friend, vi. 228, 238.
Seigneurs, French, obliged to fly, vii. 178, 310.
Selborne, Natural History of, iv. 47.
Selden, John, imprisoned, x. 52.
Self-activity, vi. 16
Self-annihilation, vi. 114; xiii. 256.
Self-forgetfulness, Werner's notion of, ii. 89; how good men practise it, 236. See Renunciation.
Self-interest, political systems founded on, iii. 50, 52, 106.
Selfishness, ix. 93, 96.
Self-worship, iv. 121.
Seneca, our niceliest proportioned Half-and-half, iv. 226.
Senses, the outward and inward, vii. 7, 13.
Sentimentalist, the, barrenest of mortals, iv. 7; Goethe's opinion of him, 140; puking and sprawling, v. 148.
September, see Massacre.
Septemberers, the, viii. 158.

Sergent, Agate, Engraver, in Committee, viii. 132; nicknamed 'Agate,' 157; signs Circular, 160.
Serle, Daniel, Governor of Barbadoes, xii. 125; Cromwell's letter to, 128.
Servan, War-Minister, viii. 77, 80; plans of, 83.
Servants, 'hired for life,' xiii. 16, 24.
Seventy-four, an English, and its inarticulate traditions, xiii. 107.
Sèvres, Potteries, Lamotte's Mémoires burnt at, viii. 71.
Sewster, Robina, family of, x. 218; married to Lockhart, xii. 310.
Sexby, Edward, Trooper, examined, x. 223; 100*l.* voted to, 296; his plottings, xii. 99, 152, 175, 204; his death, 316.
Sexton's Daughter, Sterling's, i. 299; still in the shadows of the surplice, 302.
Shakspeare, Schiller's first impression of, i. 11; Shakspeare and the Elizabethan Era, vi. 261; his all-sufficing intellect, 262, 264; his Characters, 263; his Dramas, a part of Nature herself, 265; his joyful tranquillity, and overflowing love of laughter, 266; his hearty Patriotism, 267; glimpses of the world that was in him, 267; a heaven-sent Light-Bringer, 269; a King of Saxondom, 269; ix. 48; his humour, ii. 13; no sectarian, 188; depth of insight, 193; iv. 152; bombast, ii. 204; Novalis's thoughts on, iii. 87; good taste, 234; compared with Goethe, iv. 152; education, 161; compared with Scott, v. 159; not an easy writer, 178; his death, x. 31; Shakspeare's scattered tones of a National Epos, xiii. 274.
Shame, divine, mysterious growth of, vi. 24; the soil of all virtue, 134.
Shams, utter damnability of, xiii. 38, 45.
Sheep, significant resemblances between men and, iv. 67, 118; v. 136.
Shekinah, Man the true, vi. 192.
Shelley, iv. 24.
Sherland, Parson, apprehended, xii. 134.
Shilbourn, Col., in Ireland, xi. 138.
Shipmoney, Writ of, x. 57. See Hampden.
Sicard, Abbé, in prison, viii. 138; in danger near the Abbaye, 147; account of massacre there, 153.
Sicilian Insurrection, xiii. 31.
Side, Right and Left, of Constituent Assembly, vii. 172, 238, 239; Tip of Left, Jacobins, 316; Right and Left in conflict, 317; Tip of Left popular, 333; Right after King's flight, viii. 13; Right quits Assembly, 37; Right and Left in First Parliament, 46; Delilah kiss, 48.
Sidney, Col Algernon, in Parliament Army, x. 170; in Rump Parliament, xi 329.
Siegfried, the hero of old Northern Tradition, iii. 230, 238
Sieyes, Abbé, account of, vii. 113; Constitution-builder, 113, 168, 233; in Champ de-Mars, 272; in National Convention, viii. 164; of Constitution Committee (1790), 179; vote at King's trial, 205; making new Constitution, 371.
Silence, greatness and fruitfulness of, i. 340; the grand epitome and sum-total of all Harmony, iv. 13; out of, comes Strength, 66; significance and sacredness of, 232, 235; v. 138; vi. 109; the element in which all great things fashion themselves, 133; the great empire of, vi. 260, 353; invaluable talent of, ix. 145, 196, 258; unsounded depths of, 226, 227; two Silences of Eternity, 248; English talent for, x. 5; excellent Silence, or good *work* with lips closed, xiii. 160; what silence means in the Nineteenth Century, 173; a life in silence, 186; silent work, and silent suffering, 188.
Sillery, Marquis, notice of, vii. 247. See Genlis.
Simes, Major, shot, xi. 138.
Simon, Cordwainer, Dauphin committed to, viii. 330; guillotined, 347.
Simoneau, Mayor of Etampes, killed, viii. 57; festival for, 81.
Simon's, Saint, aphorism of the golden age, vi. 145; a false application, 181.
Simplon Pass, the, i. 316.
Sincerity, the grand secret for finding readers, ii. 202; v. 159; the most precious of all attainments, iii. 335; iv. 164, 247; v. 228, 326; better than gracefulness, vi. 207; the first characteristic of heroism and originality, 218, 225, 279, 280, 301; instinct for discriminating, ix. 28; deep awful divine quality of, xiii. 261. See Original Man, Truthfulness, Wholeness.
Sindercomb, Miles, character and plot of, xii. 204-206; poisons himself, 210.
Sinnott, Col. David, Governor of Wexford, negotiations with Cromwell, xi. 60-68.
Skippon, Major-Gen., conveys Scots money, x. 215; in Council of State, xii. 5 n.; in Cromwell's First Parliament, 17; a Major-General, 119 n.; one of Cromwell's Lords, 318.
Slavery of Wisdom to Folly, the one intolerable sort, xiii. 10; authentic *slaves* to be treated as such, 60, 216. See Mastership.
—— Question, Sterling's notions on the, i. 272; the Slave-trade, and how to suppress it, xiii. 26. See Negro.
Sleep, curious to think of, v. 35.
Slepe Hall described, x. 69.
Sleswick thunder-horse, badly ridden, xiii. 104, 142.
Sliding Scales, ix. 209, 214. See Corn-Laws.
Slingsby, Sir Henry, in arms, xii. 99; plot and execution of, 354, 355.
Sluggard-and-Scoundrel Protection Society, xiii. 2, 79.
Smectymnuus pamphlets, x. 86.
Smoke, advantage of consuming one's, vi. 92.
Societies, Printing: see Dryasdust.
Society, Machine of, iii. 106, 112; miraculous power of association, iv. 8; society a second all-embracing Life, 10; wholeness, and healthy unconsciousness, 11; burning-up of, 191; Society founded upon Cloth, vi. 30, 36, 38; how Society becomes possible, 131; social Death, and New Birth, 132, 144, 149, 164; as good as extinct, 141; vital *lungs* of, xiii. 128, 166; no Society, but a lost horde, 243.
—— (see Jacobin), Fraternelle, viii. 245.
Soirées, Lion-, the crowning phenomenon of modern civilisation, v. 136.
Soissons, camp to be formed at, viii. 94; bread poisoned at, 104.

Soldier, the, ix. 273; Soldiers at sack of Basing, anecdotes of, x. 194.
Solecisms, topheavy, vii. 162.
Solitude: see Silence.
Sombreuil, Governor of Hôtel des Invalides, vii. 145; examined, viii. 71; seized, 138; saved by his daughter, 149; guillotined, 335; son of, shot, 358.
Somers Tracts criticised, x. 58, 177 n.; xii. 215.
Somnauth, Idol of, xiii. 231.
Songs, and their influence, ii. 215; divine song, v. 325.
Sorbonne, the, decay of, vii. 11.
Sorrow, Sanctuary of, ii. 183; iii. 47; v. 31; Sorrow-pangs of self-deliverance, vi. 92, 97, 98; divine depths of Sorrow, 115; Worship of Sorrow, 118; ix. 190; meaning of, x. 39.
Soul and conscience, need for some, ix. 90, 131, 218, 250; to save the 'expense of salt,' 108; man has lost the *soul* out of him, 177, 190.
Souls'-Overseers: see Bishops.
South-Sea Island Queen, anecdote of, x. 350.
Southwark declares for Army, x. 233.
Sower's Song, the, ii. 354.
Space-and-Time, the Dream-Canvas upon which Life is imaged, vi. 32, 39, 155, 159. See Time.
Spain, against France, viii. 64, 213; invaded by France, 310; English, Alliance with, broken, x. 38; War with, 38; issue of, 39; War with, xii. 124, 128, 152; reasons for, 161-165.
Spanish Refugees, i. 239, 241, 256.
Sparrowbill and M'Pastehorn, xiii. 79.
Spartan wisdom, vi. 140; humanity, xiii. 59.
Speaking, difference between, and public speaking, iv. 277 (see Conversation); Speech, great, but not greatest, vi. 134; difference between speech and jargon, ix. 89; invention of articulate speech, 171; insincere speech, 189; the Speaking Man wandering terribly from the point, 260; ability to speak no evidence of ability to *work*, xiii. 115, 159, 175; speech and sham speech, 159, 163, 174; eloquent *unperformed* speech, horrible, 166; human speech no longer true, 263. See Silence, Stump-Orator.
Speculative intuition, vi. 31. See German.
Speech, Oliver Cromwell's first, x. 50; how to read Cromwell's speeches, 59; fragments of, against Earl Manchester and present Parliament commanders, 159-162.
Speldhurst Living, xi. 366, 367.
Sphinx-Riddle, the, iii. 269; the Universe a, vi. 78; the Sphinx-riddle of Life, ix. 75, 80; *our* Sphinx-riddle, 83.
Spinning Dervishes, ix. 272.
Spiritual, the, the parent of the Visible, iii. 267; iv. 17; rudiments of a new era, iii. 319, 336; iv. 28, 110, 236; the Spiritual, the first-cause of the Practical, xiii. 251.
Sports, Book of, burned, x. 120.
Sprigge's *Anglia Rediviva*, x. 165 n.
Spurs, night of, viii. 28.
Stael, Dame de, on liberty, vii. 248.
Staël, Mme. de, at States-General procession, vii. 106; intrigues for Narbonne, viii. 61, 78; secretes Narbonne, 134, 137; her 'Allemagne,' Richter's review of, iii. 341; 'Schiller, Goethe, and Madame de Staël,' iv. 316.
Stamford taken by Cromwell, x. 122.
—— Earl, defeated, x. 132.
Standard set up, Pamphlet, xii. 229, 256, 260.
Stanhope and Price, their club and Paris, vii. 245.
Stapleton, Bryan, notice of, x. 309.
—— Sir Philip, Presbyterian, x. 222, 309. See Members, Eleven.
Stapylton, Rev. Robert, x. 309; xi. 8; preaches in Edinburgh High Church, 219.
Stars gone out, i. 220, 264, 299.
State, xii. 5 n.; in Cromwell's First Parliament, 17; a Major-General, 119 n.; one of Cromwell's Lords, 318.
States-General, first mooted, vii. 63, 65 71; meeting announced, 84; how constituted, 91 (see Estate, Third); one or three orders in? 94; Representatives to, 95; Parlements against, 99; Deputies to, in Paris, 100; number of Deputies, 103; place of assembling, 104; procession of, 105-116; installed, 117; hats on, hats off, 118; union of orders? 121-126.
Statistic Tables beautifully reticulated, but holding no knowledge, ix. 8; personal observation the only method, 9, 20.
Statues, our Public, symbolic of our spiritual condition, xiii. 221, 223, 227, 245, 248; how they are got up, 225; sculptural talent manifest in them, 226; how they ought to be put down, 247.
Stealing, iv. 254; v. 231; vi. 122, 140; ix. 37.
Sterling, Anthony, born, i. 200; early memories, 202; a steady substantial boy, 212; enters a military life, 215; letter to, 227; at home on a visit, 300; meets his Brother in Italy, 331; quits the army, 386; at his Brother's dying bed, 394.
—— John, born in the Isle of Bute, i. 196; early life in Wales, 202; at Passy, 209; London, 211; runs away from home, 212; sent to Glasgow University, 214; life at Cambridge, 215; a Secretaryship, 222; the Athenæum, 223; attendance on Coleridge, 232; intimacy with the Barton family, 238, 241; connexion with Torrijos, 240; engaged to Miss Barton, 245; Marriage, 247; illness, 248; at the Island of St. Vincent, 249; news of the Spanish catastrophe, 256; returns to London, 261; meets Mr. Hare at Bonn, 263; Curate at Herstmonceux, 267; quits the Church, 270; life in London, 272; at Bayswater, 283; another serious illness, 293; at Bourdeaux, 294; Madeira, 303; literary efforts, 310; journey to Italy, 315; at Rome, 321; at Clifton, 333; Article on *Carlyle*, 340; at Falmouth, 345; Clifton again, 347; Torquay, 350; Falmouth, 352; Naples, 365; home again, 370; a dangerous accident, 379; Mother and Wife both taken from him, 382; removes to Ventnor, 384; his last sickness and death, 390.
—— Letters to his Father, i. 335, 341, 348, 356, 364, 370; to his Mother, 212, 250, 300, 315, 334, 338, 353, 364, 366, 372, 380, 381; to both, 321, 328, 345; to his Brother, 227; to his Son, 323, 392; to T. Carlyle, 274, 295, 304, 335, 336, 354, 368, 388, 393; to Charles

Barton, 244, 306, 350, 365; to Mr. Hare, 327, 362; to Mrs. Charles Fox, 350, 351; to W. Coningham, 351, 352; to Dr. Carlyle, 351; to Dr. Simmons, 353, 363, 371, 382.
Sterling, John, his Classical Attainments, i. 215; unusual likeness between his speech and letters, 281; pulpit manner of reading, 303; worth as a Writer, 311, 323, 391; superior excellence in prose, 342; the *Election*, a Poem, 349; undeniable success, 359; *Cœur-de-Lion*, 385; literary remains, 398.
—— his Character need not be judged in any Church-court, i. 192; a Guy-Faux likeness, 194; lucky to have had such parents as his, 200; nomadic tendencies, 210; a headlong Boy of twelve, 212; a voracious reader and observer, 214; gifts, generosities, and pieties, 215; a young ardent soul, 218; a kingly kind of man, 219; nomadic desultory ways, 221; able to argue with four or five at once, 222; a brother to all worthy souls, 225; not given to lie down and indolently moan, 247; rich in the power to be miserable or otherwise, 259; the talent of waiting, of all others, the one he wanted most, 264; generous ardour for whatever seemed noble and true, 267; bright ingenuity and audacity, 273; candour and transparency, 281; cheery swift decision, 282; not intrinsically a devotional mind, 287; too vehement, fatally incapable of sitting still, 310; a certain grimmer shade came gradually over him, 312; beautiful and pathetic adjustment to his hard conditions, 334; a strange effulgence through the ice of earnest pain and sorrow, 380, 387; a central inflexibility and noble silent resolution, 385; perfect courage, and valiant simplicity of heart, 391; serene, victorious, divinely sad, 391; spiritual portraiture, 395.
—— his Personal aspect, i. 272, 288, 394; his Life an expressive emblem of his Time, 195, 271, 398, 399.
—— Mrs., her beautiful character and early troubles, i. 248; a perilous situation, 252; her weakly constitution, 331, 347; illness, 382; sudden death, 382; an affectionate loyal-hearted Wife, 383.
Sterling's Father, early career of, i. 198; his restless striving, 207; connexion with the *Times* Newspaper, 208, 215; a private gentleman of some figure, 269; the Magus of the *Times*, 273; abundant jolly satire, 302; his house a sunny islet, and ever-open port for Sterling, 373; the *Times* Newspaper his express emblem, 375; England listened to the voice, 375; Note of thanks from Sir Robert Peel, 376; loyal admiration for Peel and Wellington, and ditto contempt for O'Connell, 377; pleasant half-bantering dialect between Father and Son, 379; a fatal eclipse, 379; alone in the world, 382; closing days, 386.
—— Mother, delicate pious character of, i. 200; affectionate care for him, 210; troubled days, 213; friendship for Madame Torrijos, 241; for Mrs. Carlyle, 273; a pleasant home, 379; fatal illness, 379; Sterling's reverent affection for her, 380, 383; news of her death, 382.
Sterne, ii. 13.
Steward, Sir Thomas, Kt., death of, x. 73.
Stewart, Dugald, ii. 60; his opinion of Burns, 209; of Idealism, iii. 74.
—— of Allertoun, xi. 271, 272.
—— of Blantyre, duel with Lord Wharton, x. 302.
Stilling's, Jung, experience of Goethe, iv. 139.
Stockings, anecdotes of, x. 33.
Stofflet of La Vendée, viii. 358.
Stonyhurst, Cromwell at, x. 281.
Storie, Mr., notice of, x. 71; Cromwell's letter to, 70.
Strachey, Mrs. Edward, i. 334, 337.
Strafford, passages in the impeachment and trial of, v. 239; subscribes 20,000*l.* to the King, x. 83; in the Tower, 87; trial, execution, and character, 93, 94.
Strafford, Sterling's tragedy of, i. 349, 372, 385.
Strahan, Major, notice of, x. 314; in Scots Army, xi. 164, 165, 174, 221; at Glasgow, 218; Remonstrance by, 224, 225, 229; Cromwell's letter to, 225; joins Cromwell, 232; is excommunicated, 268.
Strasburg, riot at, in 1789, vii. 179; St. Just, shoes and beds, viii. 307.
Strauss, i. 336, 354, 363.
Strength: see Silence, Wisdom.
Stricker, the, an early German writer, iii. 273.
Strickland, Walter, of Council of State, xii. 5 n., 17, 199.
Strode, William, imprisoned, x. 52.
St. Stephen's, the new, xiii. 270.
Stuart, Mary, iv. 64.
Stump-Orator, xiii. 158-189; a mouthpiece of Chaos, 161, 178, 184; Supreme Stump-Orators in the Lawyer department, 242.
Stupidity, blessings of, vi. 99; our one enemy, xiii. 101, 108, 113.
Style, every man his own, ii. 15; pictorial power, iv. 45; eccentricities of, 117; vi. 43.
Subscription, Irish act of, xi. 116 n.
Suffolk, Earl, sent to Charles I., x. 208.
—— Cromwell's letters to Deputy Lieutenants of, x. 106, 171.
Suffrage, ix. 55; Universal Suffrage, xiii. 54, 211; recipe of popular election, 227; answer to Jefferson Brick, 230; universal suffrage equivalent to flat despair, 235.
Suffren, Admiral, notice of, vii. 37.
Sugar, why scarce, viii. 57; the remedy, 58.
Suicide, vi. 102.
Suir river, castles on, xi. 126.
Sulleau, Royalist editor, viii. 66; massacred, 113.
Summons, Parliamentary, xi. 333.
Sumptuary Laws, ix. 239.
Sun, eclipse of, in 1652, xi. 316.
Sunset, vi. 56, 94.
Supper, Fraternal, viii. 245.
Supply and demand, our grand maxim of, ii. 195; ix. 215; brought to bear on the Black 'labour-market,' xiii. 4.
Surnames, Hénault on, vii. 1.
Surrey petition and riot, x. 278.
Suspect, Law of the, viii. 274; Chaumette jeered on, 320.
Suspicion, in France, 1788, vii. 99; in Revolution, viii. 246.
Sutton's Hospital: see Charter-House.

Swabian Era, the, iii. 264; birth of German Literature, 265, 317.
Swallows, migrations and coöperative instincts of, vi. 58.
Swashbuckler age, v. 321.
Sweden, King of, to assist Marie Antoinette, viii. 8; shot by Ankarström, 64; Whitlocke concludes treaty with, xii. 8; Swedish Ambassador, audience of, 115, 116; takes leave, 157.
Swedenborgians in questionable company, iv. 259.
Swift, ii. 13.
Swineherd, the, vi. 57.
Swinton, Laird, joins Cromwell, xi. 233; in Little Parliament, 335; in Cromwell's First Parliament, xii. 17.
Swiss (see Guards), at Brest, liberated, feasted, viii. 80-82; prisoners at La Force, 148.
Sydenham, Col., in Council of State, xii. 5 n., 102.
Syler, Col., at Inverkeithing fight, xi. 278.
Symbols of the Godlike, worn out, iv. 23; wondrous agency of, vi. 133; extrinsic, and intrinsic, 136; superannuated, 138, 142.
Symonds, Mr., engraver, xi. 252-255.
Synott, Col.: see Sinnott.

Taaff, Father, killed, xi. 54.
—— Lucas, Governor of Ross, Cromwell's letters to, xi. 72, 73, 74, 75.
—— Lord, his intrigues, xii. 176, 177 n.
Tailors, symbolic significance of, vi. 176; ix. 238.
Tale, The, translated from Goethe; with elucidations, iv. 324-349.
Talk, Coleridge's, i. 232.
Talleyrand-Perigord, Bishop, notice of, vii. 115; at fatherland's altar, his blessing, 277; excommunicated, viii. 6; in London, 42; to America, 213.
Tallien, notice of, vii. 242; editor of 'Ami des Citoyens,' viii. 66; in Committee of Townhall (August 1792), 132; in National Convention, 164; at Bourdeaux, 280; and Madame Cabarus, 292; recalled, suspect, 339; accuses Robespierre, 342; Thermidorian, 352.
Talma, actor, his soirée (Marat and Dumouriez), viii. 176.
Tamerlane, iii. 3.
Tannery of human skins, viii. 317.
Tanning, improvements in, viii. 314.
Tardivet: see Repaire.
Target, Advocate, declines King's defence, viii. 199.
Tassin, M., and black cockade, vii. 195.
Taste, true poetic, not dependent on riches, ii. 30; German authors, 35; gift of Poetry presupposes taste, iii. 234; dilettante upholstery, iv. 142.
Tate, Zouch, M.P., introduces Self-denying Ordinance, x. 162.
Tauler, Johann, iii. 290.
Tax, ascending, viii. 237.
Taxation, spigot of, iii. 174; iv. 63; where to lay the new Taxes, ix. 262.
Taylor's Historic Survey of German Poetry, iii. 309-337.
Tears, beautifullest kind of, ix. 113.
Telegraph invented, viii. 314.
Teme river, near Worcester, xi. 291.
Tempest, Sir Richard, Royalist, in Lancashire, x. 273.
Temple: see Prison.
Temptations in the wilderness, vi. 112.
Tennis-Court, National Assembly in, vii. 127; Club of, and procession to, 267; master of, rewarded, viii. 40.
Terray, Abbé, dissolute financier, vii. 5.
Terror, consummation of, viii. 283; reign of, designated, 285; number guillotined in, 367.
Teufelsdröckh's Philosophy of Clothes, vi. 4; he proposes a toast, 8; his personal aspect, and silent deepseated Sansculottism, 9; thawed into speech, 11; memorable watch-tower utterances, 12; alone with the Stars, 13; extremely miscellaneous environment, 14; plainness of speech, 17; universal learning, and multiplex literary style, 18; ambiguous-looking morality, 19; one instance of laughter, 19; almost total want of arrangement, 20; feeling of the ludicrous, 29; speculative Radicalism, 38; a singular Character, 44; Genesis properly an Exodus, 49; unprecedented name, 52; infantine experience, 53; Pedagogy, 61; an almost Hindoo passivity, 62; school-boy jostling, 63; heterogeneous University-Life, 66; fever-paroxysms of Doubt, 70; first practical knowledge of the English, 71; getting under way, 73; ill success, 76; glimpse of high-life, 77; casts himself on the Universe, 81; reverent feeling towards women, 83; frantically in love, 84; first interview with Blumine, 86; inspired moments, 87; short of practical kitchen-stuff, 89; ideal bliss, and actual catastrophe, 90; sorrows, and peripatetic stoicism, 91; a parting glimpse of his Beloved, on her way to England, 94; how he overran the whole earth, 95; Doubt darkened into Unbelief, 98; love of Truth, 100; a feeble unit, amidst a threatening Infinitude, 101; Baphometic Fire-baptism, 103; placid indifference, 104; a Hyperborean intruder, 110; Nothingness of life, 111; Temptations in the Wilderness, 112; dawning of a better day, 114; the Ideal in the Actual, 119; finds his true Calling, 121; his Biography a symbolic Adumbration, significant to those who can decipher it, 123; a wonder lover, seeker, and worker, 128; in Monmouth-Street among the Hebrews, 148; concluding hints, 179; his public History not yet done, perhaps the better part only beginning, 182; Teufelsdröckh on the Greatness of Great Men, iv. 115; on Democracy, ix. 238.
Théatins Church, granted to Dissidents, viii. 3.
Theatre, German estimation of the, i. 38; Theatrical Reports a vapid nuisance, ii. 270.
Theauro John, a kind of Quaker, xii. 63.
Theocracy, a, striven for by all true Reformers, vi. 299, 354.
Theological Metaphysics, Sterling's interest in, i. 288, 291; decidedly abating, 298.
Theory, the Man of, ix. 194.
Théot, Prophetess, on Robespierre, viii. 334, 338.
Thermidor, Ninth and Tenth (July 27, 28, 1794), viii. 342-348.

Théroigne, Mlle., notice of, vii. 106; in Insurrection of Women, 199; at Versailles (October 5th), 206; in Austrian prison, viii. 29; in Jacobin tribune, 76; accoutred for insurrection (August Tenth), 109, 113; keeps her carriage, 229; fustigated, insane, 245.
Thersites, ix. 293.
Thierry, M., ix. 44.
Thinkers, how few are, v. 2; intellectual thrift, 200.
Thinking Man, a, worst enemy of the Prince of Darkness, vi. 73, 121; true Thought can never die, 151.
Thionville besieged, viii. 136; siege raised, 170.
Thirty-nine Articles, ix. 245.
Thomond, Earl: see O'Brien.
Thompson, Capt., Leveller, xi. 27; shot, 28.
—— Cornet, Leveller, xi. 27; shot, 28.
Thor, and his adventures, vi. 198, 210, 211, 212; his last appearance, 214.
Thornhaugh, Major, slain at Preston, x. 286, 292.
Thought, how, rules the world, iii. 1; iv. 107; v. 38, 46; miraculous influence of, vi. 200, 206, 308; *musical* Thought, 247.
Thouret, Law-reformer, vii. 233; dissolves Assembly, viii. 41; guillotined, 329.
Thouvenot and Dumouriez, viii. 142.
Thrift, value of, ix. 10.
Thunder: see Thor.
Thuriot: see Rosière.
Thurloe, Secretary to Cromwell, xii. 5; Cromwell's letter to, 113; and Cromwell on Kingship, 240.
Tieck, Ludwig; his *Volksmährchen* and other writings, ii. 316; character and poetic gifts, 319; his *Fair-haired Eckbert*, xiv. 145; *Trusty Eckart*, 160; *Runenberg*, 185; *Elves*, 204; *Goblet*, 221.
Tillinghurst, Rev. Mr., and Cromwell, xii. 109, 110.
Time and Space, quiddities not entities, ii. 126; iii. 76; the outer veil of Eternity, iv. 61, 169; vi. 190. See Space.
Time-Spirit, life-battle with the, vi. 53, 79; Time, the universal wonder-hider, 161.
Times, Signs of the, iii. 98-118.
—— Newspaper, xiii. 195. See Sterling's Father.
Tinville, Fouquier, revolutionist, vii. 243; Jacobin, 252; Attorney-General in Tribunal Révolutionnaire, viii. 235; at trial of Queen, 276; at trial of Girondins, 278; brutal, at trial of Mme. Roland, 289; at trial of Danton, 326, 327; and Salut Public, 327; his prison-plots, 329, 337; his batches, 335; the prisons under, mock doom of, 336-338; at trial of Robespierre, 347; accused, guillotined, 362.
Tipperary county fined, xi. 123.
Titchborne, Alderman, of Customs Committee, xi. 365.
Tithes, titles, &c. abolished, vii. 171, 268.
Titles of Honour, vi. 152.
Titus, Capt., 50*l.* voted to, x. 226; with Charles I., 260; Killing no Murder, xii. 210 n.
Today, ii. 356; the conflux of two Eternities, iii. 100.
Tolerance, iii. 8, 55; iv. 266; true and false, vi. 288, 297.
Tollendal, Lally, pleads for father, vii. 68; in States-General, 114; popular, crowned, 157.
Tongue-fence, Sterling's skill in, i. 222, 286.
Tongue, watch well thy, iv. 66; v. 263; miraculous gift of, iv. 183; v. 179; human talent all gone to, xiii. 158, 169, 173; how to cure the evil, 165, 186. See Eloquence.
Tonnage and Poundage disputed, x. 49.
Tools, influence of, vi. 24; the Pen, most miraculous of tools, 121; Tools and the Man, ix. 265, 266.
Toope, and Sindercomb, xii. 205.
Torné, Bishop, and Costumes, viii. 71.
Torrijos, General, the main-stay of his fellow Exiles, i. 240, 241; they leave England, 246; difficulties at Gibraltar, 247; a catastrophe, 256; death, 258.
Toryism an overgrown Imposture, i. 299; the Pope a respectable old Tory, 321; English Toryism not so bad as Irish, 364.
Toulon, Girondin, viii. 268; occupied by English, 271; besieged, 295; surrenders, 296.
Toulongeon, Marquis, notice of, vii. 233; on Barnave triumvirate, viii. 32; describes Jacobins Hall, 75.
Tournay, Louis, at siege of Bastille, vii. 149.
Tourzel, Dame de (see Korff, Baroness de), escapes, viii. 139.
Trade, Committee of, xii. 136.
Tragedy, Sterling's high notions of, i. 354.
Treasury, Commissioners of, xii. 102; state of the, in 1656, 189.
Treaties, Cromwell's, xii. 8, 115, 124.
Treaty, Ripon, x. 84; at Oxford, 111, 119; Uxbridge, 150; with the King, 206, 213, 224, 242, 322.
Tredah, garrison of, xi. 47; stormed, 49, 50, 56; list of officers slain at, 58.
Trenck, Baron, in Paris, vii. 244.
Trevor, Col., and Venables, xi. 84 n.; iii. 134.
Tribunal, Extraordinaire, viii. 235; Révolutionnaire, doings of, 275; extended, 335.
Tricolor cockade, vii. 141.
Triers of preachers, xii. 6, 104, 183.
Triller, der, v. 345, 346, 363.
Trimberg, Hugo von, iii. 274, 284; his *Renner* a singular clear-hearted old book, 276.
Trimmers and truckers, iv. 23; v. 66.
Tronchet, Advocate, defends King, viii. 199, 206.
Troopers, three, present Army-letter, x. 223, 224.
Troubadour period of Literature, iii. 265, 271.
Truthfulness, iii. 22; iv. 184; v. 334; Truth and Falsehood, vii. 166; individual Truth the beginning of social good, ix. 18. See Sincerity.
Tuileries, Louis XVI. lodged at, vii. 230; a tile-field, 232; escape from Varennes, viii. 9-12; Twentieth June at, 87; tickets of entry, 'Coblentz,' 103; Marseillese chase Filles-Saint-Thomas to, 106; August Tenth, 109, 115; King quits forever, 116; attacked, 117; captured, 119; occupied by National Convention, 243.
Tulchan Bishops, account of, x. 33.
Tunis, Dey of, brought to reason, xii. 105.
Turenne, vi. 244.

Turgot, Controller of France, vii. 25; on Corn-law, 28; dismissed, 34; death of, 69.
Turner, Rev. Mr., Cromwell's opinion of, xii. 14.
—— Sir James, narrative by, x. 279; wounded by his own men, 286, 288; prisoner, 298.
Tweedale, Earl of, on Committee of Kingship, xii. 221.
Twistleton, Col., at Dunbar, xi. 191.
Two-Hundred-and-Fifty Years ago: a Fragment about Duels, v. 315-324; Holles of Haughton, 316; Croydon Races, 318; Sir Thomas Dutton and Sir Hatton Cheek, 321.
Tyll Eulenspiegel, adventures of, iii. 287.
Tyrants, French People risen against, viii. 273, 308.

Ulster pikes, xi. 93.
Unanimity in folly, ix. 182.
Unbelief, era of, vi. 69, 100; Doubt darkening into, 98; escape from, 113.
Unconsciousness the first condition of health, iv. 1, 13; the fathomless domain of, 232; the Unconscious, the alone complete, ix. 160.
Underwood, Captain, Cromwell's letter to, xii. 396.
Unhappy sugary brethren, xiii. 78; happiness not come, 281.
Uniformity in religion, x. 85, 216.
United States assert Liberty, vii. 7; embassy to Louis XVI., 36; aided by France, 36; of Congress in, 174.
Universe, general High Court of the, ix. 78, 90, 211; a great unintelligible 'Perhaps,' 177; *become* the Humbug it was thought to be, 189; a beggarly Universe, 216; the Universe made by Law, 248; a Monarchy and Hierarchy, xiii. 45; the vesture of an Invisible Infinite, 237, 251; M'Croudy's notion of, 241; all things to all men, 279; 'open secret' of, 280. See Laws.
Universities, the English, i. 216.
—— of Prague and of Vienna, iii. 295; disputed seniority of Oxford and Cambridge, v. 312.
University Education, vi. 67, 305.
Untamability, v. 23, 48.
Unveracity, v. 329, 334. See Sincerity.
Unwisdom, infallible fruits of, ix. 95.
Unseen, the, ix. 230.
Urrey, Col.: see Hurry.
Ushant, sea-fight, vii. 37.
Utilitarianism, ii. 42, 62, 163; iii. 51, 111, 208, 329; iv. 31; vi. 99, 143; Bentham's utilitarian funeral, iv. 126.
Uttoxeter, capture of Scots at, x. 288.

Vacuum, and the serene Blue, ix. 216.
Valadi, Marquis, notice of, vii. 106; Gardes Françaises and, 135; guillotined, viii. 281.
Valazé, Girondin, viii. 45; on trial of Louis, 191; plots at his house, 247; trial of, 278; stabs himself, 279.
Valenciennes, besieged, viii. 254; surrendered, 265.
Valet, the, theory of Heroes, iii. 184.
Valets and Heroes, iii. 184; ix. 90, 135, 186, 242, 298; London valets dismissed annually to the streets, 287. See Flunkies.
Valmy, action at, viii. 169.
Valour, the basis of all virtue, vi. 208, 210; Norse Consecration of, 215; Christian Valour, 274.
Vampire-bats, Ecclesiastic, v. 255.
Van Druske, Gen., taken, x. 292.
Vane, Sir Henry, jun., of Committee of Both Kingdoms, x. 165; of Council of State, xi. 2; character of, 306; a juggler, 331; a rejected M.P. candidate, xii. 154.
—— Sir Henry, sen., in Cromwell's First Parliament, xii. 17.
Varenne, Maton de la, Advocate, his experiences in September, viii. 138.
Varennes, described, Louis near, viii. 23-26 (see Sausse); Prussians occupy, 141.
Varigny, Bodyguard, massacred (Oct. Fifth), viii. 217.
Varlet, 'Apostle of Liberty,' viii. 202, 218, 231; arrested, 247.
Varney, Sir Ralph, his Notes, x. 85.
—— Sir Edmund, in Tredah, xi. 49, 50.
Varnhagen von Ense: see Ense.
Vates and Seer, the true Poet a, iv. 107; v. 158, 325.
Vaticination, iii. 98.
Venables, Col., at Derry, xi. 57, 83, 85; made General, sails with the Fleet, xii. 65; sent to the Tower, 117, 122-124.
Vendée, La, Commissioners to, viii. 56; state of, in 1792, 68; insurrection in, 135; war, after King's death, 230, 270; on fire, 292; pacificated, 357.
Vendémiaire, Thirteenth (Oct. 4), 1795, viii. 372-374.
Vengeur, on the Sinking of the, v. 209-222; viii. 313.
Venner, Cooper, rising by, xii. 228, 229.
Veracity the one sanctity of life, i. 271; small still voices, 298; clear and perfect fidelity to Truth, 396. See Unveracity.
Verbs, Irregular, National Assembly at, vii. 168.
Verdun, to be besieged, viii. 136, 141; surrendered, 141.
Vere family, Fairfax's wife of the, xi. 156.
Vergennes, M. de, Prime Minister, vii. 50; death of, 58.
Vergniaud, notice of, viii. 45; too languid, 73; during August Tenth, 89; orations of, 129; President, at King's condemnation, 265; in fall of Girondins, 248; trial of, 278; at last supper of Girondins, 280.
Vermond, Abbé de, Queen's reader, vii. 59.
Vermuyden, Col., notice of, x. 170.
Versailles, death of Louis XV. at, vii. 4, 21; Tennis-Court, 128; in Bastille time, National Assembly at, 144, 156; troops to, 191; march of women on, 198; of French Guards on, 202; halt of women near, 208; insurrection scene at, 205; the Château forced, 216; Orleans prisoners massacred at, viii. 161.
Veto, question of the, vii. 188; viii. 70, 85; eluded, 94.
Vetus, Letters of, i. 208.
Viard, Spy, Mme. Roland and, viii. 202.
Vicars's relation of Winceby fight, x. 142.
View-hunting and diseased Self-consciousness, iv. 18; vi. 94.
Vilate, Juryman, guillotined, viii. 362; book by, 362.

Villaret-Joyeuse, Admiral, beaten by Howe, viii. 312.
Villaumes, milliners, their patriotic gift, viii. 135.
Villemain, M., criticised, x. 178.
Villequier, Duke de, emigrates, vii. 331.
Vincennes, Castle, to be repaired, vii. 327; riot at, 328; saved by Lafayette, 330.
Vincent, St., Island of, Sterling's residence in the, i. 249.
—— of War-Office, viii. 304; arrested, 320; guillotined, 323.
Virgil's *Æneid*, iv. 41.
Virginia and Maryland, differences between, xii. 65.
Virtue, healthy and unhealthy, iv. 6; synonyme of Pleasure, 235; raw materials of, xiii. 77.
Volney, Jean Jacques and Company, v. 267.
Voltaire, ii. 152, 163; iii. 1-56; Voltaire and Goethe contrasted, ii. 188, 190; the man of his century, iii. 5; adroitness and multifarious success, 9; rectitude, 12; essentially a Mocker, 13; petty explosiveness, 15; vanity his ruling passion, 18; visit to the Café de Procope, 19; lax morality, 21; the greatest of *Persifleurs*, 23; visit to Frederick the Great, 25; his trouble with his women, 26; his last triumphal visit to Paris, 31; iv. 117; death of, iii. 36; his intellectual gifts, 38; criticisms of Shakspeare, 43; opposition to Christianity, 46; of all Frenchmen the most French, iv. 211; his task finished, vi. 118; the Parisian Divinity, 154, 194; vii. 34; burial-place of, 339.
Volto Santo, the, chief of Relics, i. 320.
Voluntary principle, x. 216.
Voting, foolish unanimity of, xiii. 40; large liberty of 'voting' in God's Universe, but under conditions inexorable, 45, 182, 205, 207, 235, what to do with the 'fool's vote,' 208, 212, 266; the 'votes' of all men worth knowing, 209; the horse's 'vote,' 213; the slave's, 217; the man worth taking the vote of, 218.
Vowel's plot, xii. 12, 15.
Vyner, Sir Thomas, Lord Mayor of London, Cromwell's letter to, xii. 14.

Wages no index of well-being, ix. 22; fair day's-wages for fair day's-work, 85, 228.
Wagram, Napoleon at, v. 193.
Wagstaff, Sir Joseph, in arms, xii. 99, 171. See Penruddock.
Wakefield, Lord Fairfax at, x. 120.
Waldenses, notice of the, xii. 103.
Wales, tumults in, x. 267.
—— Prince of, Fleet revolts to, x. 278; at Yarmouth, 278.
Walker, Clement, M.P., described, x. 252; purged by Pride, 347.
Wallace, Scotland's debt to, ix. 80.
—— Mr., his house in Edinburgh, xi. 241.
Wallenstein, Schiller's brief sketch of, i. 101; scene of Max Piccolomini and his Father, 108; of Max and the Princess Thekla, 111; of Thekla's last resolve. 113.
Waller, Sir Hardress, at Bristol siege, x. 185; wounded at Basing, 192.
—— Poet, his plot, x. 127.
Waller, Sir William, in high repute, x. 120; beaten at Lansdown heath, 131; his army deserts, 158; is Presbyterian, 222; deputed to Army, 223; purged by Pride, 347.
Wallop, Robert, M.P., notice of, xi. 60 n.; in Cromwell's First Parliament, xii. 17.
Walpole, Horace, ix. 40; xi. 3.
Walton, Col., Cromwell's letters to, x. 152, 156; account of, 154; at trial of King, 349.
—— Dr., Cromwell's letter to, xii. 431.
Walwyn, William, Leveller, xi. 18.
War, vi. 106; Civil War, manual and lingual, vii. 239; French, becomes general, 301. See Girondins, Army, Battle.
—— the Thirty-Years, x. 56; with Scots, 82; the Bishops', 83; Civil, commenced, 90; exciting cause of, 92; in 1643, 110; Second Civil, 267. See Dutch, Spain, Welsh.
Warrington, Scots surrender at, x. 287, 293.
Warriston: see Johnston, Archibald.
Wartburg, and its immortal remembrances and monitions, v. 348.
Warwick, Sir Philip, his opinion of Cromwell, x. 78, 88.
—— Earl, notice of, xii. 149; at Installation, 306; one of Cromwell's Lords, 318; letter to Cromwell, 366.
Washing, symbolic influences of, ix. 251.
Washington, key of Bastille sent to, vii. 163; formula for Lafayette, 114; viii. 124.
Watch and Canary Bird, Mrs. Carlyle's, i. 306.
Waterford, besieged, xi. 88; Cromwell's correspondence at, *App.* 411-413.
Waterhouse, John, recommended by Cromwell, xi. 259.
Watigny, Battle of, viii. 311.
Watt, James, i. 343; ix. 52.
—— Mosstrooper, xi. 227.
Waugh, Rev. John, at Dunbar battle, xi. 186; description of, 249, 250.
Wealth, true, ix. 289, 299.
Weber, Queen's foster-brother, in Insurrection of Women, vii. 215, 224; in National Guard, viii. 83; Queen leaving Vienna, 277.
Weimar and its intellectual wealth, iv. 145; Duke of, i. 119; v. 360; ix. 291.
—— Bernhard of, in Thirty-Years War, v. 360; x. 56.
Weiss, Theresa: see Heyne.
Weissembourg, lines of, viii. 311.
Welden, Col., at Bristol siege, x. 183.
Wells, Rev. Mr., notice of, x. 72.
Welser, Philippine, iii. 295.
Welsh Villages, i. 203.
—— War, x. 267, and xii. 402; ended, x. 278.
Wentworth, Sir John, fined 10000*l.*, x. 109.
—— Sir Peter, in the Rump, xi. 329.
Werner, Life and Writings of, ii. 66-110; his drama of the *Söhne des Thals*, 71; glimpses of hidden meaning, 86; prophetic aspirations, 88; his mother's death, 91; intercourse with Hoffmann, 92; *Kreuz an der Ostsee*, 93; *Martin Luther, oder die Weihe der Kraft*, 95; his repeated divorces, 99; dislike for modern Protestantism, 100; becomes a Catholic, 102; death, 103; questionable character, 104; a melancholy posthumous fragment, 106.
West, Col., at Inverkeithing fight, xi 278.

Westermann, in August Tenth, viii. 115; purged out of the Jacobins, 321; tried, guillotined, 326.
West-Indian Tornado, i. 250.
—— Colonies, our, sinking into ruin, xiii. 2; whose the 'proprietorship' of them, 20, 22.
Westminster Hall, riots in, x. 96, 273.
Weston, Henry, Cromwell's letter to, xi. 366.
Westrow, Tom, notice of, xi. 288, 289.
Wettin Line of Saxon Princes, v. 338.
Wexford besieged, xi. 60; propositions for surrender of, 66; stormed, 69.
Whalley, Capt., at Cambridge, x. 105; Major, commended, 124, 125; meets the King, 226; guards the King, 242; at trial of King, 349; Commissary-General in Scots War, xi. 159; skirmishes with the Scots, 163, 164; wounded at Dunbar, 192; his letter to Governor Dundas, 204; in Fife, 284; at Conference at Speaker's, 311-313; removes the Mace, xii. 38; Major-General, 120 n.; on Committee of Kingship, 221; in favour of Kingship, 301; one of Cromwell's Lords, 318.
Wharton, Duke, character of, x. 305.
—— Manor house, x. 302.
—— Lord, a Puritan, x. 165, 247; his character, 302; xi. 96; Cromwell's letters to, x. 303; xi. 96, 202, 289; xii. 430.
Whiggamore raid, x. 299, 307.
Whitaker, Historian, mistake by, x. 28 n.
White, Major, at Dunbar, xi. 191.
—— of Selborne, iv. 47.
Whitehall, Cromwell removes to, xii. 8.
Whitlocke, Bulstrode, of Council of State, xi. 2; Cromwell's present to, 297; at Conference at Speaker's, 311-313; Cromwell consults with, 323; goes to Sweden, xii. 8 (and *App.* 433); in Cromwell's First Parliament, 17; his quarrel with Cromwell, 102; in Cromwell's Second Parliament, 197; on Committee of Kingship, 221, 228; and Cromwell on Kingship, 240; at Installation, 306; one of Cromwell's Lords, 318; Cromwell's letter to, 433.
Whole, only in the, can the Parts be truly seen, iii. 173.
Wholeness, and healthy unconsciousness, iv. 2, 12, 112, 236, 248.
Widdrington, Sir Thomas, at Conference at Speaker's, xi. 311-313; Keeper of Great Seal, xii. 102; elected Speaker, 206; at Installation, 305.
Wieland, ii. 35.
Wigan Moor, Scots Army at, x. 285.
Wight, Charles I. at Isle of, x. 245, 247.
Wilde, Chief Baron, notice of, xii. 438; Cromwell's letter to, 439.
Wildman, Mr., in Cromwell's First Parliament, xii. 17; opposed to Cromwell, 61; seized plotting, is put in Chepstow Castle, 98.
Wilhelm of Meissen, v. 339.
Wilhelm Tell, Schiller's, truthfulness of, i. 135; scene of the death of Gessler, 138.
Willelmus Conquestor, ix. 121, 220; a man of most flashing discernment and strong lion-heart, 236; not a vulturous Fighter, but a valorous Governor, 260; his Home Office, xiii. 106.
—— Sacrista, ix. 116, 123, 127, 133, 142.
William, Dutch, xiii. 138.
William Rufus, ix. 260, 263; the quarrel of Rufus and Anselm, a great quarrel, 264; Rufus and his Parliaments, xiii. 191.
Williams, Archbishop of York, x. 96; notice of, 234; in Wales, 235; Cromwell's letter to, 236.
—— Sir Trevor, to be taken, x. 270, 271.
Willingham, Mr., Cromwell's letter to, x. 85.
Willis, Sir Richard, notice of, xii. 15; spy, 340.
Willoughby of Parham, Lord, at Gainsborough, x. 122; letter to Cromwell, 128; complained of, 146.
Wilmot, Earl Rochester, escapes, xii. 100, 171.
Wilson's, Professor, generous encouragement of Sterling, i. 308.
Wimpfen, Girondin General, viii. 254, 261.
Winceby: see Battle.
Winchester, Marquis of, taken at Basing, x. 192, 196.
—— Cromwell's summons to, xii. 399; taken, x. 190.
Windbag, Sir Jabesh, ix. 174, 242.
Windebank, Secretary, flies, x. 87.
—— Col., shot, x. 167.
Windsor, Parliament Army at, x. 110.
—— Castle, Army-council at, x. 263.
Winkelmann, Johann, ii. 265.
Winram, Laird, and Charles II., xi. 71, 95.
Winstanley, Leveller, xi. 23.
Winwood, M.P. for Windsor, xi. 297.
Wisdom, one man with, stronger than all men without, iii. 112, 336; iv. 107; the beginning of, vi. 40; how Wisdom has to struggle with Folly, ix. 127, 128, 130, 172, 235; the higher the Wisdom the closer its kindred with Insanity, 230; a *wisest path* for every man, 240; the Wise and Brave properly but one class, 259, 261, 302; the life of the Gifted not a May-game, but a battle and stern pilgrimage, 296; Wisdom alone can recognise wisdom, xiii. 113, 117, 135; intrinsically of silent nature, 176.
Wise man, the, alone strong, ix. 25, 35; at the top of society, xiii. 11, 224; he and not a counterfeit, under penalties, 45, 234. See Man.
Wish, the Norse god, vi. 198; enlarged into a heaven by Mahomet, 242.
Wither, Poet, notice of, xi. 289.
Wits, fashionable, ix. 188.
Wogan, Col., his maraudings, xi. 93, 94; xii. 414.
Wolf, v. 169.
Wolseley, Sir Charles, in Council of State, xii. 5 n.; on Committee of Kingship, 237, 240. See Worseley.
Woman's influence, vi. 83.
Women born worshipers, iv. 121; ix. 113.
—— patriotic gifts by, vii. 188; revolutionary speeches by, 194; Insurrection of, 197; at Hôtel-de-Ville, 197; march to Versailles, 198 (see Maillard, Versailles); deputation of, to Assembly, 204; to King, 205, 207; corrupt the Guards, 206; would hang their deputy, 207; in fight, at Versailles, 216; selling sugar, cry of soap, viii. 217; 'Mégæras,' 245; Hérault and Heroines, 266.
Wonder the basis of Worship, vi. 40; region of, 165.

Worcester, Battle of, picture of the, v. 334.
Worcester, Marquis, his lands given to Cromwell, x. 251; author of Century of Inventions, 252; xi. 266.
—— Charles II. at, xi. 288,—see Battle; state of, after battle, 296; xii. 424.
Words, slavery to, vi. 32; Word-mongering and Motive-grinding, 99.
Wordsworth, i. 136, 302.
Work, man's little, lies not isolated, stranded, v. 11; how it clutches hold of this solid-seeming world, 46; Work the mission of man, ix. 14; world-wide accumulated work, 173; endless hope in work, 185, 223; all work noble, 190; and eternal, 192; the work he has done, an epitome of the Man, 194, 224; work is worship, 226, 251; all work a making of Madness sane, 230; work for all men, xiii. 61, 63; a Human *Doer* the most complex and inarticulate of Nature's Facts, 175; desirability of work, 225. See Labour.
Workhouses, in which no work can be done, ix. 72.
Working classes uneducated, and educated Unworking, iv. 162; ominous condition of the working classes, ix. 3, 26; perfect understanding, equivalent to remedy, 6; statistics hitherto of little avail, 8; what constitutes the well-being of a man, 9, 15, 22; the poor man seeking *work*, and unable to find it, 16; the best-paid workman, the loudest in complaint, 21; need of Government, 31.
—— Aristocracy, ix. 205, 209, 282, 302; getting strangled, 212.
—— Man, true education of the, xiii. 162.
Workmen, English, unable to find work, ix. 72, 84; intolerable lot, 234.
Workshop of Life, vi. 121. See Labour.
Worms, the venerable City of, iii. 249; Luther at, vi. 285.
Worseley, Col., a Major-General, xii. 120n.
Worship, transcendent wonder, vi. 191; forms of, ix. 171; Scenic Theory of, 179; Apelike, 189; the truest, 226, 251; practical worship, 222; many phases of worship, xiii. 236, 254, 273. See Hero-worship, Religion.
Worth, human, and Worthlessness, ix. 135; practical reverence for human worth, xiii. 85; the essence of all true 'religions,' 108, 113. See Intellect, Pandarus.
Wrath, a background of, in every man and creature, v. 315.
Wray, Sir John, notice of, xii. 389; Cromwell's letter to, 390.
Wretchedness, ii. 234; iv. 22.
Wrong: see Right.
Würtemberg, the Duke of, employs Schiller's Father, i. 5; undertakes the education of Schiller, 9; not equal to the task, 21, 178.
Wyatt, Sir Dudley, notice of, x. 245, 246.

XENIEN, the, a German Dunciad by Goethe and Schiller, i. 96.

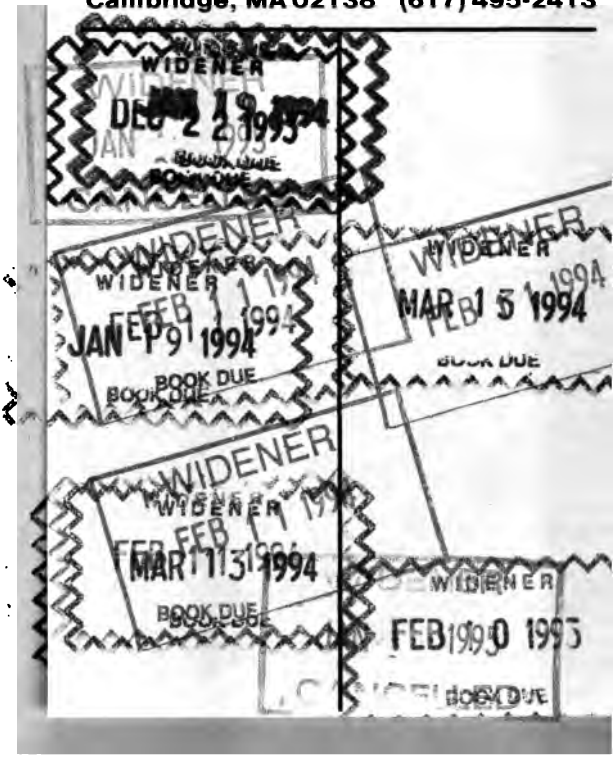
YANKEE Transcendentalists, ix. 300.
Year's Day, New, difference of style, x. 28 n.
Yorke, Hon. Mr., papers burned, x. 247.
York City relieved by Prince Rupert, x. 151; captured by Parliament Army, 154.
—— Duke of, escapes, x. 215; at Dunkirk, xii. 314.
—— House, meeting at, xii. 347.
Yorkshire, the Civil War in, x. 110.
Young, Arthur, at French Revolution, vii. 174-180.
—— Men and Maidens, vi. 78, 82.
Youth and Manhood, ii. 220; mud-bath of youthful dissipations, 222. See Education.

ZANCHY, Colonel, relieves Passage, xi. 93; wounded, 126.
Zemzem, the sacred Well, vi. 222.
Zero, the Right Honourable, xiii. 104.

THE END.

LONDON:
PRINTED BY LEVEY, ROBSON, AND FRANKLYN,
Great New Street and Fetter Lane.

3 2044 011 477 304

THE BORROWER WILL BE CHARGED AN OVERDUE FEE IF THIS BOOK IS NOT RETURNED TO THE LIBRARY ON OR BEFORE THE LAST DATE STAMPED BELOW. NON-RECEIPT OF OVERDUE NOTICES DOES NOT EXEMPT THE BORROWER FROM OVERDUE FEES.

Harvard College Widener Library
Cambridge, MA 02138 (617) 495-2413